



# RETURNING FROM THE IMMORTAL WORLD

BOOK 03

*Jing Ye Ji Si*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Returning from the Immortal World

(仙界歸來)

by

Jing Ye Ji Si

(靜夜寄思)

# Synopsis

---

A supreme expert in the Immortal World had died, and a strand of his soul returned to its original body on Earth.

Tang Xiu discovered with amazement that ten thousand years passed in the Immortal World, yet only a single year passed on Earth.

# Copyright ©

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by FlowerBridgeToo, MirageKiddo @  
[ALittleMirage Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201: Good News

---

The noon of the next day.

Tang Xiu quietly left South Gate Town to meet the two top brasses sent by the Chu and Bai Families. After having a secret negotiation for half an hour, the two then went back to Beijing.

The answer from the both of them was that, they agreed to the deal!

The ones who were the happiest was not Tang Xiu, but Chu Yi and Bai Tao, who then rushed to Star City in a hurry. From both parties, Tang Xiu learned that their families had decided to nurture them as the future heads of the families; even their arrival to Star City this time also brought along eight billion yuan with them.

Late at night, a Mercedes-Benz car drove toward South Gate Town as Tang Xiu then met with the travel-worn Shao Mingzhen on the first floor of his villa.

“I heard that you just went back to Northern Jiangsu two days ago, how did you come back today?”

A happy expression could be seen from the corner of Shao Mingzhen’s eyes as he said, “Brother Tang, you should have heard the saying, ‘you’re trying to find something wholeheartedly with no success, but then you found it by accident without even sweating’. Well, the reason I hurried back this time is to tell you

good news.”

"What good news?" Tang Xiu asked with a puzzled expression.

“Take a look at this recorded video I’ve taken, then you’ll know.” Shao Mingzhen played a video from his mobile phone.

Tang Xiu took his mobile and watched a man and a woman being tied up in the video. What he didn’t expect was that the man turned out to be Zhang Yongjin. He informed the other forces to help to find Zhang Yongjin’s whereabouts with no result, that was why he didn’t expect that Shao Mingzhen was the one who found him.

"How did you find him? And who’s the woman beside him?"

Shao Mingzhen received his phone back with a cheerful mood as he then happily said, “Well, four days ago a small team leader for my people was setting up and arranged a gambling joint which can give a big winning prize. That woman is called Sun Hong and she’s a famous gambling addict from Northern Jiangsu’s Peng City. In that gambling joint she won two million yuan while Zhang Yongjin who was with her lost more than ten million. Afterward, the both of them borrowed six million high-interest loan from the casino. After the following gamble on the table, Sun Hong was found cheating on the gambling, so that small team leader under me tied up the both of them.

“Originally, according to the casino’s customs, they should call and inform their families to get ransom money. But since this team

leader of mine saw that Sun Hong is beautiful, he wanted her to accompany him for half a month, which she agreed to. However, that Zhang Yongjin didn't have such a good luck as he was tied up in the casino's room and left starving for two days."

"The reason as to why I went to Northern Jiangsu two days ago, was because an old friend of mine from Great Northwest came looking for me to talk about the old days. It happened that this old friend of mine also likes to gamble once in awhile, so I accompanied him to this casino. Eventually, I found this matter by chance and felt that this Zhang Yongjin name was somewhat familiar. At that time, I didn't take it seriously, only later did I hear that he comes from a rich and respected family from Star City, so I immediately acted afterward."

Shao Mingzhen spoke happily whilst taking out a cigarette from its pack and lit it up. Then, he continued with a smile, "We been searching for him in Star City as well as in nearby cities for quite a long time, and not even a trace of him could we found. To think that he turned out to be hiding in my turf and happened to fall into such a pit. Well, Brother Tang, since I've found the person you're looking for, it's your call what to do with him."

"Kill him!" Tang Xiu said without hesitation.

"OK. And that Sun Hong woman?" Shao Mingzhen nodded and asked.

"Have you clearly investigated her? What's the relationship between her and Zhang Yongjin?" Tang Xiu asked.

“I’ve ascertained about that. Sun Hong is a widow and was Zhang Deqin’s classmate. She’s still a good sister of hers until now. The reason as to why Zhang Yongjin went to Northern Jiangsu was to seek asylum with Sun Hong.”

“Seeking asylum?” Tang Xiu asked with a puzzled expression.

Shao Mingzhen said with a smile, “Hey, it was you who frightened them! You’re the one who killed those three hitmen, Zhang Deqin is scared the hell out of it. Since she’s afraid of your revenge, she sent her younger brother to her good sister in Northern Jiangsu. But anyway, this Sun Hong is not a pure and chaste woman. She also slept with Zhang Yongjin when he took shelter with her there.”

“Then kill her also! I don’t want this matter to be spread out.” Tang Xiu said.

Shao Mingzhen nodded as he took out his mobile and dialed a number. After giving some commands, he hung up the phone and then said, “By the way, when I was on the way to Star City, I called Brother Miao and he told me that the plan here is almost finished.”

“Yes. The Zhangs have been snared into the trap and it will be too late for them if they want to withdraw. Long Hanwen and Miao Wentang indeed want to finish things off. However, I don’t have much knowledge with business matters, though; as I’m only responsible to send people to capture those high-level clansmen of the Zhangs.”



Shao Mingzhen narrowed his eyes. Along with a glint that flashed from them, he spoke with a sinking tone, “I also have sent my men to keep an eye on them, they’re ready to move at any time.”

“Anyways, the Zhang Family has a lot of industries, one of which are entertainment venues. The Ouyang Family and you are in this business field, so it’s up to the both of you to share them.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“I don’t want to take over Star City, just give them to Ouyang Family!” Shao Mingzhen said with a light laugh.

Two days later.

As per order from the project’s chief in charge—Kang Xia, a comprehensive attack was carried out on the Zhangs’ businesses. In particular, some people were arranged in advance to start making troubles for the housing quality in real estate business. At the same time, all the entertainment venues belonging to the Zhangs were also troubled with foreign staffs’ issues. Furthermore, many employees from the Zhang Group also left all of a sudden.

In addition, a lot of bad deeds done by the top executives of the Zhang Family in the past were also reported. Even the Public Security Bureau was also involved in the investigation. The news on the Internet was overwhelming, discrediting the Zhang Family, erupting in major forums as the news then was passed around at an overwhelming speed across the country.

At the Zhang Group's HQ.

Inside the General Manager's office, after the series of attacking, getting scorched by the flames and badly battered, green veins protruded on Zhang Fengxian's forehead as his face reddened with rage. He brutally smashed several quilts as he looked as though a wolf toward several top leaders in front of him, shouting, "Who the hell can tell me what's going on? Who's aiming at my Zhang Family? Who's targeting my Zhang Group?"

Several top leaders could only lower their heads, afraid, and didn't utter even a word.

They didn't know. It was the general findings between them.

The situation developed and changed too quickly. It was as if everything had been prepared in advance. The Zhang Group's real estate business, several Branch Offices, as well as other running business; all of them were blocked in the same day. Major business partners contacted and informed them that they cut off all of their cooperation in the future. The news was as though the falling snowflakes, catching them unprepared.

"Knock, knock..."

At the moment, the office's door was knocked as Zhang Deqin strode inside. Looking at her furious father—Zhang Fengxian, her complexion turned ashen as she quickly said, "Dad, the bank has just called. They want us to repay the due loan that has expired.

Previously, the President Liu had agreed for the delayed payment, but now...”

Zhang Fengxian’s breath paused as a hard-to-believe glint flashed from his eyes. He had an excellent personal relationship with President Liu. The number of loans from others couldn’t be compared with his Zhang Group.

Why did he also...

Zhang Fengxian grabbed his mobile and dialed President Liu’s number. After a long while, his call was connected as a low and deep voice then came out:

“Hello, Liu Changjian speaking.”

Upon hearing his tone, the bad premonition inside Zhang Fengxian’s heart grew more intense. He took a deep breath and tried hard to calm down as he replied, “Brother Liu, what happened? I just heard from my daughter—Deqin, that our loan must be repaid as fast as possible? Haven’t we brothers had an agreement before? That we have six months to return the loan along with all the interests?”

“Brother Zhang, to tell you the truth, this is an order from above, so my hands are also tied. Therefore, your Zhang Family must pay back the money as soon as possible! Otherwise, I’ll really be in a tight situation.” A voice with a dry and wry tone came out of the phone.

“Brother Liu, I believe you also heard that I’ve just invested in a huge project recently, so a huge number of my funds has been injected into it. Can you help me find a solution? As long as the project run on the right track, I’ll immediately return the bank loan. Besides, I’ll also double the what I promised you before!” Zhang Fengxian said.

“Brother Zhang, it’s not that I don’t want it. But I really can do nothing about it. Oh, right. I’ll have to take care of another matter, so let’s end our chat here. I hope you can return the money before the end of this month.”

Upon hearing the mute-ending call sound, an alarmed and scared expression could be seen on Zhang Fengxian’s expression.

He could tell that there was absolutely a problem from the bank. Even if he gave more benefits to President Liu, the loan perhaps could never be delayed any further. However, he was not afraid, because he still had nearly five billion at hand that was still unused. Much less that he still had another four billion from the Hu and Xue Families.

At present, what he really wanted to know, was figure out exactly what forces were against his Zhang Family.

Could it be the Long Family?

Zhang Fengxian frowned. Just as he was about to call Long Hanwen, his mobile phone suddenly rang.

"Kang Xia?"

Zhang Fengxian's heart moved as he immediately pressed the answer button and spoke with a deep tone, "Zhang Fengxian here. Chief Kang, is there something up?"

Kang Xia's cold and detached void came out of the phone, "Boss Zhang, the director of Property Department in our project is your second brother, Zhang Fengming, isn't he?"

A bad premonition gushed again inside Zhang Fengxian's heart as he quickly asked, "Yes, Zhang Fengming is indeed my second younger brother. Why is Chief Kang asking about this matter all of a sudden?"

"Yesterday, several key staffs of the Finance Department who are Zhang Fengming's associates, a total five of them, have transferred all the money in our collective account to a Swiss Bank account. All of them now have disappeared without a trace. I suspect they have absconded the money and run away. I also have reported this to the police. But I wonder, do your Zhang Family want to keep that 1-2 billion yuan to yourselves?" Kang Xia said coldly.

"What?" Zhang Fengxian's body shook, even his eyes almost popped out.

Fear invaded his heart.

Zhang Fengming? Why did he dare to do that?

Zhang Fengxian's body crooked as he sat down on the boss chair, paralyzed. Suddenly, he quickly grabbed the phone and dialed Zhang Fengming's private number. But he only heard a notification that his phone had been shut down.

# Chapter 202: The Ending

---

Looking at the frightened expression on Zhang Fengxian's face, Zhang Deqin hurriedly came at his side and asked, "Dad, what happened?"

Zhang Fengxian struggled to look up. As he looked at Zhang Deqin's nervous expression, his lips creaped out a few times as he said with a bitter tone, "Kang Xia just called me. She said that your Second Uncle absconded 1-2 billion funds from the collective account. All of the money has been transferred to a Swiss bank account. And now, he and several staffs of the Finance Department ran away. Kang Xia accused me as the one who gave the order behind this façade and reported this to the police."

"WHAT?!" Zhang Deqin was so scared that even her legs felt numb and almost fell to the floor.

The sky collapsed!

She was very well aware that if her Second Uncle really did that, it would only mean that their Zhang Family was as good as finished. Either the Long or Ouyang Family, they definitely would never let the Zhang Family go.

"NO! IT'S NOT RIGHT!"

Although her heart was full of fear, however, she wasn't scared silly because of that. Her eyes stared tightly at Zhang Fengxian and spoke with a sinking tone, "Dad, I believe there's no way in hell

Second Uncle would do this! Everything is machinated and definitely a conspiracy! I suspect that the ones who schemed against us, is not only the Long Family, but also the Ouyangs. I even dare say that Kang Xia herself is also involved in this conspiracy. Thus, the money must have been transferred by them... And Second Uncle, perhaps... perhaps he has encountered an unexpected accident!”

Upon hearing this, Zhang Fengxian’s face suddenly changed greatly. He suddenly jumped up from his chair and immediately shouted, “Quickly contact Long Hanwen. Tell him I want to see him, NOW!”

“Yes!” The young secretary immediately answered.

Shortly after, the young secretary said, “Boss, Long Hanwen is at the Long’s Dining Hall. He said that he’s currently accompanying a few important guests so he doesn’t have time to see you. if you really have an urgent matter, he said to go to the Long’s Dining Hall.”

Zhang Fengxian gripped his fists tightly. In this split moment, he was sure that everything was set up by the Long and Ouyang Families, whereas his Zhang Family was the sole target of their machinations. Everything that happened now was definitely their conspiracy.

“Prepare the car to the Long’s Dining Hall!” After Zhang Fengxian figured out everything, a murderous intent to kill Long Hanwen and Ouyang Lei gushed out inside his heart, as he immediately called out.



Zhang Deqin quickly followed him and exclaimed, “I’ll go with you, Dad!”

A few minutes later, three cars quickly drove off from the Zhang Group HQ’s underground parking lot and traveled toward Long’s Dining Hall.

Inside a dozen-storied building at the opposite side of the Zhang Group’s HQ, a tall and sturdy man holding a binocular was observing the Zhang Group’s HQ’s underground parking lot’s exit. After he confirmed the license plate, he immediately grabbed his phone and dialed a number.

“The snake is out of the hole, be prepared to commence the follow-up plan!”

"Roger that!"

Ten minutes later.

There were only a few cars on the road, but there was a traffic accident which blocked the three cars’ path. Zhang Fengxian, who was sitting in the middle seat of the Mercedes-Benz, frowned and said, “Go there and take a look, tell them to make way and open the road!”

“Understood!”

The young secretary who was sitting on the co-pilot seat complied as he opened the door and got off.

After several seconds, six vans which were on the three lanes of the roads drove fast as braking sounds hurriedly sounded, disgorging a dozen or so big men who quickly rushed out and surrounded the three cars in extremely fast movements. The car's doors were pulled open as they grasped 6-7 people from the inside.

Zhang Fengxian's pupils contracted. Whilst facing the tall and burly man who pulled out his collar, he struggled and shouted loudly, "Who the hell are you?! I'm Zhang Fengxian, the boss of the Zhang Group. Do you know the consequences of offending me?! LET! ME! GO!... LET ME GO!"

"Bang..."

A fist fiercely punched out and directly hit his forehead, causing him to faint. Zhang Deqin was also stunned by another big guy as the latter directly held her and dragged her into the van.

At the same time, in other eight places, another eight important clansmen of the Zhangs were also captured by mysterious big guys lightning fast.

They moved extremely fast and chose extremely hidden places, so nobody noticed them.

At South Gate Town.

Tang Xiu put down his phone as the ruthless glint inside his eyes faded away gradually. A total of 12 high-level clansmen of the Zhang Family had been captured. In addition, nine more people, the staffs who were working in Zhang Group, also had been grasped and were hidden in a safe place. The call just now was from Long Hanwen, asking him as how to deal with these people.

If it were according to his previous style, he would naturally kill all of them.

However, the Zhang Family was, after all, a well-respected family in Star City, and there are a lot of people who pay attention to them. It would be inevitable that numerous forces would pay attention with such big happenings. If the news that a large number of their family's corpses were to be reported in the headline news, this incident would be very difficult to end.

Furthermore, this matter had yet to conclude.

When the Zhang Group had been annexed, then, it would be the perfect time to deal with the high-level clansmen of the Zhangs.

Tang Xiu left his villa and came to the Property Management Office. After he met with Long Xueyao, he said, "Could you take me to Lakeview Manor?! I have no car, so it's inconvenient to go out."

"Is it very urgent? If not, please wait for a while. I still have things to deal with. Wait until I take care of a few things, then

I'll speak with you again." Long Xueyao said with a smile.

Tang Xiu nodded.

He was no stranger to the Property Management Office. After he came to the rest area, the staff of the office sent him a hot tea enthusiastically, whereas he—himself was thinking as how to deal with the Zhangs and what he needed to do afterward.

The College Entrance Test would soon be releasing the scores.

He wasn't worried about his performance. But now, he need to think about what school to enroll. The Blue City University was a good choice. It was located in the provincial capital and was also one of the top universities in the country. However, Tang Xiu also thought that Shanghai University was also a good one. Shanghai was the most developed city in the country and had good transportation means. It would be very easy for him to go abroad as he didn't need to transit from Star City or other places to Shanghai.

The island he had purchased was in the Pacific Ocean, and he hadn't seen it yet. After he finished registering, he planned to take a trip there. Although he had no money currently, which meant that he had no means to rebuild the island. However, he still had to go there in advance and make some arrangements as well as find some people to take care of it.

"Ring, ring..."

His mobile phone's ringtone sounded, abruptly interrupting his train of thought.

Tang Xiu took out his mobile. As he looked at the caller ID and found that it was Mu Qingping, he immediately received the call and asked, "Big Sis Mu, is there something?"

"Your mother is here, at home!"

"I see. I'll be back right away."

After ending the call, he looked at Long Xueyao, who was still busy. He didn't greet her and directly walked toward his villa. Inside, he saw Mu Qingping chatting with his mother.

"Hi, Mom!" Tang Xiu smile as he greeted her.

Seeing Tang Xiu, Su Lingyun's eyes suddenly brightened up as she said with a smile, "Xiu'er, tomorrow is the day for applying and registering to university, isn't it? Mom came this time to ask you. Have you picked an university yet?"

"Not yet, Mom. I haven't thought it through." Tang Xiu shook his head and answered.

Upon hearing this, Su Lingyun suddenly said anxiously, "How so? The application must be filled out tomorrow. If you haven't thought it well, then you'll only waste time. Tell Mom which university you want to enter. Have you thought about the

university which your College Entrance Test results can pass its passing grade?”

“Mom, I can guarantee that my scores can pass any university’s passing grade in the country. If you really want to know, I have two choices now. The first one is the Blue City University in our provincial capital. The reason to consider it, is because it’s in our province as well as quite close to Star City and you. So if you don’t want to leave your restaurant business, I can always come back here to see you at any time. The other one is Shanghai University. Shanghai has the fastest economic development as well as is the most prosperous city. Studying there with means of transportation to the outside world, will be much more convenient in the future.” Tang Xiu said.

Su Lingyun’s eyes turned a bit nervous before she asked, “You... have you considered entering Beijing University?”

“I did, but I don’t want to go there!” Tang Xiu shook his head and answered.

Upon hearing his answer, Su Lingyun suddenly relaxed as a smile reappeared on her face. Then, she said with a smile, “Although Beijing is our country’s capital, but if you go study there, you’ll be bound to face fast rhythm and high pressure after you’ve graduated. So Mom thought that you should go to Shanghai.”

Tang Xiu’s brows slightly pricked.

“Fast pace and high pressure? This kind of situation is indeed the

case with Beijing, but isn't Shanghai also the same? Mom seemed to not want me to go to Beijing. And the way she spoke before, she seemed to be very anxious, especially when she spoke about Beijing. Is there a secret here?"

Tang Xiu probed out, "Mom, if I were to choose study in Beijing, will you not object to it?"

"This..." Su Lingyun hesitated.

Tang Xiu's eyes slightly narrowed before he returned to normal. Then, he said with a smile, "I'm kidding you, Mom! Even if you let me go to Beijing, I won't go there either! So be it then. If you're willing to close your restaurant and go with me to Shanghai, then I'll fill the application to enroll Shanghai University. If you're not willing to, then I'll apply for the Blue City University."

Su Lingyun quickly said, "Xiu'er, our restaurant business is very flourishing at present. So it's kinda a pity to close down the business for now. You needn't mind me about this. Star City is, after all, our home. I'll be staying here and you will apply to Shanghai University! The institution is a first-class university after all, so you need to study well there, so you'll certainly become more skillful in the future. Besides, the transportation means are very developed nowadays, so if Mom misses you, I also can visit you there at any time! You can also come home on Sunday or other holidays."

For a moment, Tang Xiu was silent, as then he slowly nodded and said, "Alright, I'll listen to you, Mom! However, I'll buy a property in Shanghai, nearby Shanghai University, so if you're bored in Star

City, you can go and stay there for a while. In addition, you also have to move to this villa after I go to Shanghai University! Such a big villa surely cannot be left empty.”

“Okay, if your College Entrance Test grades can pass Shanghai University, I’ll come and live here.” Su Lingyun said with a smile.

“It’s a deal, Mom!” Tang Xiu finally made up his mind, causing his mood to be very good as replied with a smile.



# Chapter 203: The Mastermind Behind the Scenes

---

Tang Xiu's eyes moved to Mu Qingping as he said, "Big Sis Mu, there's two dirty clothes yet to be washed in my room. Could you help me wash it?"

Mu Qingping's eyes flashed, reflecting her understanding. She said with a smile, "Alright. The two of you talk while I'll go wash the clothes."

After Mu Qingping left, Tang Xiu's gaze landed on his mother. The smile on his face slowly faded away and his expression became more serious. He said, "Mom, I've made up my mind, there should be no more secrets between us. I'll tell you my secret, but you must also tell me yours."

"What?" Su Lingyun asked with a puzzled expression.

"Well, I've spent some money to buy a private island in the Pacific Ocean. I'm going to make it a paradise in the future so you can go there if you're bored with life outside."

"Huh? A private island? Xiu'er, how much money did you spend for it?" Su Lingyun asked with a disbelieving expression.

Tang Xiu said with a-matter-of-factly manner, "2.5 billion."

"Hiss..."

Despite knowing that her son also had several hundred million in properties, Su Lingyun still couldn't help but inhale a deep, cold breath upon hearing the sum.

"Originally, I borrowed the money, but because of some reasons afterward, I made a lot of money and had paid it back. So you don't need to worry about the origin of the money. It's not a dirty one." Tang Xiu explained.

Su Lingyun was still absent-minded and said, "Xiu'er, you..."

Tang Xiu's eyes suddenly turned ablaze as he quickly asked, "Mom, I've told you my secret. And we, mother and son, should have no secret between each other. Can you tell why you don't want me to study in Beijing?"

As though in a trance, Su Lingyun blurted out, "That's because your father's family is..."

She abruptly stopped speaking! Her face instantly turned pale as though a wax paper.

Tang Xiu's eyes turned cold.

Father? What a strange word!

He did ask his mother about his father when he was small for many times. However, not even an answer could he get. As he grew older, he gradually became sensible and thoughtful to never ask about it again. He knew that each and every time he asked about it, his mother would look very pained. And on some occasions, he had seen his mother hold the yellowish, black and white photo whilst wiping her tears secretly.

He never knew whether that man was dead or alive; neither did he care about it whatsoever. Such a man who never raised his son ever since he had been born, never deserved to be a father.

Sighing inside his heart, Tang Xiu came over as he sat next to Su Lingyun. He smiled, pulling her hands he said, "Mom, I know clearly about the answer, so you don't have to say more. You need not to worry though! I'll fill the application to apply tomorrow and I'll go study in Shanghai. Besides, I'm already a man and I have the ability to look after you. I only hope that you can be healthy, having a good and fortunate life in the future."

Tears overflowed from Su Lingyun's eyes as she repeatedly nodded.

Shortly after, Tang Xiu accompanied his mother as they chatted for a while. After Mu Qingping came back to the living room, then, he gave the task of accompanying her to Mu Qingping and left his home alone. He then went again to the Property Management Office, meanwhile Long Xueyao also had almost finished her work.

"Ready to go?"

Wearing a decent professional attire, Long Xueyao asked whilst smiling.

“Okay, Lakeview Manor.” Tang Xiu said.

“What are you gonna do there? That place has quite a strict and high threshold. You can’t go there if you don’t book the seats in advance.” With an astonished expression, Long Xueyao asked.

“Long Hanwen is waiting for me there.”

“My uncle? Since when did you have a good relationship with him?” Long Xueyao was surprised.

Tang Xiu said with a smile, “There are a lot of things you don’t know. Anyways, no need to ask that much. Let’s just go! I’m in a hurry.”

Long Xueyao gave Tang Xiu charming white eyes. Driving her sports car, she took Tang Xiu out of South Gate Town quickly. As they arrived at Lakeview Manor, she wasn’t stopped and directly allowed to enter, she was clearly a regular patron here.

After getting out from the Lakeview Manor’s parking lot, Tang Xiu said, “Well, your mission has been accomplished, but I still have things to do, so you can go back first!”

“Wait! I have something to tell you!” Long Xueyao quickly said.

Tang Xiu reluctantly replied, “All the way here you just idled, why didn’t you talk about it before? Fine. What’s up?”

Long Xueyao snapped humorlessly, “Hey, it’s not like I’m here for you, you know. It’s the driving school principal. He asked me when will you go there. An exam for the next batch of students is only a few days away. He can let you attend it ahead of schedule but on the premise that you need to be adept and familiar with the car to try it out.”

Tang Xiu immediately realized as he said with a smile, “Okay. Tell the driving school principal I’ll go there tomorrow.”

“Alright. If you can attend the test a few days later, the driving school principal will arrange you in it in advance. You only need to try and fill your documents when the time comes, and then wait to take your driving license.” Said Long Xueyao with a smile.

“How long will it take to get this driver’s license?” Tang Xiu asked.

“Well, it should at the most half a month, you’ll definitely get your driver’s license.”

“Alright!” After saying that, Tang Xiu turned around and rushed to the appointed place with Long Hanwen.

Standing before the car's door, Long Xueyao looked at Tang Xiu back with an irritated expression whilst muttering, "This fellow really doesn't have any courtesy at all. I've contacted some people to get his driver's license, but he didn't say even a word of thanks?"

Ten meters away...

Tang Xiu suddenly stopped as he turned around and said, "Long Xueyao, thanks a bunch!"

"Huh!" Long Xueyao's expression dulled as a weird expression then suddenly appeared on her beautiful face.

"He... could it be that he heard what I just said? But it's impossible. My voice was very low and it was more than ten meters away. Unless he's a person who can hear from that far away, there's no way he can hear it!"

Long Xueyao comforted herself, and then facing Tang Xiu, she waved her arm before she immediately drilled into the driver's seat, started her car and quickly left.

Whilst looking at the disappearing car, a smile outlined on Tang Xu's mouth. He indeed just heard Long Xueyao's muttering. His hearing was, after all, very sharp. Average people might be unable to hear it, but it was not difficult for him.

Inside a teahouse in the deepest part of Lakeview Manor.

Long Hanwen, Chen Zhizhong, Kang Xia, Miao Wentang, Shao Mingzhen, Ouyang Lei, Chu Yi, Bai Tao, Long Zhengyu and some others had gathered.

The strike against the Zhangs had now nearly ended. This time, everyone came in preparation for the distribution of the benefits they obtained from the Zhang Family. From the calculations, they found that the Zhang Family indeed had a deep foundation, for the total assets they had truly surpassed more than 20 billion yuan.

“I apologize, something was up and got me delayed.” After Tang Xiu arrived, everyone’s attention immediately attracted to him.

Long Hanwen said with a smile, “No problem. Anyway, the things we should do have been done. Now it’s the time for the finishing touch. Tang Xiu, as far I know, you have to fill in the registration to apply for your schooling tomorrow, don’t you? Have you thought which university you’re going to register?”

“Shanghai University!” Tang Xiu said with a pale smile.

“That’s indeed one of the best universities. Considering your character, I believe you have full confidence since you dare to apply for this university. Come on, I’ll toast to you with my tea on behalf of the wine. I wish you congratulations in advance for getting into the higher education and further your studies. May your dream come true.”

“Come, let’s toast!” Miao Wentang also stood up, all smiling as he

said.

At this moment, everyone's mood was very good. This time, had it been not for Tang Xiu, they wouldn't have been able to make such a huge amount of money. With 20 billion, even if it were to be divided to many forces, each party would still have a share of billions of yuan.

Billions! Even though each and every one here also came from a big family, rich and powerful people, however, even if they spent 8-10 years, such an amount was only something that could be done within 8-10 years.

After the cup of tea had been drunk up, Long Hanwen looked at Tang Xiu with a pensive expression when he asked, "The Zhangs have been doomed to collapse, so now we're carving up their properties. Tang Xiu, since the Zhangs' clansmen have been grasped by us, it's your call how to deal with them."

"Zhang Deqin and Zhang Fengxian have to die, no doubt. However, I haven't thought well about the others aside from them. Anyways, where are they? I'll go see them now." Shaking his head, Tang Xiu replied.

"I've sent some people to bring them here, and now, they are being locked in the Longhu Villa's underground secret chamber." Long Hanwen said.

Tang Xiu nodded as he looked at Kang Xia and said, "As for how to divide the money, you discuss it with them. Furthermore, aside



from the 200 million money I used to buy the information, take all the remaining money you have and invest it into the preparation for this big project!”

After having said that, led by Long Zhengyu, he quickly rushed to the underground chamber of Longhu Villa.

Inside the underground chamber.

Of all 21 family members of the Zhangs that were tied, all were important high officials of the family. All of whom had fallen into silence. Even though they suspected who were the ones who sent people to tie them up, however, since they had yet to see the mastermind, they also didn't dare to determine it.

“Creak...”

The door to the underground chamber was pushed open, with four big men with knives entering the chamber with grim expressions.

“Who are you people?!”

Zhang Deqin's hands and feet were tied up. She was sitting and leaning on the wall in the corner and shouted loudly.

"I'll tell you." Tang Xiu entered through the door and looked at the angered Zhang Deqin. His expression was cold and detached. However, Long Zhengyu, who followed him behind, was holding

his arms with an expression as though he was looking at a good show.

"IT'S YOU..."

Zhang Deqin's pupil contracted as she screamed out.

Zhang Fengxian frowned and looked at Long Zhengyu coldly, before his vision landed on Tang Xiu. After he stared at him for a few times, only then did he turn his head and shouted, "Deqin, you know him?"

Tang Xiu looked at the strong and muscular man to move a chair. After he sat on it, he lifted up his leg on top of the other and said with a smile, "She knows me, of course. That's for sure! I'm afraid that even if I've turned into ashes, she will still know me! Isn't that right, Miss Zhang?"

A frightened expression was revealed on Zhang Deqin's eyes. The moment Tang Xiu appeared, she knew she was finished. She had witnessed how ruthless he was, even the three hitmen also died in his hands. Such a person would never let her go.

"So, now you know what's being scared shitless, do you? Initially, I had forgiven you and your younger brother. But you unexpectedly dared to hire foreign hitmen to kill me. Solely just because of your unreasonable hatred toward me, is enough for you—siblings to go see the King of Hell!"

## Chapter 204: Psychological Torture

---

Zhang Deqin shivered. The panicked expression in her eyes turned more intense as her voice become more and more high-pitched as she screamed out, “TANG XIU... D-DID YOU KILL MY BROTHER?”

“Zhang Yongjin truly has bad luck. Yes, he indeed have died! But he’s not alone, for your good sister also accompanied him. Worry not though, you’ll soon be able to see him, I’ll even let the whole lot of your family be reunited in the netherworld.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

Large drops of tears fell down from Zhang Deqin’s eyes as she staunchly stared at Tang Xiu, screaming with a piercing-miserable howl, “WHY? YOU DAMN BASTARD! WHY THE FUCK DID YOU KILL MY BROTHER? IF YOU GOT THE GUTS, WHY DIDN’T YOU KILL ME? YOU FUCKING BASTARD...”

“Curse whatever you want while you still can! Let all the resentments inside your heart come out! Otherwise, you’ll turn into an evil spirit after you die, and you won’t be able to be reincarnated forever!” Tang Xiu mocked.

Zhang Fengxian and the other members of the Zhang Family who had been listening to Tang Xiu and Zhang Deqin’s conversation, finally came to a realization at the moment as to whom was the mastermind behind the scenes that abducted them all. The young man in front of them turned out to be the culprit who even wanted to ruin their Zhang Family. They even heard that there was such a deep hatred between Zhang Deqin with this young man.

Looking at Tang Xiu with a desperate expression, Zhang Fengxian turned his head and chided, “You bastard! Tell me, what’s really happened? Why did you and your younger brother have this hatred with him?”

Zhang Deqin’s eyes abruptly stopped chiding after getting scolded, but despair had already shrouded her eyes.

Tang Xiu sneered, “Masters from all school of thoughts said that all fetus would be born with skills to live! And it seems that giving birth to children is also a life skill in itself! You’re Zhang Fengxian, yes? I’ve read the information from the investigation with your picture on it. It says that you’re a smart and astute man. But how come you gave birth to such idiotic children? Your children, except from literally able to court disasters to your family, what other uses could they have?”

“DID YOU REALLY KILL MY SON?” Zhang Fengxian shouted angrily.

“I did! And his death should have been very miserable!” Tang Xiu answered.

Zhang Fengxian painfully gripped his fists tightly. But then, he released them as he glared straight at Tang Xiu and said, “Tell me how deep the hatred you have with them to even drive you to exterminate the entire Zhang Family.”

“Your treasured children truly have done some good deeds. They

even spent money to hire foreign hitmen and sneaked them into the country only to kill me! You should have heard about the three people killed outside South Gate Town, yes? Those assassins were the ones hired by your children. It's just a pity that they were too weak. With such a trashy strength, instead of them killing me, it was me who killed them personally." Tang Xiu said grimly.

Zhang Fengxian was shocked and said, "So you're the one who murdered those people outside South Gate Town? To think it's connected to my Zhang Family, it looks like that you're right, I did birth a pair of children who bring calamity."

"To tell you the truth, I did consider as how to solve this problem with your Family. But since I've told you everything, I don't want any unnecessary troubles in the future, for which all of you can no longer live. Zhengyu, tell your men to kill all of them and throw them in the sea." Tang Xiu sneered.

"Worry not, Brother! My Dad has properly arranged it in advance, so we're ready to throw their corpses in international waters." Long Zhengyu said with a smile.

Zhang Fengxian watched Long Zhengyu deeply as he said with a bitter expression, "I truly have never thought that your Long Family found such a good helper. Your father ordered him and made him an enemy of my Zhangs just to drive us out of Star City? Those three assassins were but a turning point, wasn't it? But what I don't get, is how your family can achieve this. To achieve this is highly improbable even if you join forces with the Ouyangs."

Long Zhengyu laughed involuntarily, "Hahaha, Zhang Fengxian,

do you really think that the main mastermind in this is my Long Family? Do you think my family is really that powerful to pit against your Zhang Family that have been rooted in Star City for so many years?”

“Then, who is it?” Zhang Fengxian stared blankly for a moment before he asked with a confused expression.

Pointing at Tang Xiu, Long Zhengyu replied with a chuckle, “Even if your Zhang Family have thousands of people, you shouldn’t have provoked this person, him. But now, since we’ve reached this far, I’ll let you die in content. Do you know how many forces have acted against your family?”

“How many?” Zhang Fengxian asked.

Long Zhengyu replied with a smile, “First is my Long Family. Second, his apprentice—Chen Zhizhong. Third, the Jingmen Island’s Ouyang Family. Fourth, Miao Wentang from Haiqing. Fifth, Shao Mingzhen from Northern Jiangsu. Sixth and seventh, Chu and Bai Families from Beijing. And there’s also the eighth one...”

Zhang Fengxian’s complexion turned deathly pale as a layer of fear glittered in his eyes. Upon hearing so many forces from Long Zhengyu, he knew that his Zhang Family was doomed. With shivering lips and disbelief, he looked at Long Zhengyu and asked with a trembling voice, “Who’s the eighth one?”

Long Zhengyu pointed at Tang Xiu and said with a chuckle, “The

Magnificent Tang Corporation, which is his own company. I'm afraid you would never expect that Kang Xia's boss turns out to be him, would you?"

"WHAT?"

This time, more shouts followed Zhang Fengxian, even Zhang Deqin, who wore fear all over her face, as well as the top leadership and other members of the Zhang Family, were shocked.

Kang Xia unexpectedly worked for Tang Xiu?

The secret Big Boss of the Magnificent Tang Corporation turned out to be Tang Xiu?

Who was he? What and how was he able to make Kang Xia willingly work for him?

Zhang Fengxian quivered, "All these forces involved in this machination, are all because of him?"

"Yes, it's all because of Tang Xiu. Had it been me or someone else, we simply wouldn't be able to rally so many forces to deal with your Zhang Family."

"Zhengyu, why are you saying so much nonsense? They're already dead. Kill them quickly and annex their assets as fast as possible so everyone can go back to their own business. Besides, I have a lot of things to do and I'm too lazy to spend more time and

worry about this small Zhang Family.”

### Small Zhang Family?

The complexion of each and every member of the Zhang Family turned into dying embers whilst fear engulfed their innermost feelings.

Suddenly, one of the Zhang Family members looked up. His eyes stared at Tang Xiu and asked anxiously, “Mr. Tang, there’s a misunderstanding between us. The ones who wanted to harm you are Zhang Deqin and her younger brother. Even their father didn’t know about this. I know him. If he knew it, he would’ve prevented the siblings, absolutely. You cannot blame others who know nothing. We didn’t participate in it, neither have we any grudges with you. Could you let us go? If you want to take over all the assets of the Zhang Family, then take them. I also have money I’ve saved for many years. I can give you all.”

Another one also quickly said, “I also have money. I’m willing to give all of it to buy my life. Don’t kill us. If our Zhang Family collapses, we will also become poor and penniless people, and certainly will hide from you to a faraway place. We might never see each other again. If you want to vent your anger and hatred, just kill Zhang Deqin! She’s the culprit, and the one who must die!”

“YOU...”

Zhang Deqin looked at her two kin with disbelief. One of whom was her uncle and the other was her aunt. She never dreamt they



would betray their own niece only save their own lives.

Zhang Fengxian could only look at his own younger brother and sister painfully. He was so distressed he nearly stopped breathing. However, he also didn't want to die. He wanted to go on living.

His son had died! If he also died, then he would die without heirs.

Zhang Fengxian's eyes slowly turned crimson. He stared at Zhang Deqin fiercely as he turned his head and spoke full of solemnness, "Tang Xiu, the heavenly orders turn in cycle whereas karma has its own retributive justice. Zhang Deqin is my daughter, and it's her mistake in hiring assassins to kill you. You should think it as her fate for the failure and defeat. This is the so-called 'a person must be held responsible for their own deeds'. You have ruined our Zhang Family, and if your anger has yet to be vented, then kill her! But as for the others, I hope you can let us go. We'll leave Star City and go to faraway places. We'll never meet you again in the future."

"Dad..."

Zhang Deqin's blood boiled as she crazily spurted out a mouthful of blood. She didn't wipe the blood around her mouth and only looked at her father with disbelief. She could understand if her uncle and aunt gave her up and used her as a shield, for she knew that they were selfish, to begin with.

But! Zhang Fengxian was her father! It was said that even a tiger wouldn't kill its own cubs, but he-he actually wanted her die for

him to keep his own life?

The despair made her so distressed, it was hard for her to breathe.

Suddenly, she felt a deep sorrow, the sudden sadness of having such family members. They were afraid of dying, coveted life, and knew no shame.

As afraid as she was of dying, Zhang Deqin was perfectly well aware that she was without a doubt in a situation that she must die. Her hatred for her family was so intense it even made her instantly flare up as she bellowed, "Tang Xiu! I'll die. But I tell you, the people who want to kill you is not only me! But also them! They wanted to kill you when you helped the Long Family win the Walled Hill Village. I don't have much ability, neither can I contact assassins from abroad. It was them who told me the contact information and instigated me to find people to kill you!"

"Bastard, you're talking rubbish!"

"This is purely slander!"

"You're talking shit, shameless!"

"You're so fucking damned..."

The complexion of each and every one of the Zhangs greatly changed and went pale, angry with Zhang Deqin's roar.

Zhang Fengxian himself didn't utter any words, but looked at his daughter with a cold and detached expression

Tang Xiu looked at the dog-eat-dog situation of the Zhang Family members as he shook his head with a cold expression. Never had he expected that such a situation would emerge. It was to the point that his intention to completely exterminate all the core clansmen of the Zhangs grew more intense.

“Zhengyu, you take care of this.”

“Rest assured! I'll absolutely handle it perfectly. I'll leave nothing that can create disasters later.” Long Zhengyu said with a smile.

"WAIT!" Zhang Fengxian shouted with a sinking tone.

“You still have anything to spit out?” Tang Xiu stopped as he looked at Zhang Fengxian and asked.

Zhang Fengxian took a deep breath and spoke with a deep tone, “Tang Xiu, let us live. I'll give you a huge sum of money.”

Tang Xiu was indeed short of money, but he had no intention to let Zhang Fengxian go. But he also had no problem squeezing money from people who were about to die. With an expression full of interest, he asked, “Tell me, how much do you value your life?”

“Three billion. I’m willing to buy our lives with three billion yuan. This is the remaining money I have in my possession. Aside from me, nobody from my family knows about this. As long as you’re willing to let us go, the three billion is yours.” Zhang Fengxian spoke with all seriousness.

## Chapter 205: Sensation

---

Tang Xiu was startled. He didn't expect that Zhang Fengxian would still have so much money. After thinking for a moment, he looked at Long Zhengyu and said, "Collect the money and release them."

"Do you really want to let them go?" Long Zhengyu looked distracted for a moment and hesitated.

"Yes!" Tang Xiu said with firm expression.

"You're not afraid that it will leave trouble for the future, letting the tigers loose in the mountain?" Long Zhengyu asked with a helpless expression.

Tang Xiu sneered, "Are they tigers? If they still dare to offend me, let alone in China, even if they fled to any country abroad, I have means to track them and make them unable to beg for their lives."

The Zhang Family kinsmen were struck with cold sweat down their spines as each and every one of them lowered their heads and didn't utter a word.

At this moment, Tang Xiu motioned Long Zhengyu and then turned to leave the chamber.

After returning to the teahouse, Tang Xiu's gaze swept over at

everyone who looked at him, and said with a faint smile, “Well, we’ve gotten quite a harvest. Zhang Fengxian is willing to buy his entire family with another three billion.”

“You agree to it?” Long Hanwen asked.

“Why should I? But, we’ll get the money first, and after we get it we’ll discuss it later, whereas Zhengyu stays there to take care of it. Anyone has any idea to completely uproot the Zhang Family but keep those important members of the Zhangs alive?”

“I have a way.” Shao Mingzhen said.

“What is it?” Tang Xiu’s expression moved and asked.

“Let them kill the other members of their own family. And then find ways to send them as well as their family members abroad! Although we’ll be the ones who persecuted them to kill their own people, they also won’t be able to avoid the responsibility. When the time comes, they will keep their own mouths shut in this matter. Furthermore, since they’re not in the country, they won’t be able to create any storm either. Let me take care of this, you can be sure that it will be completed.” Shao Mingzhen sneered.

“If so, do it!” Tang Xiu nodded.

The next day.

Tang Xiu left South Gate Town and took a cab to Star City First

High School. Today was the day to fill the application to register to a university, so he naturally wouldn't miss it. Furthermore, he also had decided the school he would enter and only needed to go there and fill the application. Then, he could go home and wait for his test's score to come out.

“Flashing News: The Zhang Group suddenly collapsed along with the disappearance of a group of their top executives. Rumor has it that the Long Group, the Ouyang Group and the Magnificent Tang Corporation issued a joint statement that a senior executive of the Zhang Group—Zhang Fengming was found stealing from these three major corporations, worth of tens of billions yuan of funds, which were soon to be used in the “Paradise on Earth” project. Being afraid of the repercussion, the suspect has fled...”

A news came out from the radio in the taxi.

The cab's driver was a young man. After hearing the broadcast content, he turned his head to glance at Tang Xiu who sat on the co-pilot seat and exclaimed, “This truly fulfills the saying that ‘humans will die for riches, just as birds will for food’. The Zhang Group is a major enterprise and has a lot of assets, but even their top management executives are unexpectedly greedy to steal the project funds and run away. They're truly depraved and starved people, just like snakes wanting to swallow an elephant! I dare say there should be someone from the Zhang Family pulling the strings since they also disappeared, no? It's an ironclad truth that they must be running away together!”

Without being salty nor cynical, Tang Xiu replied back, “Well, let's just say that you can find all sorts of birds in the forest.”

The young driver patted the steering wheel and said approvingly, “True enough. This time, the Zhang Group is as good as finished. Those who work with them are truly unlucky, though. And the people who have business cooperation with this company will also collapse just like the falling bloody fungus.”

“Unlucky?” Tang Xiu secretly laughed inside.

Not only did they suffer no loss, but they even annexed the Zhang Family’s assets. How could it be said to be unlucky?

“Brother, I believe you also have heard about the news, no? The scandals committed by the Zhang Group exploded in the news channels recently. They are accused of inciting local ruffian and gangsters to rob the project as well as engaging in garbage projects. But heck! Anyways, they persisted in evil deeds, that brought about them their own destruction. The closing down of this corporation, for common people like us, is kinda of a huge celebration.” The cab’s young driver continued saying.

“Huh? The Zhang Group has no good reputation?” Tang Xiu asked with doubt.

The young driver rolled his eyes and snorted, “What good reputation? They’re simply notorious! Even some of the Zhang Group’s employees began whispering about how bad their projects are. They said there are shady schemes inside their company; and there’s a lot of them! In short, now, either in the newspaper, television, the Internet, all are cursing the Zhang Group with



inhumane words.”

Upon hearing it, Tang Xiu couldn't help but secretly admire Long Hanwen, Chen Zhizhong and the others who came up with such methods. Although he did take the leadership in this motion and he knew clearly about most of the machinations, however, in the real operation, there were really too much knowledge included within, whereas the effects it produced were also amazing.

At the same day, each major media corporation in Star City, even the headlines in the country, were all about the news of the Zhang Group. Even the Supreme Prosecutor Office had been involved in the investigation. Once the investigation was clarified, the Zhang Group would probably disappear forever from Earth.

Furthermore, the naked reality was that, once again, verified the common saying that, “nobody would support an unfavorable cause such as them, and no one would want to stand for the falling wall”. At present, the Zhang Group had already arrived at a precarious juncture, it was only a matter of time before the closure.

After Tang Xiu came to Star City First High School, he directly went to the Class 10. Because it was the last time all the students could meet with each other, and they probably wouldn't be able to see the other for the rest of their lives, therefore, everyone was very much cherishing the moments of friendship and affection toward the other classmates. Those students who used to look at Tang Xiu as someone who was not pleasing to the eyes, didn't even show any hostility toward him.

Yuan Chuling, Cheng Yannan, Xia Wanfen and Li Xiaoqian were

talking in whispers. When they saw Tang Xiu's arrival, Yuan Chuling directly pulled him to their group.

“Eldest Brother, have you decided to which university you are going to enroll?”

“Yep, I'm going to Shanghai Uni.” Tang Xiu nodded and answered.

Yuan Chuling said with a smile, “Well, I know clearly about my scores. Even after you gave me those tutoring courses, I'm afraid that the score I got from the College Entrance Test might not be enough for me to enter Shanghai University. But heck, since I also intend to go studying in Shanghai, I'll also apply there. Besides, this university is one of the top universities.”

“As for me, I'm going to study in Beijing. My sister has been transferred back there, so I can only go back with her. Xiaoqian is quite good, though. You can go study in the Regal Classical Music Academy in Blue City. Previously I didn't know that she has a very good talent in music, even Teacher Huang Ji took her as her student.” Cheng Yannan said.

“Congrats Xiaoqian!” Tang Xiu looked at Li Xiaoqian and said with a smile.

Li Xiaoqian replied with a humble manner, “Tang Xiu, I'm just taking the account in your light, to be honest. Teacher Huang Ji originally really wanted to pull you into the Regal Classical Music Academy as a professor, but you didn't want it. Afterward I

maintained contact with them and then got one seat from Teacher Huang Ji's quota."

"Well, I'm not interested in music, to begin with, so I'm not going to take that path; neither do I want to enter the Regal Classical Music Academy. By the way, how about you, Wanfen? Where are you going to study later?" Tang Xiu said.

"I want to apply for Jiangnan University, but I don't know if my CET score will pass, though. If I can't be admitted with the first choice, I think I'll apply for the Blue City Institute of Technology." Xia Wanfen said.

"I really wish you all success in advance, may we all pass our CET and enter the ideal universities we want! Anyways, Teacher Han arrived, let's go back to our seats!" Tang Xiu said with a smile.

With a smile hung on her face, Han Qingwu stood at the door. She took a quick glance over everyone in the class and paused for a second as her vision landed on Tang Xiu. Then, she walked toward the podium, all smiling and said, "Everyone, today is the day for you to fill in the application and complete your CET. I believe that you all have estimated the scores you got from the test, which is the reason why it's very important in picking the choice in your application, so I hope you'll take this seriously. The application forms are on my table and I'll distribute to all of you now."

After Tang Xiu got the application form, in the first column of the form, he filled Shanghai University. He didn't even fill in the second and third choices because he felt that it was not necessary.

Han Qingwu came to Tang Xiu's side. Looking at the form filled by him, she knitted her brows and said, "Why didn't you fill in the second and third choices?"

"I'm confident," Tang Xiu said self-confidently.

"I know that you have the confidence. But you also know the saying that there have always been unexpected things that are hard to avoid, no? Look, fill the other two school choices. If you CET score passes your first choice, the next ones won't be taken into account either." Han Qingwu humorlessly said.

Tang Xiu forced out a smile. He knew that Han Qingwu had no confidence in him. However, he didn't want to quibble with her and directly put the application form into her hand. He got up and said, "Teacher Han, I still have some other things to do, can I go first?"

Han Qingwu stopped him and said, "Wait a minute. Wait for me to finish receiving the forms from the class. I have something to talk about with you."

"What's up exactly?" Tang Xiu asked.

"Just wait first!" Han Qingwu answered.

Tang Xiu felt helpless. He had complicated feelings toward Han Qingwu. She looked very much alike his partner in the Immortal

World; and solely by this aspect, he was quite repelling her. However, she was also the one who stood up for him in the most difficult time and even braved herself to help him when the school was about to expel him and put him into Class 10.

Thus, he could keep his student status here.

He might not care about this status, but his mother was all he cared about. If she knew that the school expelled him, she might die from sadness.

“Ah, forget it! Besides, after today, I’ll have nothing related with her again. Maybe, this will also be the last time I meet her in this life. So I’ll wait!”

Upon thinking up to there, Tang Xiu then stayed in the classroom, waiting.

After more than an hour, all of Class 10 students had left, including Yuan Chuling, Chen Yannan and the others. After there were only Tang Xiu and Han Qingwu left in the classroom, only then did Tang Xiu ask, “Teacher Han, can you say now what exactly do you want from me?”

Han Qingwu hesitated before she forced out a smile and said, “I actually want to ask for your help! That... if it’s convenient for you, that is.”

“What’s the matter?” Tang Xiu asked with a confused expression.

“Like I said, if it’s convenient and you can help for sure!” Han Qingwu said.

“If you won’t say it, then forget it. I still have something to do, so I’ll go first.” Tang Xiu said.

Han Qingwu immediately stopped him, saying with a forced smile, “Alright! I’ll tell you. It’s my good sister. She’ll come to Star City tonight, whereas I’ll go to Shanghai for about two days. At the most, I can only come back four days later. So I thought, can you accompany her in these two days?”

Tang Xiu snapped humorlessly, “You need me for this kind of thing? You can let her find a hotel and stay there and just go, no? Just find someone looking for a job in Star City and arrange

that person to stay for two days and wait until you come back. That should do the job, no?”

## Chapter 206: A Rare Annoying Woman

---

Han Qingwu replied with a helpless expression, “I did consider, you know. But this good sister of mine has just come from abroad. It’s been five years since her last time the country. She’s not familiar with Star City, so I’m afraid she’ll come across many accidents.”

“Since she’s coming from overseas, why don’t you take her with you to Shanghai?” Tang Xiu said.

“She’s already on the plane, and I can’t contact her for now. Besides, I have important things to take care of in Shanghai, so it’s really inconvenient to let her accompany me there.” Han Qingwu said.

“Am I the only acquaintance you have in Star City?” Tang Xiu said with a reluctant expression, “I’m just a student, how can I have time to accompany her?”

Han Qingwu laughed involuntarily and said, “Don’t say it like you’re a busy man. Your CET has just passed, and except playing, what else you do anyway? Look Tang Xiu, I helped you by opening the back doors for many times in the last two months, so help me this once!”

Opening the back door?!

Tang Xiu looked at Han Qingwu with an inconceivable expression as he said, “Teacher Han, one can eat random food, but

you cannot speak nonsense irresponsibly. When did you open the back door for me?”

“Did you forget your school ditching for so many days? Have I ever held you responsible for that? Afterward, I also complied to your plea to go home every night, didn’t I?” Han Qingwu said.

“This also counted as opening the back door?” Tang Xiu asked with a strange expression all over his face.

"Of course!" Han Qingwu replied with all seriousness.

Smiling wryly, Tang Xiu said reluctantly, “Fine! Just count it as my bad luck for knowing you. Tell me, what’s your friend called and how do I contact her when she arrives in Star City? We need to reach a consensus first that it’s my business as to how I entertain her, so don’t look for me to settle the account after you come back from Shanghai.”

“Great! You don’t have to contact her, she’ll call you instead when she arrives.” Han Qingwu was pleasantly surprised and continued, “Anyways, I’ll go first. I need to catch up the noon flight to Shanghai.”

Tang Xiu waved his hand and also prepared to leave the classroom.

Suddenly, as if remembering something, Han Qingwu opened her bag and took a stack of money from the inside. She then handed it



over to Tang Xiu and said, “Here is five thousand yuan. Use it to entertain my sister. If it’s not enough, call me any time.”

Tang Xiu didn’t refuse it. He’ll handle the matter for Han Qingwu, so the money was supposed to be within the service also. After putting the money into his pocket, he then directly left the classroom.

At noon.

After having lunch in his family restaurant, Tang Xiu decided to go to the Star City’s Antique Goods Market. He had long wanted to forge an interspatial ring and was delayed until now because of the ore needed to refine it. Going to the Antique Goods Market was but only trying his luck. If he was lucky, perhaps he could find some precious ores.

However, after strolling around the entire Antique Market the whole afternoon, he couldn’t find any precious ores. He also found quite a good antique, but since the price was way too expensive, whereas he also had no hobby in collecting antiques, he didn’t spend his money on it.

After catching a cab and on the way back to South Gate Town, he received a call from an unfamiliar woman, and after the inquiry, he found out that the woman was Han Qingwu’s good sister who came from abroad.

“After you arrive at Star City downtown, feel free to find a hotel first. I’ll look for you later.” Tang Xiu said his command and hung

up the phone.

At Star City Airport.

The tall figure of Chen Wei attracted the attention of numerous travelers outside as she came out of the airport exit. She wore a short, T-shirt and a platinum necklace along with pink sunglasses on her face. The most attractive was her blazing red lips.

Aside from the latest limited edition of Louis Vuitton bag, she also carried along a delicate white leather suitcase.

“How could Qingwu do this? She put her student to accompany me, she didn’t even say that this student of hers doesn’t even have any basic courtesy at all. He surely knows that I’d arrive in Star City at night, but he didn’t come to the airport to pick me up?”

Chen Wei stamped her foot bitterly. Then, she turned around and walked toward the taxi parking area.

Caesar Grand Hotel.

The hotel was one of the 5-star hotels in Star City. Although it was not the best, it was upscale enough. The entire hotel building was around 40-50 meters high and had a particularly majestic and extraordinary style.

Chen Wei opened the door to the 1st class suite. After she took a comfortable bath, she put on refreshing casual wear before she

heard her suite's doorbell ring.

“He's really so damn late!”

Chen Wei grunted in dissatisfaction. If it weren't that she felt a bit hungry, she was really too lazy to open the door. Because she knew nobody would come here except the student Han Qingwu sent to her.

The door was opened, whereas Chen Wei only glanced at Tang Xiu, who stood outside, before turning around. With a slightly disgruntled voice, she said, “You're finally here. If not because I'm starving, you can just scam out of here. Get inside!”

Tang Xiu himself had imagined various scenes of the meeting between him and Chen Wei. However, he never dreamed that it would be like this. Despite being quite stunned, he secretly shook his head. After entering the room, he walked straight to the sofa and directly sat on it as he grabbed the magazine on the table and begun reading it.

Chen Wei ignored him. Although shouting that she was starving, however, putting on her own makeup was kind of taking quite a long while. After having spent an hour to finish her makeup, she then picked up her Louis Vuitton bag and said, “Yep, I'm good. Let's go!”

“Where to?” Tang Xiu looked up and asked.

Chen Wei replied with a foul mood, “Of course it’s to have a meal, what do you think it is? Don’t you see the time? It’s almost 9 o’clock and I have yet to have dinner. Midnight snack doesn’t count as dinner.”

Tang Xiu couldn’t utter a word.

He came to the hotel before 8 o’clock, whereas she spent an hour putting on her make up. She even blamed for his coming here?

But he’d rather forget it, good men wouldn’t pick a fight with women.

She was Han Qingwu’s bosom sister, whereas he also only needed to deal with her for two days. So when Han Qingwu had come back, he could immediately say goodbye to her and wouldn’t see her again for the rest of his life.

Upon thinking up to there, Tang Xiu walked toward the bedside cabinet and took the landline phone to dial a number.

“What are you doing?” Chen Wei asked with a puzzled expression.

“Don’t you think that it’s late already?! You need not go out to have dinner since the hotel also provides it. Just let the hotel send the attendant to deliver the dinner. After you finish your meal, you might as well rest earlier since I also have to go back quickly.” Tang Xiu said.

With an inconceivable expression, Chen Wei said, “No! Don’t call to order a meal. Don’t you know that the hotel’s meals are not delicious? You take me out for a meal, and I want to eat and taste the most famous delicacies in Star City!”

Tang Xiu knitted his brows and said, “I don’t know the most famous or the best delicacies in Star City. If you really don’t want to eat the meals provided by the hotel, then we’ll look for a casual small restaurant outside and fill your stomach. You just had a long flight, so you’d better take a rest early. Tomorrow you’ll be more spirited if you want to stroll around everywhere.”

“No no no! I’m not tired. I fully rested on the plane. I don’t have jet lag and need not adjust to the time difference. Your task is to accompany and guide me. Anything I wanna eat, you must accompany me.”

“I’m not your damn father!”

Tang Xiu couldn’t help but whisper inside before he turned around and followed Chen Wei out of the door.

Caesar Hotel was located in the most bustling block of Star City. There was an upscale residential area in the East side nearby, a commercial street to the West, and a famous street lined with food and dining courts to the South.

Tang Xiu took Chen Wei to the dining street. But he was also somewhat confused with the places. He had been here before but

only for a few times and only passed through this street and never ate anything at all. He realized that there were not only upscale restaurants here, but also a lot of snack stalls on the lane.

“What do you wanna eat? You say, it’s on me.”

Following beside Chen Wei, Tang Xiu found that she was constantly glancing around as he then asked with an indifferent expression.

“Hey, I know nothing about this place, how do I know what to eat?” Chen Wei was dissatisfied and grunted as she continued, “You take me to eat something unique with good taste and flavor. You can pick whatever you want, either it’s an upscale restaurant or the snack stall on the roadside.”

Tang Xiu shook his head and said, “I also don’t know much about this place. Don’t forget my identity. I’m just a student so I didn’t have chances to come and spend time here.”

As astonished as she was, Chen Wei then said, “Ehh, students shouldn’t... Oh, I get it. Here is not the United States, and the students here are good mommy boys and well-behaved. Well, forget it. Since we both know nothing here, then I’ll taste the cuisines stall by stall.”

Tang Xiu secretly sighed inside. Chen Wei truly was resembling the haughty and arrogant princess type that he loathed the most. However, since he only need to follow her for two days, he would just need to fool about and it would pass, eventually.

Finally, after Chen Wei had tasted a lot of cuisines, they entered a Hunan restaurant. Tang Xiu followed her along and also ate some cuisines while convenient. But he was really struck with astonishment. Chen Wei herself had a good figure, but her appetite was unexpectedly big. The food she ate was twice the amount he had, at the least. Tang Xiu himself felt full, but she was still able to eat more.

Shortly after, Chen Wei had ordered a table full of meals and then asked another two bottles of beer.

“Haven’t you just eaten? You’re not afraid of your stomach bursting?”

Tang Xiu was somewhat dumbfounded as he asked.

Chen Wei rolled her eyes and said with contempt, “Are you not a man? A good man will eat everywhere. And your appetite is kinda shameful, you know. Although I’ve eaten some cuisines before, but I’m only 40% full. I have a habit. Before I’m a 100% full, I feel like I haven’t really eaten to the full.”

“What a marvel!”

One truly can’t pass judgment to a person’s life, until the lid is on the coffin. This was the final conclusion Tang Xiu had toward Chen Wei.

Two bottles of beer had been gulped down and the sumptuous meals on the table were all nearly wolfed down. Only then Chen Fei felt satisfied as she patted her bulged belly and exclaimed, "Homeland cuisine is truly great! In that damn country overseas, I can only drink milk and eat bread and barbecue, which even makes me vomit quickly after I eat it."

Deep inside, Tang Xiu gave a "rice barrel" nickname for Chen Wei. Then, he asked, "Alright, since you have eaten to the full, isn't it time for you to rest?"

Chen Wei picked up her bag and said, "Now? Going back to the hotel and sleep, I'd just be wasting your good time of youth! Besides, only pigs go to sleep after having eaten to the full! Let's stroll around and look for a bar with me. Today, this Big Sis invites you to drink in the pub, and let's watch some pole dance there."

Tang Xiu knitted his brows and said, "I'm not interested."

Chen Wei replied with a jeer, "What is this? You're still young, but you act so decent and solemn, eh? Are you afraid of me talking about this to Han Qingwu? Don't worry, boy! This sister guarantees, I won't sell you out! Go, let's go to the pub!"

With all seriousness, Tang Xiu said, "I really don't like going to the bar!"



## Chapter 207: The Exotic Flower's Style

---

Chen Wei angrily said, "Hey, are you a man or not? Are you really still a boy that hasn't grown hair? If so, then just hurry back to your home and sleep! This great aunt will go even if you don't!"

"Damn! This father is an old monster who has lived for 10,000 years!"

Tang Xiu couldn't help but curse inside. But he intentionally showed a look of helplessness as he said, "The pub is kinda unsafe at night, especially the local ones. There are a lot of sexual harassers and they are jam-packed with local thugs and ruffians. If you don't want to have accidents, you better listen to me and go back to your hotel and rest."

Chen Wei said with contempt, "Are you taking me for a fool and trying to coax me? Even though I left the country for so many years, it doesn't mean I know nothing about the law and order here! Fine! Are you coming or not?! Don't get long-winded with me. If you're not coming, then scram quickly."

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment before he nodded and said, "Fine, I'll go."

Chen Wei happily replied, "Hehe, that's more like a man!"

Three Feathers Pub! It was the most luxurious and the most visited bar nearby the dining street. Neon signs were flashing as the sound of rock and roll music could be heard even before

entering. After entering the pub, the sound was much more deafening and extremely noisy.

Tang Xiu had never liked such places. But since he was here to guarantee Chen Wei's safety, he couldn't immediately leave; he could only endure the chaos inside as he followed Chen Wei into the pub.

"Did you see it? That's a on-the-spot live pole dance performance. That girl's body is very good and sexy. Such a woman is very attractive to any men, a rare extraordinarily belle. Take a look at that side! Those two girls dancing on the dance floor with two tattoos on their neck? They're definitely one hell of [underbrush flowers](#). They're specifically very good on ganging up men's "stuff". Their characteristics are kinda good, but I dare say their p\*ssies surely already have very rich experience." Chen Wei moved closer to Tang Xiu's ear and spoke loudly.

"..."

Tang Xiu was really speechless. Facing an exotic flower marvel like Chen Wei who was resembled a fighter jet, it drove his mental nerves to always be ready to receive the challenge.

Chen Wei didn't seem to realize Tang Xiu's frowning expression. She stretched out her hand to the bartender, who handed her a cocktail. After drinking a mouthful of it, she wiped the liquor mark on the corner of her mouth with the back of her hand and said enthusiastically, "The local pubs are truly better than the ones abroad. But it's a pity that there are only a few sexy people that can be asked to dance with. Or else, tonight would be every eventful

and colorful. Ah, look! Look at the 3 o'clock! That man is very hot! Great body, good skin, gorgeous looks. Damn! He surely has great "stuff" too. Erm... how about I gang up with him to the hotel tonight?"

Tang Xiu straightly turned his face, expressing that he was unfamiliar with this marvel creature.

Chen Wei, on the other hand, finally sensed Tang Xiu's strange manners. She grabbed him and made him face her as she burst into laughter and loudly spoke, "Ehh, you're still a little boy, aren't you? Haven't you had any girlfriend yet? Ah, how about this sister teach you some tonight? So you can hook up a girl and take her to the hotel? Worry not, boy. I'm a woman and naturally, I know what's inside a woman's mind. Even though you look average and your clothing is kinda ordinary, but if you use my teaching, you'll definitely be able to easily score."

"Nope. Not interested!" Tang Xiu said indifferently.

Chen Wei stared with widened eyes. Because after drinking her face was a bit red, it was adding some points of beauty to her. However, at the moment, an inconceivable expression shrouded her whole face as she stared at Tang Xiu and exclaimed, "You're not interested in women? Are you a gay?"

"It's you who is a homosexual!" Tang Xiu retorted with a foul mood.

"What's wrong with being homosexual? I tell you, this young

lady is not only a lesbian but also bisexual. I like strong men and I love beautiful women! It's a pity that this great aunt has a kinda thieving mentality, though. I have no guts to even carry out my indecent intentions. Up until now, I only kissed my boyfriend a little. And that man of mine is kinda useless too. He's very timid, as though a rabbit!" Chen Wei happily spoke.

A woman's inner world is truly as deep as an ocean!

At this moment, Tang Xiu finally understood the meaning of this line. He really couldn't understand her. This woman pricked his nerves as though she was a neuropathy, but before, as she was putting on makeup in the hotel, she was quiet and looked like a well-behaved baby.

"I see. You're not only bisexual, but you're also schizophrenic."

Astonished, Chen Wei replied, "Ehh? How did you know? You can say I'm like a princess during the day, but I'm just like a hooker at night! Don't you guys love women like me?"

Tang Xiu grabbed the liquor handed over by the bartender and gulped it down in one stroke. Then, he turned his head back to her.

Chen Wei's face was full of boredom as she rolled her white eyes. Whilst carrying a crystal cup and drinking her cocktail, she looked enthusiastically to the dance floor, at the body of men and women that swayed from side to side. Such debauched pleasure-seeking, and the atmosphere of debilitating love scenes, embracing each other and the restless body rubbings. The pub was full of men and

women who were seeking for pleasure with only a wisp of careful thoughts.

A few minutes later.

Chen Wei waved at Tang Xiu. Her slender waist swayed side to side, dancing on the dance floor. Shortly after, several handsome young men came over and bounced together. Tang Xiu only cared about her safety and didn't care about her self-demise bohemian attitude. As long as she didn't bring the man back to the hotel and didn't force him to squat and stand guard in front of her door, he didn't want to even care about such behavior.

Having been inside the pub for half an hour, Tang Xiu found several pairs of drunk men and women who he didn't know before, leaving with arms on each other's shoulders. Those men and women, if not for wanting to play one-night standings, they might want to take advantage of taking it for granted. However, he also realized from some scenes, that someone was selling drugs here.

His curiosity was sparked. He had no intention to leave Chen Wei alone, but Tang Xiu was suddenly struck with inspiration. A wonderful plan appeared in his mind. Along with a curving smile on his mouth, he went out of the pub, took out his mobile, and then dialed a number in a nearby hidden corner.

At Star City Public Security Bureau, inside the meeting room of the Criminal Investigation Division.

Cheng Xuemei and a dozen officers were simultaneously

analyzing the case. Up until now, the shooting case that took place near South Gate Town was yet to find its murderer. Yet, it was followed by the collective disappearance of the Zhang Family members, the corruption case in the tripartite joint venture's collective funds of the construction project by the Long Family, the Ouyang Family and the Magnificent Tang Corporation by the Zhang Family, as well as the incidents with internecine strife in a lot of entertainment venues in Star City. Such rush of incidents caused her to be quite badly battered and busy.

“I believe that there are absolutely a handful of black hands pulling the strings behind the Zhang Family's case—we must investigate this case clearly. Otherwise, our superiors will never let us live good, peaceful lives anymore.”

“Ring, ring, ring...”

A mobile phone's ringtone interrupted Cheng Xuemei's words.

She knitted her brows and grabbed her mobile. As she looked at it, an astonished expression could be seen on her face, since the caller ID turned out to be Tang Xiu, which she regarded as a very mysterious person in her heart, whereas he himself looked like a very ordinary fellow. After a moment of hesitation, she finally accepted the call and spoke with a deep tone, “Tang Xiu, is there something you need?”

“Captain Cheng, I have important findings I want to report to you. If this matter is true, will there be any rewards?” Tang Xiu melodious voice came out of the phone.

“Say it! I need to know what kind of report first!” Cheng Xuemei said.

“I’m now at Three Feathers Pub! You should know the place, yes? It’s near the Star City Food Court area. I saw some people selling drugs here, and the volume is kinda huge! I’ve been staying here for more than half an hour, and I can tell that they have sold at least several tens of thousands of units. I suspect that...”

“You suspect that it’s psychotropic-narcotics?” Cheng Xuemei said with a deep tone.

“I don’t know if it’s narcotics or not. How about you guys check this out? If it’s really narcotics, you can also track the clues and arrest the traffickers.” Tang Xiu said.

For a moment, Cheng Xuemei was silent. Then, she said, “Continue watching. Don’t alert their them. And do pay attention to your own safety! We’ll immediately send people!”

"Okay!"

Tang Xiu quickly complied and happily hung up the phone.

As he went back inside, Tang Xiu was struck dumb and speechless, because Chen Wei now was unexpectedly hugging a 17-18 years old girl, drinking and chatting merrily. Looking at their intimacy, even if someone was ignorant, they would think that the

two were a lesbian couple.

"Another round of wine!"

Even though Tang Xiu couldn't drink the cocktail well; however, he must do as the Romans do in Rome. He ordered another cup and gulped it down again as though he was thirsty.

Chen Wei turned her head. Upon seeing Tang Xiu's appearance, she said with a beaming smile, "Hey handsome, where did you just go? I thought you dumped me back then! Just look at this young sister at my arms, what do you think? She's the type I like. Cute, smart, sweet, and her mouth smells good."

Tang Xiu glanced at the smiling girl. He shook his head and said, "If you like her, just continue hugging and kissing her!"

Chen Wei smiled tenderly and said, "Why? Don't you to taste this young sister's small mouth also? It's really very sweet! I promise you she'll definitely make all your desires come true."

"Nope. Not interested!"

Although Tang Xiu also admitted that the lass was quite pretty, however, the thick makeup she had on her face didn't give him a favorable impression. If he ever wanted to taste a woman's mouth, he might as well look for the little enchantress, Ouyang Lulu! Or, the Lolita—Andy who smelled good all over her body; she even had many points with her two proud big rabbits!



Chen Wei cast aside curling lips and harrumphed, “Hmph, you’re really not a man! People say that young men are impulsive and easily aroused in that area. You’re just a loony!”

Tang Xiu was way too lazy to respond. What he wanted to see now was how efficient the City’s Criminal Police Division was, so he silently counted the time inside his mind.

15 minutes later.

A dozen of Criminal Police squads as well as a large number of police officers from the Public Security Bureau arrived. Cheng Xuemei took the lead and commanded overall situation, and quickly blockaded all the passages to the pub. When the rock and roll music stopped playing, along with the disappearance of the flashing lights, the light was replaced by a bright crystal lamp as Cheng Xuemei then shouted:

“EVERYONE! TAKE OUT YOUR ID CARD! THE POLICE HAVE RECEIVED A REPORT SAYING THAT SOME PEOPLE ARE SELLING DRUGS HERE. IF YOU DON’T WANT TO GET IN TROUBLE AND DRINK TEA IN OUR POLICE STATION, DO COOPERATE WITH US!”

Drugs!

This was the taboo word everyone avoided in their hearts.

Upon hearing Cheng Xuemei's words, the discontented expression on the visitors' faces immediately turned into a well-behaved one. However, there were still 4-5 young men carrying packages, who hastily stuffed them into the couches.

Tang Xiu could see everything clearly and secretly typed a message on his mobile and sent it to Cheng Xuemei. After doing that, he looked at Chen Wei with a joyful mood. He knew that the trip to the pub tonight had come to an end.

The raw said underbrush flower and Black Fungus. The first is the slang for girls who have slept with many men, and the latter is the slang for girls whose [sorry if it sounds offensive] vaginas have rich experience. For virgin girls, the slang is Pink Fungus. Welp, I don't know how to translate this line in a much "nobler" way. Don't ask me more though, I'm a married man, so I know nothing much. LOL. Chinese slang is not my forte, to begin with.

## Chapter 208: Digging the Pit

---

Sure enough! Chen Wei angrily glared at Cheng Xuemei and the other police officers. While taking out her ID Card from her bag, she muttered, “It’s so fucking annoying! These cops truly have nothing else to do but eat to the fullest. You’re really messing with this great aunt’s good time. I thought I could enjoy myself to the full today.”

The girl in her embrace, however, had a somewhat tense expression. She quickly looked at Chen Wei and whispered, “I need to go to the restroom.”

“You want me to go with you?” Chen Wei asked.

“No need!” The girl’s answer was fast.

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes. Looking at the back of the girl leaving hastily, he said with a thoughtful expression, “Big Sis, the girl you hooked up with, looks like she has an unusual identity! She looks very nervous, and if she hasn’t done anything illegal, then her identity is surely very sensitive.”

“How do you know?” Chen Wei was surprised.

“It’s just a guess.” Tang Xiu said.

Chen Wei grunted, “What guess?! Are you a ghost or something? Quickly, take your ID Card out. You should be considered as an

adult, no? I remember Qingwu is a 3rd year teacher, and her students have already taken the CET. Since you're her student, you should also have taken the CET and have an ID Card."

Tang Xiu laughed without wanting to, and then said, "What you say does have a strong logic as well as accurate reasoning. But I have always had a face that even the police won't check my ID Card. Do you believe me?"

Chen Wei laughed with ridicule, "You followed me for a night, but only now did I found out you love bragging!"

With an uncanny tone, Tang Xiu replied, "How about we bet? Not only will the cops not check my ID, I even dare to tease a policewoman officer. Did you see the one who spoke before? She's very imposing, yes? She should be an officer with quite a high position."

"Hmph, relying on you? Your balls are even smaller than a rabbit's; you're even afraid to approach a girl. Saying that you dare to tease a female officer is kinda a lame joke, no?" Chen Wei said with contempt.

"Answer me, you wanna bet or not!" Tang Xiu said.

Chen Wei snorted and replied, "Hmph, bet with you? Why not? If the cops don't check your ID and you dare to tease that female officer, I'll do anything you tell me!"

“Are you sure?” Tang Xiu asked.

“Sure as hell I do!”

Tang Xiu clapped and said with a smile, “Then, you wait and see!”

After having said that, he grabbed the cocktail on the table and gulped it down cleanly. After that, he walked in large strides toward Cheng Xuemei. To witness it first hand, Chen Wei followed behind him closely as they quickly came to Cheng Xuemei’s side.

“Hello Princess, you read the text message I sent you, yes?”

Cheng Xuemei, who had just seen Tang Xiu, nodded and said, “I did. Some officers have gone over there to search it. I really should thank you for this.”

“Well, keeping peace and order is always the responsibility of us, dutiful citizens. By the way, you haven’t told me what kind of reward I’ll receive from this, have you?” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“Hey! Be more decent and serious, will you?!” Cheng Xuemei angrily replied.

“Ehh? Haven’t I always acted properly and decent enough? Don’t tell me that a person doing good deeds has no right to get some good payback, no? If so, why should I cooperate with the police in

handling the cases in the future.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

With a helpless expression, Cheng Xuemei said, “Then tell me, what reward do you want?”

Tang Xiu’s expression slowly turned serious, saying, “How about my previous proposal? You wait for me for a couple of years, then, you’ll marry me after I graduate from college! And when the time comes, you give birth to a few kids for me. As for how many kids you should give birth to, you should ask my Mom. If she wants a few, then you give birth to a few kids, whereas I’ll be sure to cooperate with the both of you!”

“Pffft...”

Chen Wei, who was behind Tang Xiu, couldn’t help but be amused and laughed. Although she already knew that Tang Xiu was just goading her to dig her own pit to jump into, she wasn’t angry at all. She realized that she unexpectedly couldn’t figure out the big boy who was following behind her butt for this one night.

As for Cheng Xuemei, her complexion came to a halt for a moment. Her heart was filled with the feeling of being at a loss whether she should laugh or cry. She quickly glanced at Chen Wei, before she intentionally showed an angry expression as she stared at Tang Xiu and said, “Didn’t I tell you that you mustn’t spit out such rubbish? Watch it, or I’ll beat you up and drag you to drink some tea in the police station!”

Tang Xiu said with a smile, “Ouch! Fighting and cursing and then

making up is the proof of love, no? Although I don't quite understand this line, I think if you really take me to the police station to drink some tea, that means that what I've hinted is spot on, yes?!"

"YOU..."

Cheng Xuemei helplessly shook her head before she said with a sigh, "Your glib talk truly is much more difficult to deal with than facing you in person. Anyways, I heard that you're going to apply for Shanghai Uni, are you sure your CET's score can be accepted?"

"Yep! I'm sure of it!" Tang Xiu raised his head up spiritedly.

"I too wish you can be accepted. Alright, it's already very late, and even if you've just finished your CET and wanted to indulge yourself, don't come to this messed up place. Go home now and rest early. If the investigation really finds what you've reported, I'll treat you to a meal the next day." Cheng Xuemei nodded and said.

"You're going to treat me to a meal before returning to the Capital?" Tang Xiu asked.

Cheng Xuemei frowned as she quickly glanced around. After she found that there were no other colleagues listening, only then did she feel a bit relieved and said with a low voice, "Don't say it here. I'll call you myself a few days later after I handle this matter!"

“Deal!”

Tang Xiu promised with a chuckle. Then, he quickly turned to Chen Wei, giving her a provocative look, and left the Three Feathers Pub quickly! On the way back to Caesar Grand Hotel, he said, “Well, you remember the bet between us, right? The fact is, you lost!”

“No, it didn’t count as one. You cheated.” Chen Wei shook her head and said.

“When did I cheat?” Tang Xiu glanced at her with a contempt and asked.

Chen Wei angrily chided, “YOU! You knew that police officer. Besides, it’s you who brought those cops! You clearly knew that and you intentionally set up a trap for me to jump into. Like hell I’ll accept that!”

Tang Xiu said indifferently, “Without having full confidence, would I even make a bet with you? Let’s cut the crap here. Do you accept that you lost the bet or not? If not, well, I have nothing to say. I can only say that your character is messed up.”

“You’re the one whose mental! Fine! I accept that I lost! What do you want me to do? This great aunt has long been ready for any sacrifice tonight. You scared away my young belle before, even if you want me to serve you all night long, I’ll do that!” Chen Wei angrily roared.



Tang Xiu shivered with fright down to his spine. He waved his hand and said, “Let’s forget it! I’m not interested in your body. My request is very simple though. For tomorrow and the day after, you must obediently stay in your hotel room. You’re not to get out even half a step. If you’re bored, just play with your mobile phone or watch TV. If you’re hungry, just call the hotel cafeteria and they’ll send the meal to your room.”

Chen Wei’s stared with wide eyes. So much so that she straightened up her chest. Even though she had a good figure, a guitar-like slender waist as well as long legs, however, her chest was quite flat. She did want to show off her capital, but she was finally unable to come to and eventually snorted twice with a resentful expression.

“I don’t like this request of yours. I’ll make sure to complain to Han Qingwu when she comes back!”

“That means you don’t want to accept your loss.” Tang Xiu said.

“YOU...”

Chen Wei was angry. However, recalling Tang Xiu’s line just now, she swallowed it back. Her eyes rolled as she spoke forthrightly, “You want me to agree to your request, that’s fine with me. But since Han Qingwu entrusted me to you, you should be responsible for this. If you want me to stay in the hotel room, you also have to accompany me. I’m afraid of being alone.”

“Who would believe you, eh!”

Tang Xiu recalled all sort of things Chen Wei had done. She was extremely bold in the pub, flirting with the others, either men or women. Would she even be afraid of being alone in the hotel room?

However, as long as Chen Wei didn't go out of the hotel and not make some trouble for him, it could be said that it was a satisfactory result. So as to complete Han Qingwu's request, he nodded and said, "No problem. I'll come every morning and go back at night. But, are you really not afraid of me eating you?"

"Do you even have the balls?" Chen Wei sneered.

Tang Xiu no longer spoke. He realized that a person with a thick face as though a wall such as Chen Wei would turn a corner in dispute. And the one who would eventually be defeated would be himself. She was as though a strong, high-spirited horse and needed someone else to conquer her. However, he had not the least bit of interest doing that.

After escorting Chen Wei back to the hotel room, Tang Xiu then bade farewell to leave.

"You really won't stay?" Chen Wei leaned on the room's door as she looked at Tang Xiu whilst smiling a smile that was yet unlike a smile.

Tang Xiu shook his head and said, "It's already too late. Have a good rest! Do remember the agreement between us. You are not to

leave your room's door even half a step without my permission.”

“Bang!”

Chen Wei fiercely closed the door from the inside angrily.

Tang Xiu smiled smugly. He secretly felt wonderful for having brewed up such a plan tonight. After he left the hotel and was about to catch a cab, a police car slowly stopped at his side. When the car's window was opened, Cheng Xuemei spoke with all seriousness, “Get in the car!”

Tang Xiu hesitated for a moment before he circled the car's front and went straight toward the co-pilot seat, opened the door and sat.

“Something's up?”

“Yes, important and urgent. I just came from the Three Feathers Pub! We did find a batch of drugs just after you left. Also, there are more than a dozen people in the pub who attacked the police blockade. Not only they had controlled-authorized cutting weapons and firearms, even two of our comrades were wounded and taken to the hospital. However, we also caught those criminals.” Cheng Xuemei answered seriously.

“Since you already caught them, why did you look for me? It's already very late, I have to go back and sleep.” Tang Xiu asked.

“I know that you’re very skillful. Can you help us arrest several other major drug dealers? We’ve just gotten the intelligence that there’s a group of drug dealers from outside of China, and they are staying in some rooms of this Caesar Grand Hotel. One of them is a young man called ‘Crown Prince’ who comes from the Jinshan region of South-Eastern Asia. Not only does his family have a private army, they also have a guarded wide expanse of poppy opium plantation, which is absolutely a vicious figure.”

Tang Xiu snapped with a foul mood, “Great Lady Cheng, aren’t you making a mistake here? I’m only a third year student who just graduated and not even entered a university, yet you unexpectedly want me to act with you in such big case? Just in case something happens to me, can you even afford to be held responsible for it?”

## Chapter 209: Capture Operation

---

A disappointed expression could be seen on Cheng Xuemei's face. She shook her head and said, "I know I can't. OK. If you don't want to help us, then forget it and get off! We're deploying our forces in hopes of successfully capturing the drug dealers."

Looking at Cheng Xuemei's face, Tang Xiu Wei slightly frowned. He didn't get off, but was silent for a while as he asked, "Why did you choose me?"

"Because I think if you're nurtured, then you'll definitely become an excellent police officer. What I mean is, your skill as well as your detection and observation ability. From our analysis in Three Feathers Pub, you have a strong and keen sense of observation toward the surrounding environments. For average people, the first time they go to a pub, it would be very hard for them to find someone selling drugs. In your case, not only were you able to find it, you also contacted us afterward and keenly observed those people's actions when selling drugs; that helped us greatly." Cheng Xuemei said seriously.

Tang Xiu shook his head as he wryly smiled and said, "It's kinda embarrassing to be complemented by you. Alright, so be it then. Looking at your uneasy expression, I'll help you again. Tell me who are the drug dealers and in which rooms they're staying. I have some methods to help you clarify the situation inside their rooms."

"You do? How?" Cheng Xuemei was surprised.

“It’s my personal secret. I can’t tell you that.” Tang Xiu replied humorlessly.

Cheng Xuemei was doubtful as she replied, “Tang Xiu, this is not a joke. A slight carelessness will cost you your life. Those drug dealers are ruthless, and I even heard that this Crown Prince is someone who can kill without batting an eye. Not to mention that the police also have yet to complete the preparations for the deployment since we also have to avoid arousing their suspicion.”

“Relax! I’m well aware of the situation. I’m only responsible to observe the situation in their rooms-this is my specialty. The capture operation is yours.” Tang Xiu said indifferently.

Cheng Xuemei hesitated for a moment and said, “It’s the room #806, #807 and #808. According to the people in Three Feathers Pub who gave the information, there are a total of six people there.”

Tang Xiu nodded and opened the car’s door. After he got off, he said just before leaving, “Wait for my text message!”

A few minutes later.

Tang Xiu arrived at the eighth floor of the Caesar Grand Hotel. After looking for the #806 room, he released his perception and found that the number of people inside was not six, but eight. One of whom was a naked young man with bleached white hair who was having sex with a woman.

However, to hide his spiritual sense existence, he opened #805 room and quietly climbed out from the window and quickly and sharply appeared next to #806 room's windows. After feigning an act as though he was observing something, he continued climbing toward the window outside room #807 and #808.

Shortly after, he took the elevator and directly dialed Cheng Xuemei's number and told her about the situation. Then, he finally said, "Do pay attention toward the white-haired guy in the room #806. Not only are there firearms on his bedside cabinet, but also a sniper rifle. It's similar to the guns I've seen on TV."

"Are you sure there's no error in your surveillance?" Cheng Xuemei asked with an anxious tone.

"Yes!" Tang Xiu said.

After Cheng Xuemei said thanks, she then hung up the phone.

Tang Xiu put his mobile away. After leaving the Caesar Grand Hotel, he didn't directly leave but went to the opposite building. After he found an empty room that was not locked, he stood before the window as he quietly watched the movements at the opposite direction.

He could see that two snipers had already sneaked into the building he was in, whereas in the opposite building, a lot of Criminal Police members wearing casual attires were also quietly lurking inside. There was even a large number of armed police forces surrounding Caesar Grand Hotel.

“They came very fast!” Tang Xiu secretly sighed.

However, just after he had just spoken, his complexion slightly changed as he quickly found that at the opposite Caesar Grand Hotel’s room #808’s windows, a middle-aged man appeared and held a mini-binocular in his hand whilst taking a look below.

They had been found!

Tang Xiu quickly grabbed his mobile and dialed Cheng Xuemei’s number. After she answered, Tang Xiu spoke with a deep tone, “If my inference is correct, they must have found your police force deployment! They are using binoculars to observe through the windows, and they surely saw the large number of cops. Move and act now to save time.”

At this moment, Cheng Xuemei had already arrived at the Caesar Grand Hotel’s 8th floor. Upon hearing Tang Xiu’s report, her face instantly turned unsightly. Without her realizing, she had some kind of inexplicable trust toward Tang Xiu inside. So she shouted sternly with no hesitation, “Move and arrest them now! Immediately counterattack if there’s any resistance! Do beware of the three people in room #808. They’re aware there’s something amiss!”

"Bang..."

"Bang..."



"Bang..."

The three rooms' doors were separately blasted open by two police officers. The other well-trained armed police forces coordinated with each other and swarmed into the room with their guns' muzzles readily aimed.

"Bang, bang, bang..."

Intense gunfire sounded from room #806 and #808. At the same time, the two snipers in the opposite building had also already aimed at their target and took a shot. As for the three men in Room #807, the moment the police rushed inside, they were already aimed by guns and didn't dare act rashly.

Tang Xiu, who was standing before the windows in the opposite building, watched the shootout battle of the modern world whilst secretly shaking his head. Such a trivial slapstick case really couldn't even change his mood. Under such circumstances with great disparity in strength between the police force and those drug dealers, even if there were any resistance, it would only be a dead end for them. As for the police, there might be some officers who injured or sacrificed, but in the end, those drug dealers would still be completely arrested or killed.

"Well, I'll go back now!"

Just as Tang Xiu was about to leave, he suddenly caught a figure in his sight that ran from the room #808 of the hotel in front. The

man was even holding a rope he hadn't noticed before. Furthermore, his movements were very agile as though an Ape Spirit Beast as he surfed down the rope and rappelled down extremely fast.

“It's that white-haired youth.”

The darkness of the night couldn't block his sharp eyes as he instantly recognized the other's identity.

“It's not right. The room's windows two floors below Room #808 are still open and there's still someone inside. Ah, it's that woman...”

Tang Xiu observed and found that the white-haired youth used the rope and surfed down toward the room's windows two floors below as he immediately kicked the window with his feet. From the inside, a 30 years-old-woman grabbed him and pulled him into the room.

This time, even Tang Xiu himself couldn't help but admire their good plans and ability. That rope should have long been prepared in advance as an escape route in case they came across dangerous situations, and they used it to flee directly. And that woman also had been arranged to stay there in advance by them, their partner in crime.

“Ah! As long as these two are still in the hotel, the guests will still be at risk. That annoying marvel—Chen Wei is still in her room. If she were to meet bad luck, there's no way I can answer to Han

Qingwu.”

Tang Xiu took a deep breath and left the building quickly.

“Sorry, Sir! The Caesar Grand Hotel is locked down, no one is allowed to enter or leave.” By the time Tang Xiu wanted to enter the hotel, he was stopped by the police officer who was responsible to guard and block the hotel’s entrance.

“I’m Tang Xiu and I also participated in this operation. Call Cheng Xuemei, she’ll tell you.” Tang Xiu said.

The police officer was surprised. After hesitating for a moment, he directly took his intercom and reported to the operation leader. Half a minute later, he received an order to let Tang Xiu go inside.

At the hallway on the 8th floor.

Cheng Xuemei was directing the cleanup of the shootout scene. Upon seeing Tang Xiu’s arrival, she quickly asked, “Why did you come back?”

“Don’t ask me yet. Quickly send some people to check the room two floors below the room #808! That white-haired youth had just escaped. He rappelled down two floors with a rope. There’s also a woman in her thirties or so who’s also with them. If your police force’s blockade is very tight, then... those two must still be in the hotel?”

“How do you know this?” Cheng Xuemei was shocked.

“I just came from the building across the hotel, so I saw everything clearly.” Tang Xiu said.

Cheng Xuemei nodded. With this information, she immediately issued orders, she even didn't consult the Public Security Bureau Director—Deng Jianmin who had just arrived.

Tang Xiu and Deng Jianmin finally met face to face, but taking advantage when Cheng Xuemei was busy, he quickly left and went to Chen Wei's room. Shortly after he rang the doorbell, the door was opened as he saw Chen Wei with her all-white pajamas, hanging loose long hair and bare feet, standing on the carpet.

“Hey, haven't you left already? Why did you come back?”

Chen Wei's facial expression was a bit pale. Even though she said that, but she quickly walked toward Tang Xiu and pulled him into the room as she then forcefully closed the door and locked it from the inside.

"It's dangerous here, so I came back." Tang Xiu said.

“I think I really have bad luck. To think that the public security in the homeland isn't as good as the foreign countries'. For fuck's sake, this is my first day back in Star City! And here I am, coming across a shootout between cops and bandits. Tell me, do this shit occur in Star City frequently?”

“It used to be very good, actually. But in the past two months, there have been too many homicides occurring. If you’re afraid, you should quickly leave Star City tomorrow.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“Who the hell is scared? This Great Aunt is just not accustomed to this. Besides, it’s just that I didn’t expect to come across this situation in the homeland. I tell you I, your grandmother, am from abroad, I also have come across such gunfights before. Furthermore, I forgot to tell you that I have a black belt in Taekwondo; three or five big guys are not my match at all.”

Tang Xiu looked at her thin arms and legs. He was too lazy to bicker with her and walked straight to the window to watch the scene outside. At the same time, he also released his perception quickly. As long as that white-haired youth was still in this hotel, his spiritual sense would be able to cover everything; and it wouldn’t be difficult to catch him.

“Huh? Strange. Why is he not here?”

## Chapter 210: Anger

---

Within the range of his perception, nothing can escape from Tang Xiu's observation. Either a rat's hole or even an ant on the floor, he could find it clearly. However, he couldn't find the white-haired youth and the woman in the hotel's building.

“They vanished?”

Tang Xiu didn't believe that their speed would be so fast, because the entire hotel was, after all, being blocked by the police now. Even if they wanted to run away, it was impossible to do so in such a short time.

However, where were they?

Tang Xiu carefully looked for a few times before he finally decided to investigate each and every person. He knew that there was an easy technique that can change one's appearance easily. The white-haired youth had an obvious and unique characteristic that his perception would be able to discern even if he wanted to run away without being noticed.

Sure enough, after careful investigation, Tang Xiu finally found two suspicious persons. Although their appearance had changed, he was sure that the two now were wearing cleaning staff attire. The white-haired youth and the woman were now pushing trolleys.

Tang Xiu took out his mobile and was about to make the call. But

he suddenly remembered the spot where the police had them surrounded. Each corridor had a surveillance camera, including the room where he was in. If he was to send the message to Cheng Xuemei, she would definitely find his secret after viewing the surveillance video afterward.

“Well, it seems like I have to personally act. Anyway, it can be considered as removing evil people.”

Tang Xiu secretly sighed. He then turned around and walked toward the door.

Chen Wei had already gone back to bed as she pulled over the quilt that covered her body. As she sat down and watched Tang Xiu leaving, she quickly asked, “Where are you going?”

“I’m going out to take care of something. You stay here and don’t go anywhere. Do remember that it’s still dangerous out there. If you run around, it’s very likely that those drug dealers will grab someone as a hostage.” Tang Xiu said.

“Drug dealers?” Chen Wei’s brain was quite fast and immediately associated what had happened before in the Three Feathers Pub and asked anxiously, “You’re involved in this, aren’t you? These drug dealers are related with the ones in the Three Feathers Pub, aren’t they?”

“Yes. The police knew that the drug dealers were staying in this Caesar Grand Hotel; because those who were caught in the Three Feathers Pub told them. Do bear in mind, you’re not to get out!

These drug dealers are killers and very ruthless. They come from the Jinshan Region. Not only do they have pistols, they also have machine guns.” Tang Xiu said.

Chen Wei’s complexion turned pale as she hurriedly jumped off the bed and grabbed Tang Xiu’s arm, shouting, “You can’t go.”

“I have a serious matter to take care of.” Tang Xiu said.

Chen Wei said loudly, “I don’t care! You must stay in the room. You just graduated high school. Don’t think to show off your ability to that beautiful officer. Han Qingwu sent you to me, you’re only responsible for my safety.”

Tang Xiu said lightly, “As long as you don’t leave the room, I’ll be able to keep you safe. Moreover, I know what’s going on outside, so you’d better not stop me.”

“I’ll stop you!” Chen Wei shouted angrily.

Tang Xiu sighed and moved lightning fast as he stunned Chen Wei in an instant. He quickly held her waist and directly put her on the bed. Only then did he turn to leave the room.

At the second floor’s corridor.

Taylor was pushing a small trolley. He wore cleaning staff attire and had his hair covered as he moved forward slowly. Next to him was a woman wearing makeup. Whenever the two found an



officer, they moved quickly and intentionally stopped outside a room, acting as though they were going to clean the room.

“I have a feeling we’re being watched.”

Taylor’s footsteps suddenly stopped as a cold glint flashed in his eyes. His Chinese was very fluent and wasn’t much different than the locals, even though he was a foreigner.

The woman said with an unfazed expression, “It’s a given. There are surveillance cameras in the corridor. And those cops should be searching our trail from the monitoring room. I’ll go above the 20th floor to destroy the surveillance equipment there. Crown Prince, you find the chance to run away!”

Taylor chided with a low voice, “Shut up! Once you destroy the surveillance cameras, it’s the same as exposing our position. Follow me! As long as we can successfully get to the underground parking lot, we’ll be safe.”

The woman shook her head and said, “No. The cops are not stupid. They blocked all the entrances and exits to the underground parking lot. Even if we forcefully breakthrough their blockade, I’m afraid we still can’t get out. Prince, your life is much more important, so you must escape successfully. As long as you can get out of this hotel, I believe that with your ability, those cops won’t be able to get you! After you go back, send my regards to the general on my behalf.”

Taylor looked at the woman deeply and said, “If you die, I’ll find

a way to get your bones back and give you a proper burial. If you live and escape, I'll guarantee you a good and happy life for a lifetime."

"I'll remember that!"

The woman then took the mop and carried a bucket. She separated from Taylor in the elevator door. She was quite courageous as she took the elevator, directly heading to the 24th floor. After leaving the elevator, she met two attendants in the corridor. And almost without hesitation, with a sharp dagger in her hand, she sliced off their throats the moment she passed by them.

"Bang..."

She moved very quickly. After killing the two attendants, she immediately destroyed the surveillance cameras above the corridor's corner. Then, she easily kicked the door and killed the man and woman inside.

Within just a short two minutes, the woman had killed a total of 11 people and destroyed 4 surveillance cameras.

At the control room on the 4th floor of Caesar Grand Hotel, Deng Jianmin and Cheng Xuemei were coordinating the forces. By monitoring the screen, they were constantly looking for suspicious persons. However, as soon as one of the screens suddenly went dark, the security guards' complexion who was responsible for the monitoring, changed greatly.

“We got the suspicious criminal! She killed two attendants before she destroyed the surveillance camera. Fuck! She’s on the 24th floor,” the security guard shouted loudly.

Deng Jianmin and Cheng Xuemei quickly came in front of the screen. The four screens continued to disappear one by one. From the last footage, they were sure that there was a drug dealer on the 24th floor. And not only the other party destroyed the surveillance camera, but she also randomly killed the hotel staff and the guests.

Cheng Xuemei grabbed her intercom and shouted, “The drug dealer is on the 24th floor. All teams pay attention and quickly block the 23rd, 24th and 25th floors as fast as possible. Do remember that the drug dealers are destroying the surveillance cameras and wantonly killing the hotel staffs and guests. She’s wearing cleaning staff attire and carrying a dagger and guns.”

The police moved quickly and rushed to the 23rd, 24th and 25th floors one after another. Within just a few minutes, they had blocked the exit of the three floors.

However, as a large number of police officers began raiding these three floors, the other surveillance cameras up to the 40th floor were continuously being destroyed. She even deliberately killed the hotel’s guests before she destroyed those surveillance cameras.

Tang Xiu was continuously monitoring the white-haired youth and that woman with his perception. And the woman’s action made him thoroughly enraged. He had guessed her intention, but

her unceasing murdering was something that he couldn't stand idly by, because the victims who died in her hands numbered almost 20.

The moment when she destroyed the last surveillance camera on the 40th floor, she suddenly saw a young man coming toward her with a deadpan expression on his face. She rushed toward him without a moment's hesitation.

“Die...”

A sharp dagger fiercely slashed toward the other's neck. At first, she was sure that the blow would hit, but the moment it was about to hit, she was struck with disbelief because she failed.

What happened?

The woman's complexion changed and she lifted her leg to kick while her other hand quickly grabbed a pistol and aimed at him. However, before she could even pull the trigger, the flying kick she threw was as though hitting a hard rock, giving her an incomparable shock.

Whoosh!

A hand's shadow flashed through, and she could only feel that her hand turned numb as the pistol in her hand suddenly appeared in the man's hand.

The woman's pupils contracted. She staggeringly stepped backwards and shouted sternly, "Who the hell are you? You..."

Naturally, the opponent who was the first to arrive at the 40th floor, was none other than Tang Xiu.

A cold killing intent could be seen on Tang Xiu's face as he spoke with an awe-inspiring tone, "I originally wanted to catch that white-haired youth, not you. But since you continued killing the hotel's staffs and guests, I can no longer watch and stand idly by, so you have to die!"

The moment his voice fell, Tang Xiu's figure flashed forward instantaneously as he moved in an instant in front of the woman. His fist moved with uncanny trajectory and hit the woman's neck, while his foot kicked her stomach.

Tang Xiu was very well aware of his strength. He didn't use all of his strength, because even an ox would be killed instantly by him on the spot. So his punch wouldn't kill her.

"Huh?"

Tang Xiu frowned. The range of his perception had been extended to the underground parking lot. And he could see that the white-haired youth had already got there unimpeded, he had also discarded the trolley he was pushing before.

"He wants to run away by driving?"

Tang Xiu's mind relaxed. He knew that the exits and entrances of the underground parking lot had been blocked. Even if this white-haired youth was powerful, it was impossible for him to drive a vehicle and run away. However, just at the moment he took a relieved breath, his expression changed again.

“No. He isn't going to run away with a car. Is he going to escape from the air ventilation? Damn! There should also be a lackey waiting at the air ventilation exit for him. These fucking damned bastards are truly cunning and have prepared more than one escape route...”

Sure enough, as Tang Xiu guessed, the white-haired youth easily opened the vent and climbed into it within a short time. Then, he quickly moved forward along the pipeline. When he opened a manhole lid and climbed out of it, he was already in the alley behind the hotel as two black cars were parked there in the nearby alley.

“Damn! I can't catch up with him!”

Tang Xiu secretly shook his head and gave up the idea to pursue him.

## Chapter 211: Outstanding Merit

---

Tang Xiu left the 40th floor, but he didn't return to Chen Wei's room and headed toward the control room on the 4th floor instead. Under the astonished gazes of Deng Jianmin and Cheng Xuemei, he calmly said, "I met the woman from the pair of drug dealers and made her faint because she was going to kill me. In addition, the white-haired guy has already escaped from the hotel. I saw him from the window."

Deng Jianmin angrily spoke, "Who the hell are you? How can you be so sure that the main culprit run away?"

Tang Xiu replied with a cold expression and tone, "I don't need you to believe my words. My task has been completed, and the rest is your responsibility. If there's nothing else, don't bother me anymore."

After having said that, he left the control room.

Cheng Xuemei quickly stopped him as she winked at Deng Jianmin. She forced out a smile and said, "Tang Xiu, Director Deng don't know you, so he didn't recognize you. I believe you, but we still have to continue the search and hunt for them. Find a place to rest first, and wait for us to take care of the matter in the hotel. We'll talk about this again later."

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment before he told Chen Xuemei about Chen Wei's room number. Then he left directly.

“Ugh, I don’t have the room card.”

Upon arriving at the door, only then did Tang Xiu realized that he hadn’t brought the room’s card. After hesitating for a moment, he kicked open the door. Chen Wei was still fainted inside. He then used his backhand to close the door and then walked to the sofa and sat.

Two hours later. Tang Xiu was sitting drowsily on the sofa when the doorbell rang. Since the door was badly battered by Tang Xiu, Cheng Xuemei opened with a surprised expression hung on her beautiful face as she walked inside.

“You guys are...”

With an indifferent expression, Tang Xiu replied, “She’s the friend of my teacher and just arrived in Star City. I was asked to accompany her strolling around the city. You also saw her last night in the Three Feathers Pub. Originally, I was going to go home, but I didn’t expect that when I was about to leave, the matter with those foreign drug dealers broke out, so I came back here.”

“What happened to her?” Cheng Xuemei immediately asked.

“It’s her mistake for not letting me out. So I made her faint. Anyways, let’s stop talking about her. I need to discuss the matter between us.” Tang Xiu said.



Between us?

Cheng Xuemei had gotten used to the confusing tone and words Tang Xiu used. However, since she was also a tenacious and determined woman, she shook her head and said whilst smiling, “I came here to thank you. Tonight, if it weren’t for you, I’m afraid we wouldn’t catch those drug dealers and we also would have suffered grave casualties. Furthermore, the woman you defeated, she died.”

Tang Xiu said, “I want to form an agreement with you. You know I just graduated from high school and am going to Shanghai to attend college. So I want you to not disclose my involvement in this case.”

“How can we do that? The Bureau Director—Deng Jianmin already knows about your deeds. He has decided to give you a model citizen reward for this important report. He wants the public to learn from your deeds and encourage them to be law-abiding citizens in order to support the police wholeheartedly...”=

Tang Xiu waved his hand to interrupt her and said with a deep tone, “Keep me out of it. I don’t want to become famous; it will only bring about a lot of troubles to me. If you want to create a model figure, pick someone else. I don’t care about it.”

“There’s no way we can lie that blatantly, no?” Cheng Xuemei let out a forced smile as she replied.

“If you insist to publicize me, then it’s fine with me. But if the

media happens to interview me, I'll say that the police are doing nothing and they're useless to even use threats for my help in catching those drug dealers. In short, I will discredit your police force. How about I say that?" Tang Xiu replied with a cold expression.

"You..."

As dumbfounded as she was, Cheng Xuemei looked at Tang Xiu and was at a loss whether she had to cry or laugh. She had never seen such person. He could obviously obtain fame and fortune for doing such a good deeds. But he unexpectedly refused the reward for his own efforts. Furthermore, this guy even dared to threaten her?

"Forget it then. I won't report your involvement in this case. But, I really don't get why would you refuse such a good deed like this. Had it been others, I'm sure they take it without thinking."

"Do you really think this is a good thing?" Tang Xiu replied with an indifferent expression.

"Isn't it?" Cheng Xuemei asked back.

"Don't forget that one of those drug dealers run away. If I guess correctly, that guy is highly likely the most important person. That woman destroyed the surveillance cameras up to the 30th and 40th floor. She also intentionally committed murder wantonly. She was using her life to attract the police forces to give that white-haired guy a chance to run away." Tang Xiu explained.

Cheng Xuemei stared blankly for a moment and instantly understood it.

A bitter expression was revealed on her beautiful face as she nodded and said, "You're right. According to the confession from the drug dealers, the one who escaped was Taylor. The only son of a big shot drug dealer in the Golden Triangle. He is nicknamed 'Crown Prince'."

"Thus, if I go forward and receive the attention from thousands of people, do you think that guy won't harbor any grudges toward me? If he wants revenge, then the first one he will come for would be me, no?" Tang Xiu said.

At this moment, Cheng Xuemei finally understood everything.

With a bit of complicated expression on her face, she then nodded and said, "I understand your concern. This is truly a poor consideration from our side. Please be rest assured that I will make sure to press down on this matter. We'll never reveal the slightest hint of your involvement."

"Do me a favor, would you? I must go home now, so send some police officer to stay guard here. I'll come again tomorrow morning." Tang Xiu said.

"Alright!" Cheng Xuemei nodded.

Tang Xiu left the Caesar Grand Hotel. But he somewhat regretted not asking Cheng Xuemei for someone to send him home. Feeling vexed, he waited for a long time on the roadside before he caught a taxi.

After coming back to South Gate Town, Tang Xiu found that Mu Qingping hadn't rested yet. She was sitting in the living room, reading a book. Recently, he realized that Mu Qingping had changed a lot compared to the past. She was quite different from before, either her manner, speech or habits.

“Big Sis Mu, you haven't rested yet?” Tang Xiu asked casually.

Mu Qingping looked up. She immediately got up upon seeing Tang Xiu and said with a smile, “Those instructors recommended me a few books, so I took the time to read them. By the way, have you eaten yet? You want me to prepare a midnight snack for you?”

“No need, thanks. I had dinner this evening. Anyhow, how's your training course with those instructors? Good?” Tang Xiu shook his head and replied.

“It's great. They are indeed worthy of their internationally renowned reputation. Everything in regards to their teaching is very good. Tang Xiu, can I discuss something with you?” Mu Qingping said with a smile.

“What is it?” Tang Xiu asked.

“Some of the instructors intend to take me to the outside for a week to learn more comprehensive contents, such as management and maintenance of private aircraft, yacht’s staff arrangement, the layouts, and...” Mu Qingping said.

Tang Xiu interrupted her, “Just go! I’ll take care of Yinyin. I’ll get a driver’s license in the next few days, so I can pick up Mom; she also can take care of Yinyin while convenient.”

“Thank you!” Mu Qingping replied with a grateful expression.

Tang Xiu waved his hand and said, “I’m her Master, this is what I should do. Also, please don’t always say thanks, will you? We’re a family, it’s unnecessary.”

Suddenly, Tang Xiu’s expression changed as an upset look could be seen on his face.

“What is it?” Mu Qingping was keenly aware of Tang Xiu’s changing expression and asked.

“It’s just that I had to go to the driving school today. I’d forgotten about it.” Tang Xiu answered with a wry smile.

“Hahaha, it turns out to be this matter! Just go there and see the school’s instructor. It will be fine.” Mu Qingping replied and laughed.

Tang Xiu said reluctantly, “It’s because the South Gate Town’s

Property Manager, to be frank. She's the one who helped me find a driving school and see its principal. So I must go to see him and... Ah, forget it. I'll go there tomorrow."

The next morning.

Rays of sunshine had risen from the Eastern horizon.

Tang Xiu woke up and took a short bath. After having breakfast at home, he went out and bought breakfast for Chen Wei, as he then went in a hurry to Caesar Grand Hotel.

At the hotel.

Chen Wei was still sleeping soundly. Upon seeing her sleeping form on the bed, Tang Xiu knew that she must have woken up last night. He put the breakfast package on the tea table casually and then booted the computer and began to browse the internet. He rarely touched a computer. He went to the Internet café very few times as he usually only went there for his computer class from school.

Shortly after, he found a lot of news from the Internet that covered the news about Star City's Zhang Group. Along with it, there were all types of curses and slanders, which especially flamed the Zhang Family.

"Ah, right. I can also search for precious ore news on the Internet, can't I?"

Tang Xiu's expression moved and immediately began to use the mighty Baidu as he searched information related to ores. Browsing through the text information and pictures, Tang Xiu did find several good ores. Unfortunately, since he was not skilled in computers, he didn't know how to access the link to the ores' addresses.

“Ah! Precious ores' trading network?”

Tang Xiu clicked the hyperlink as his eyes turned bright in the next moment.

“Wintertide Fluorite? Star Fragment Stone?”

After browsing for more than half an hour, Tang Xiu found these two precious ores. Especially the Star Fragment Stone, he didn't even dare to imagine that such a precious ore existed on Earth. One must know that this precious ore was extremely rare even in the Immortal World. It was a treasure of which every Master Refiner could only dream about.

Tang Xiu took out his mobile and typed the number on the page as he dialed it.

“Who's speaking?” A voice belonging to an old person came out of the mobile.

“I saw something on the Ore Trade Network. Do you still have

this Star Fragment Stone? If you still have it, I'll buy all the stock."

"How much do you want?"

Tang Xiu replied, "Just like I said before, all of the stock."

"Since it's a bulk trade, come to Tianjin City!"

Tang Xiu's brows raised and spoke in a deep tone, "I still have something to take care of in these two days, so I can't go there now. At the latest, I can go three days from now. I hope you can preserve it for me."

"Alright, rest assured!"

Tang Xiu hung up the phone and dialed another number on the page. What made him frown was that the same old person turned out to be the one who answered his call, even though the number was different.

"I'll be waiting for you in Tianjin City within three days."

After he finished speaking, he then directly hung up the phone.

Tang Xiu was quite puzzled. Since the other party was selling the Star Fragment Stone and the Wintertide Fluorite, why would he give two different phone numbers on the network?



# Chapter 212: Car Training at the Driving School

---

Inside a VIP room of the Caesar Grand Hotel.

Chen Wei's eyelids fluttered as she slowly opened her eyes on the soft and cozy bed. After she sat up with her sleepy eyes, Tang Xiu's shadow entered her blurry vision as anger suddenly boiled up from her stomach up to her brain. Her tender body bounced up from the bed as she threw herself forward threateningly as though a hungry tiger toward Tang Xiu.

“Surnamed Tang bastard! This ancestress will fight with you...”

Tang Xiu's thoughts were abruptly interrupted. He turned around and saw Chen Wei, who was storming over at him. His eyes slightly paused, because Chen Wei was wearing loose pajamas and the belt tied on her waist was already loosened. The pajamas split open in the middle, and due to Chen Wei's movements, not only did he see those snow white big buns, he could also see its two little red cherries atop it.

This... Was this the legendary... exposed chest?

A short circuit happened inside Tang Xiu's brain when Chen Wei flew in front of him. Just as the small pink-colored fist was about hit his nose, he reacted in an instant. Whilst feeling the heat from the lower part below his abdomen, he quickly moved lightning fast and instantly grabbed Chen Wei's waist and avoided her small fist. Then, he forcibly grabbed her big chest from the left side and

threw her back to the bed as though garbage.

“Don’t get up before you take care of your clothes first. I didn’t expect you wanted to show off those impressive rising blobs of yours, though. The weather heated up, and you gotta put down the fire and anger within you. Do take care not to burn your body, so you don’t die in vain. Oh, that’s right, I almost forgot to tell you. It actually felt pretty good.” A smile outlined itself on the corner of Tang Xiu’s mouth as he then turned around to the sofa and sat down.

Chen Wei, who was thrown back to bed, struggled to get up again. However, she suddenly stopped upon hearing Tang Xiu’s words. When she looked down at her chest, she suddenly screamed and quickly pulled on her pajamas to cover up her sensitive parts. Then, she grabbed a pillow and threw it at Tang Xiu, cursing, “You damn little pervert! Y-y-you bastard, what the fuck did you grab it for?”

Tang Xiu’s lower part was heated up. However, he never had the intention to give his first time to Chen Wei. So, he maintained his calmness and replied indifferently, “If I were a pervert, you would have long been eaten by me on the spot, I’d even dare say that you wouldn’t be able to crawl out of the bed now.”

Chen Wei raised her right arm as she pointed at Tang Xiu and angrily chided, “You... Y-you... Y-you’re shameless.”

“If I’m really shameless, I’m afraid you wouldn’t even be able to move your fingers, let alone open your mouth and curse me.”

"..."

Chen Wei looked at Tang Xiu with an expression of wanting to cry but wasn't able to. Yesterday, she found that Tang Xiu was just like a good, well-behaved mommy boy. Although he was cunning and fierce at the most, it was only his glib talk, and not his martial arts ability. But who would have thought that in just a mere one night, she suddenly found that she was not his opponent?

Tang Xiu said with a dull expression, "If you don't want to get cold, hurry to take a bath and wear your clothes. I've brought you breakfast. After you finish eating, obediently stay in the hotel, I have to go out to take care of something."

"Why the hell must I listen to you? I haven't settled the score with you yet! Why did you suddenly knock me out last night? Didn't you repaid my good intentions with an evil one?" Chen Wei said angrily.

"I've to point two mistakes. Firstly, you should remember that if you were not stupid enough to be fooled by me, you wouldn't have taken the bet yesterday. Secondly, you have done more misdemeanors compared to me. I hope you will use your brain better in the future and not spit out more garbage from your mouth." Tang Xiu said.

Chen Wei was so mad even her body was trembling. But as much as she wanted, she could do nothing. She could only glare angrily at Tang Xiu, bellowing with a trembling voice, "You don't believe

me I'll call Han Qingwu immediately and tell her that you molested me, do you?"

Tang Xiu took his phone and picked Han Qingwu's number. "You can call her now. If Han Qingwu believes you, I won't say anything and leave immediately. In any case, she gotta do what she gotta do anyway. If she choses to believe me, I'm sure the friendship between the both of you will certainly be affected."

"..."

Chen Wei was silent.

After staying silent for a few minutes, only then did the anger on her face slowly disappeared. When she looked up again, a slight smiling expression was revealed on her face, even an intense curiosity filled her eyes as she asked, "Tell me, how long do your "night skill" ability last?"

"Yesterday I was polite to you because I took Han Qingwu's face into account. But since you're really a marvel-annoying woman, being polite to you is useless; I can only treat you with my own style. How was it? Did you think my style is useless?" Tang Xiu said.

Chen Wei raised her thumb up and exclaimed, "It's very good! To be frank, yesterday, I didn't like you even for a little bit. But today you got my admiration, even though for a bit. You know what? I'm kinda interested in you now."

Tang Xiu said, “Please be prudent, will you? A woman who’s curious about a man wouldn’t be far from falling in love with him. And I have no interest in you whatsoever.”

Chen Wei laughed heartily and said loudly, “You’re truly one to have people shower their affection onto, without you even being interested in them. But heck, even if I were to fall in love with you, this great aunt—I, am not afraid. At the worst, I’ll only give myself up to seduce you into my arms. I don’t believe you can maintain your composure and stay calm just like the willow tree under the blow of the waves.”

“That won’t happen, trust me. I never, and won’t ever be like this Brother Willow, to begin with. If I had to describe myself in words, not even a chance I’ll be disturbed with a woman in my lap? But if I were to aim you, at the most, I will only have sex with and dump you afterward.” Tang Xiu shook his head and said.

“YOU...”

Chen Wei was incensed. But her anger turned into a smile, which was even faster than turning a book’s pages. She then snorted coldly and said, “Hmph. You just said that I’m a marvel-annoying woman, no? Even if I were not a chaste woman, don’t ever dream of having sex first and dump this beauty either. This great aunt—I, will be like a superglue when I love someone. Wanting to break up with me, then I’ll skin a layer of that person at the least.”

Tang Xiu rolled his eyes. He suddenly felt that if he were to continue staying here, he would definitely go straight into a wrong direction, so he got up and lightly said, “I still have something to

do, so I'll go first. Do remember that you're not to leave the room even a step. Otherwise, if you fall into an accident, I won't take any responsibility whatsoever."

Chen Wei jumped again from the bed and quickly blocked the way in front of Tang Xiu as she quickly asked, "Where are you going?"

Tang Xiu said, "That's my private affair, I believe."

"Your private affair is to keep me accompany! If your reason doesn't satisfy me, I'll follow you everywhere you go." Chen Wei said with a resented expression.

Tang Xiu was helpless and replied reluctantly, "I must go to the driving school. I had an agreement to see the principal yesterday. But I forgot it because of you. So it would be very rude if I don't go today."

Chen Wei rolled her eyes and opened the way as she said, "What a wimpy kid. You just thought to have your driver's license now? Bah! Forget it. Even if you're spitting out such rubbish, I'm too lazy to delve into it. Fine! I'm telling you. If you don't come for me until noon, I'll go and eat outside by myself."

Be back at noon?

Tang Xiu nodded and said, "I'll try to get back in time."

After leaving the Caesar Grand Hotel, Tang Xiu looked at the time. It was still early in the morning; he still had time to go his family's restaurant and explain to his mother about Yinyin. After he asked her to take a rest for a couple of days, only then did he took a taxi and went to the driving school.

The driving school principal's name was Zhao Dequan. Although he was already past middle-age, he was still spirited and had a good health. Coupled with his extraordinary manliness, he gave off the vibe of a successful figure.

“Mr. Tang, Long Xueyao told me about your situation. Chief Long also specifically called me, so you need not worry. I have properly arranged all the following issues regarding this matter. But since I have yet to know whether you can drive or not, as well as your knowledge with cars, I was thinking to ask you to come here. Anyways, I've arranged the best instructor and also the special treatment for you, so you can familiarize yourself with the car properly.” Zhao Dequan spoke with an I-have-handled-everything manner along with a particularly amiable expression.

Tang Xiu replied with curiosity, “Chief Long? Who are you talking about, Long Zhengyu or Long Hanwen?”

“It's Long Hanwen.” Zhao Dequan said.

“Ah, I didn't expect that he also heard that I want to take the driver's license test. Principal Zhang, I haven't had the chance to drive a car before, so I don't know much about driving. It seems that I'll have to trouble you. Anyway, wait for me to obtain a driver's license and I'll treat you to a meal to express my

gratitude.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“Hahaha, you’re flattering me. Thank you.” Zhao Dequan said with a light laugh.

Shortly after, Tang Xiu then followed Zhang Dequan to see the special instructor who would give him the training. The instructor’s surname was Li, so Tang Xiu directly called him Instructor Li.

Instructor Li was standing in front of the car as he said with a smile, “Alright, let’s start with familiarizing yourself with the car, and then I’ll teach you the essential points of driving. The first thing to do this morning is practice. If we still have time in the afternoon, we’ll go outside and ride a few laps.”

“Alright!” Tang Xiu nodded.

Ten minutes later.

Tang Xiu had familiarized himself with the car parts. As he looked at Instructor Li in the co-pilot seat, he asked, “I’ve memorized all of them. Shall we try driving on the venue?”

Instructor Li said with a smile, “No hurries. You must remember all sort of rules I teach you as well as memorize the points in driving skills clearly.”

Tang Xiu instantly realized that this Instructor Li didn’t believe



that he had memorized everything he just taught him. After hesitating for a moment, Tang Xiu then said, “I do have memorized everything, truly. Let’s give it a try then. If there’s a mistake, then correct me.”

Instructor Li knew that Tang Xiu’s identity was unusual. So he agreed upon hearing his request. However, he was still unsure and said, “When you’re driving, do pay attention when you’re shifting gears as well as using the clutch and brake cautiously and reasonably. You must not step on the throttle pedal too deeply.”

“Got it!” Tang Xiu nodded.

Tang Xiu put on his seat belt, putting down the hand brake and following the order of the process taught by Instructor Li. He slowly started the car and began driving the car slowly on the open training grid. Ten minutes later, he had smoothly executed all the essential points as well as sensed the path in driving skill control. Furthermore, he had done it in very standard orders, even the Instructor Li who sat on the co-pilot seat found it impeccable.

“Awesome! You’re truly amazing! You’ve just practiced for a few times. You know, a lot of our students practice for many days and are still unable to do this. If I didn’t know that you haven’t driven a car before, I would have thought you’re an experienced driver.” Instructor Li said with a sigh.

“It’s very easy. I happen to be able to learn things faster, though.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“Well, good for you. However, you must not pursue speed only, but also things that affect your state of mind. One have to have a stable and steady state of mind. You must neither be impatient nor can you let your state of mind be affected by your emotions. There’s a common saying that said: ‘the more capable one is, the more likely he would be negligent and make mistakes’, which is also the principle that applies in driving. Experienced drivers rely on their rich experience whereas reckless and arrogant people want to overtake another vehicle, speeding and so on; for which, they eventually make mistakes, resulting in their own death.”

## Chapter 213: A Top-Notch Skill

---

Tang Xiu himself understood this principle so he nodded and said, “Worry not, Instructor Li! I’m sure I can control my emotional state. However, I’m afraid I have something to take care of this afternoon, so I can’t come. How about you let me practice for a while and we’ll give it a go on the road afterward?”

“If you can maintain this kind of state, I can let you try to drive on the road. But if you can’t, I won’t permit it.” Instructor Li said.

"No problem!" Tang Xiu replied and continued the driving practice around the storehouse, doing parallel parking, and even an uphill and fixed-point parking, for which he did everything smoothly.

Instructor Li originally wanted to pick on Tang Xiu’s mistakes, as to make him give up the idea of having a test drive on the road this morning. However, he was quite astonished since he couldn’t find any mistakes.

“Tang Xiu, is this really your first time driving a car?” Finally, he couldn’t help but ask in astonishment.

Tang Xiu said, “It’s indeed my first time. If i want to go somewhere, I just get a ride. So I didn’t expect that driving a car is quite interesting.”

Instructor Li forced out a smile and said, “Well, I’m really speechless. Let’s try to go straight on the road then! There’s a

circle on the road section outside which is used specially for a test drive before trying on the traffic road. Aside from the other instructors who are coaching in other cars, there will be no danger.”

Tang Xiu nodded.

With the guidance and directions from Instructor Li, he drove the car gently. From the first gear to the second, third, and then fourth, he continuously drove the car until he reached the fifth gear after doing a few laps as test drive.

After the upshift of the gear now was the downshift one, in which he also did smoothly. Even under the awkward instruction given by Instructor Li, he was still able to switch gears in accordance with the instructions.

More than an hour later, Instructor Li looked at Tang Xiu with a complex expression, as he said with a wry smile, “I’ve taught many students in my life, one of whom is even a professional car racer. But never once have I ever met an amazing one such as you. You did it with almost zero mistakes. And seeing your driving skill, it’s like you’re a senior driver with years of experience. Well, let’s call it a day! The task given by the Principal to me can be considered to have been accomplished.”

Tang Xiu stopped the car as he unlocked his seatbelt and said with a smile, “Thanks a lot, Instructor Li.”

Instructor Li shook his head and said, “Being able to teach a

trainee such as you kind of makes me happy, that's enough. You don't need to thank me. Well, after you've gotten your driver's license, do be careful when you're driving later."

"Don't worry, I got it!" Tang Xiu said with a smile.

After leaving the training venue, Tang Xiu then went to the principal's office and found that Zhao Dequan wasn't in the office, so he left directly.

Several minutes later, Zhao Dequan returned to his office and found that Instructor Li was waiting for him. He was surprised and immediately asked him, "Aren't you still supposed to be teaching Tang Xiu? How come you're here?"

"The training is done, so I come report." Instructor Li said.

"Huh? It's done? What do you mean? That Tang youth is bad at learning?" Zhao Dequan was confused.

"He's not bad! On the contrary, he's way too good. If I didn't know he had never driven a car before, I would've thought that he has years of experience in driving. I had observed him in the 2-3 hours of his training today, and I was kinda terrified by his learning capability. His driving skill can be called as top-notch. And most importantly, do you wanna know about it?" Instructor Li forced out a smile and asked.

"What is it?" Zhao Dequan asked with astonishment.

“From the beginning, I began teaching him until he left, not even a mistake he made. Can you imagine that? A new trainee who’s started to learn usually do a lot of mistakes, many times. But he commit a single one. He’s simply a monster, the reincarnation of the God of Driving!” replied Instructor Li.

Zhao Dequan was shocked and speechless. People said that everyone would make mistakes when they learned to ride a horse, and it was inevitable for one to commit mistakes when they just learned something new! However, someone who didn’t even make a single mistake even with a couple hours of training was something he had never seen. This was his first time to hear it.

“Well, let’s forget it. It’s a good thing that he’s a fast learner, though. I was actually afraid since he got a driver’s license through an informal method, for which he would happen to meet accidents when he’s driving! Well, you’ve done well so I’ll take a note of this. Go and do your job first!”

“Alright!” Instructor Li complied and then left the Principal’s office.

Zhao Dequan took out his mobile phone from his pocket and dialed Long Hanwen’s phone. After the call was connected, he then said with a light laugh, “Ah, Boss Long, I didn’t disturb you, did I?”

“It’s Principal Zhao, isn’t it? It’s alright. The reason you called me is...”, Long Hanwen’s voice came out of the phone.

Zhao Dequan said with an obsequious laugh, “Chief Long, I’ll report about the matter you wanted me to handle! Tang Xiu came to the driving school this morning, and I’ve specially arranged the best instructor to teach him driving skills and sense. The instructor just left. He said that Tang Xiu just left and he was the reincarnation of the God of Driving. He only practiced this morning and didn’t make even a single mistake. So I think that with his level of skill, even becoming an instructor in our driving school is no problem for him.”

“I got it. Sorry for troubling you.” Long Hanwen said.

Zhao Dequan said with a smile, “You’re most welcome, this is what I’m supposed to do anyway. Chief Long, I’ve done the best I can and I even had some dinners with my friends in the Department of Transportation. If nothing happens, Tang Xiu certainly will get his driver’s license at the most in 10 to 15 days.”

Long Hanwen was silent for a moment and then slowly said, “Principal Zhao, I’ve taken notice about what you’ve done, so I’ll do my best to handle the matter with your son. If there’s no accident within these 10 days to half a month, I’ll be able to get him out of the district prison. However, after he comes out, I hope you use informal means to secretly send him abroad as fast as possible. The crime he had committed, after all, is not a minor matter.”

“Yes, yes! I’ll be sure to remember your words.”

“Well, that’s good. Farewell!”

The call ended.

Zhao Dequan forced out a smile as he hung up the phone and rubbed his forehead hard. He had broken his own bottom line for his son. Originally, he still slightly condemned himself inside, but when he heard that Tang Xiu's driving skill was very good, he finally felt much better.

Shortly before noon, Tang Xiu arrived at Caesar Grand Hotel. Yesterday's case lead to the loss of a large number of guests for the Caesar Grand Hotel. The originally lively hotel was now deserted, as there were only a handful of attendants and environmental protection workers who were still doing their jobs.

"The security guards increased everywhere!? It seems the Caesar Grand Hotel's business has been seriously hit."

Tang Xiu smiled faintly. Under the gazes of the staff, he took the elevator and headed to Chen Wei's room. He didn't expect that even though it was already noon, Chen Wei was still sitting on the sofa with one of her legs on top of the other and wearing a facial mask that covered her face. Upon seeing the black-colored medicinal plaster that resembled a mask on her face, Tang Xiu smiled wryly inside.

"Hello, outlandish lady! Clean up your facial mask and change your clothes. I'll take you out for lunch."

Chen Wei blinked and snorted, "Hmph, It's still early, why



should we eat now? It's just only ten before 12. Besides, I just put on this facial, it's only been ten minutes. So take a sit and wait!"

"I know from the mark on your makeup. But I will only wait for you until 12:30. If you're not ready by then, I'll have lunch by myself. I've spent the entire morning in the driving school, so you might not be hungry, but I'm!" Tang Xiu said.

"You're so petty, you know that?!" Chen Wei gave a sidelong glance and curled her lips as she closed her eyes slowly.

It was 1 o'clock in the afternoon. Tang Xiu followed behind Chen Wei with a blackened face as they left the Caesar Hotel's entrance very slowly. Although he already said that he would only wait until 12:30, but Chen Wei—this outlandish woman, truly dragged her feet until it was nearly 1 o'clock. Even when they were about to go out, she even went to the bathroom to pee.

"What do you want to eat?" Tang Xiu asked after they came to a nearby street.

"Hmph, anything of the highest quality." Chen Wei replied with a snort.

"I can't help you with that. But for the second ones, I can take you to try them." Tang Xiu said.

"The highest ones, or I won't go!" Chen Wei turned a blind eye and said.

“The best ones are the meals made by mother.” Tang Xiu said.

"Ugh..." Chen Wei's breathing came to a halt. She then immediately let out an awkward smile and said, "Then let's go the second grade! I'm actually a person that's easy to compromise!"

Tang Xiu directly caught a taxi and said to the driver after he boarded it, "Uncle, go to Long's Dining Hall, please."

The cab driver was surprised as he turned around to look at Tang Xiu and hesitantly said, "Do you really want to go to Long's Dining Hall? The prices there are quite unusual! Besides, there's a strict requirement for people to eat there. I heard that they use a membership system, and if you're not a member, I'm afraid you can't even enter."

"I'm a member." Tang Xiu said.

The cab driver turned his head with amazement on his face. For one to become a member of the Long's Dining Hall meant that their identity was not simple. One must know that the spending there was not solely covered with money since one also must have a certain status. However, he didn't know that Tang Xiu was able to get membership of the Long's Dining Hall entirely due to his relationship with Long Zhengyu.

With an astonished expression, Chen Wei asked, "Uncle, this Long's Dining Hall you said, does it really have very high requirements?"

“High? It’s simply outrageous! Only if you spend a huge amount of money, which I heard one has to spend at least one million yuan, only then are you qualified to become a member there. Only the big shots in Star City as well as from the surrounding cities are able to get membership. Being able to enter the Long’s Dining Hall is taken as a pride for a lot of wealthy bosses.” The cab driver forced out a smile and answered.

Chen Wei turned to look at Tang Xiu as she said with an astonished expression, “Listening to Han Qingwu, your family only has a restaurant, how did you gain membership there?”

“You know that curiosity kills people, don’t you? You can freely open your mouth when you eat, but make sure you control your mouth when you speak. Just remember that today, I’ll let you satiate your hunger and thirst to the full.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“Hmph, you really can act and show your image upside-down eh? But I’m afraid we’ll be unable to even take a step into that place’s entrance when we get there. I’m telling you now, I’ll definitely pretend not to know you by that time and just turn around to leave.” Chen Wei cast him a glance and curled her lips as she said with disdain.

Tang Xiu looked outside through the windows, to the buildings that were passing by quickly. Without being salty nor weak, he said, “if you want, you can open the car’s door and leave now, though.”

“Hell no. I still wanna live.” Chen Wei rolled her eyes.

## Chapter 214: The Broadening Experience

---

As high as its 49 floors, the Long's Dining Hall's shape resembled two Golden Dragons, whereas the middle arch was used for the anteroom with a sphere-like shape, which was the manifestation of two dragons playing with a bead. From afar, its majesty and grandiosity gave everyone who looked at it a sense of oppression. Four security guards stood straight as spears outside the entrance, whereas a welcoming lady in formal attire kept smiling while checking out the guests' VIP membership cards.

At the entrance, a limousine stopped and left again. However, when a taxi stopped before the entrance, eyes were immediately attracted to it, showing looks of despise as well as contempt.

Tang Xiu got off the car along with Chen Wei, who looked somewhat unnatural. As he came to the welcoming lady, he said calmly, "I'm sorry Miss, I forgot to bring my membership card."

The welcoming lady showed an apologetic expression as she said, "Sir, Long's Dining Hall needs a membership card to enter. Unless you're a regular patron here. You've to look..."

Chen Wei's expression instantly turned a bit ugly. After hesitating for a moment, she repressed the urge to turn around and leave.

It was a disgrace. Shameful! Because she found that Tang Xiu basically had no membership card here, whereas he was acting as though he was someone who had the rights to enter, wanting to

join in.

Tang Xiu's brow rose. His vision shifted toward the four securities and found one he saw previously. He faced the security guard as he waved and said, "Hey you. Come here."

The four security guards looked at Tang Xiu. The one who Tang Xiu knew and was called, immediately approached with a respectful expression, saying, "Hello, Mr. Tang, is there anything I can do for you?"

"Can you tell her that I'm a regular patron here?" Tang Xiu said.

The security guard then spoke to the welcoming lady, "Mr. Tang has been here many times and he's also VIP, as well as Young Master Zhengyu's friend."

The welcoming lady's eyes flickered. Her face turned respectful as she said with a nod, "I'm really sorry for just now, Mr. Tang. Please come inside."

Tang Xiu nodded and turned around, looking at Chen Wei's surprised expression as he then walked through the entrance.

Even in her dreams, Chen Wei had never thought that everything would turn 180 degrees. Looking astonished, she hurriedly followed Tang Xiu through the entrance.

"Oh my God! This place is way too luxurious, isn't it? Much more

than those foreign 5-star hotels.” Chen Wei looked around for a while and asked with a dropped jaw, “Tang Xiu, are you really a member here?”

“Do you think we would be able to enter if I was not a member?” Tang Xiu asked back.

“B-But, the taxi driver said that only the wealthy and powerful can dine here.” Chen Wei replied and asked curiously, “How did you...”

“You don’t think I’m a big shot, do you?” Tang Xiu sneered.

“Hmph. What big shot, eh?!” Chen Wei snapped and said. “At the most, you’re just only a smart high school graduate, nothing else!”

Tang Xiu shook his head and sighed, “Just forget it. You also have a backward IQ, it seems!” Then, he continued, “Aside from your fierce mouth, I really have no expectation from your brain. Let’s just go. And please, less nonsense and less asking, will you? Just fill your belly with whatever you want.”

Chen Wei angrily glared at Tang Xiu. But finding him headed inside directly, she swallowed her anger and followed him inside.

Tang Xiu didn’t want to take the presidential box, because he thought that there was no need for him to expend much entertaining Chen Wei. After all, the presidential box was astronomical and he didn’t want to waste his money, even if he

could afford it. Therefore, he took the standard box and walked behind the attendant.

“WOW! It’s really luxurious!” Chen Wei was just like Granny Liu who visits the Grand View Garden, with a dropped jaw, she said, “We can also see half of Star City from here.”

Tang shook his head. Whilst glancing at the attendant who was chuckling and covering her mouth, he said, “Get us a few of your specialties, four meat dishes and two staples. Ah, a pot of soup also.”

"OK, please wait!" The waiter quickly complied, and soon, another one came to serve tea.

Chen Wei stood before the window, looking at the outside city landscape, exclaiming, “Damn! Rich have the good life! This great aunt—I, socialize well, I’ll simply find a wealthy second generation nouveau-riche and marry him. Spending my time drinking and seeking pleasure and partying every night.”

“And I dare say you’ll be beaten by your man, since you don’t do your responsibilities to take care of him,” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“In life one gotta have the ability to take care of themselves, no?!” Chen Wei talked back, and then asked, “Ah, right, where’s the restroom? I need to fix my makeup and then wait for the grand meal.”



“Go out and ask the attendants, they’ll take you there.” Tang Xiu said.

"Alright!" Chen Wei complied loudly, walking lively out of the box.

4-5 minutes later.

The cell phone in Tang Xiu’s pocket rang. When he took it out and saw the caller ID, he suddenly frowned, since the one calling was Chen Wei.

“Aren’t you in the restroom? Don’t tell me you’ve forgot your aunt’s towel. I’m telling you, I’m a gentleman, and I never strolled into the women’s restroom!” Tang Xiu couldn’t help teasing her.

“T-Tang... Xiu, I seem to be in trouble! Come here quickly and help me.” From her voice, Chen Wei was somewhat panicked.

Tang Xiu’s face turned cold and asked with a deep tone, “What happened? Where are you?”

“I’m in the corridor outside the restroom. I... I just accidentally hit the bonsai porch in the hallway and it hit someone else. And he wants me to pay compensation.” Chen Wei said.

“Wait for me there.” Tang Xiu said.

After he hung up the phone, Tang Xiu quickly went out of the box and asked the attendant outside about the restroom location as he quickly headed toward the corridor on the left.

“You must pay the damages. My clothes are worth 58 thousand, 26 thousand for my shoes, for a total of 84 thousand yuan. You must pay my medical expenses also, because my leg hurts because of you. I’ll give you a small account with the interest of 16 thousand. So you must pay me 100 thousand yuan. If you can’t pay it, it won’t be as simple as a slap to your face.” An arrogant voice reverberated in the hallway.

“Can I wait for my friend first? He’s coming here!” It was Chen Wei’s voice.

“Waiting for someone, eh? I tell you, I don’t give a damn even if an Emperor comes, you still must compensate me. Not a dime less, otherwise I won’t end things here. Fuck, it’s so fucking bad luck.” The man’s voice and tone was even more arrogant.

Tang Xiu was just only ten meters away from them. He could clearly see the man’s appearance and didn’t expect the world to be so small that he could bump into the guy he had given a lesson before.

“What a big tone eh! Just give it a try. I wanna see what you’ll do if she doesn’t want to pay you,” Tang Xiu spoke whilst approaching.

Anger was written on Hu Wanjun’s face. When he turned around

and saw Tang Xiu, his pupils suddenly shrunk, as fear could be seen in his eyes. He heard Zhang Deqin and Zhang Yongjin's plan before and he even had the intention to join them. However, the Zhang Family had fallen now, even the sibling's whereabouts was unknown. He also suspected that Tang Xiu was related with that matter.

“Why are you here?”

Sneering, Tang Xiu said, “Why can't I? She's my friend and I just heard that someone is looking to trouble her.”

Hu Wanjun was someone who relied on his family background. Even though he knew that Tang Xiu was a powerful martial artist, he didn't want to lose face, saying, “What's wrong with what I said? It's her who's in the wrong to begin with, not me. She's the who bumped into the porch and injured me. It's perfectly justified if I want her to pay damages.”

“How much do you want for the compensation?” Tang Xiu said indifferently

Hu Wanjun stared at Chen Wei as he proudly said, “100 thousand.”

Tang Xiu took his bank card and handed it to him, saying, “There's 1 million in this card. Ten times the compensation. Are you satisfied?”

Hu Wanjun blankly stared for a moment. He thought that Tang Xiu was afraid of him. A bit of a smiling expression was revealed on his face as he said with a nod, “Well, consider this matter finished.”

“You are satisfied, aren’t you? But I’m not. If I’m not wrong, the mark on my friend’s face should be from your slap, shouldn’t it? Her body is very precious and expensive. Whoever moves even a strand of her hair, I won’t let them go, let alone slapping her. So, you gotta pay the medical expenses for her, am I right?”

The smile on Hu Wanjun’s face coagulated. He looked at Tang Xiu with disbelief and shifted his vision toward the bank card in his hand. He suddenly sobered up and bellowed, “You want to kill me?”

“Hmph, if I wanted to kill you, your corpse would long be floating in the Pacific Ocean already. I’m giving you a chance to pay my friend’s medical expenses and end this matter. Else I will never let you go!” Tang Xiu sneered.

Hu Wanjun’s face flickered. He looked to the box at the distance, took a deep breath and asked, “How much do you want?”

“11 million,” Tang Xiu said lightly.

"Hiss..." Hu Wanjun sucked cold air, whereas disbelief was written on Chen Wei’s face.

“An hour. If you don’t send me the money within this time window to my dining box, I will consider your Hu Family to be just like the Zhang Family. You will forever disappear from Star City and even the world. Do remember, this is a threat.” Tang Xiu said.

After having said that, he grabbed Chen Wei’s wrist and walked toward the box.

As dumbstruck as she was, Chen Wei could only let herself be pulled by Tang Xiu. Had it been before, she’d probably have shaken off Tang Xiu’s hand, but now, warmth filled her heart even though there was an intense sense of crisis also mixed within.

Having gone back to their box, Chen Wei asked with a somewhat pale complexion, “Tang Xiu, do you think they will pay the compensation? You just gave him 1 million! That’s 1 million!”

“There’s no way he’ll give it back. Of course, I also don’t want him to give it back either.”

Chen Wei swallowed her own saliva and no longer spoke.

At the hallway.

Hu Wanjun held the 1 million bank card in his hand and suddenly felt that it turned into a hot potato. Originally, he was thinking to completely ignore Tang Xiu’s threat. However, what made him tremble down to his core and panic was that, Tang Xiu mentioned the Zhang Family. What did he mean by saying it? Was the

Zhangs' fall... because of him?

# Chapter 215: Paying Compensation

---

“Impossible! That’s absolutely impossible! For decades the Zhangs have managed to stay in Star City and are deep rooted here. How could it be shaken by one young man?”

Hu Wanjun returned to the box he just looked at with a distraught appearance. After entering it, he returned back to his seat with a dazed look and didn’t even glance at the people on the table.

Hu Xinmin frowned as he looked at his son’s dull face with displeasure. He was entertaining the shareholders of his company and his son—who was the first heir to the family, unexpectedly showed such lack of manners. This was the same as shaming him!

“Wanjun! What happened to you?”

Upon hearing his father’s voice, Hu Wanjun suddenly quivered. He squeezed out a smile and said, “I... I-I seem to have made a big trouble!”

“What trouble? Tell me!” Hu Xinmin asked with a deep tone.

Hu Wanjun told everything that happened outside and finally said, “Dad, that surnamed Tang kid said I must pay 11 million yuan of compensation if our Hu Family doesn’t want to suffer the same fate as the Zhangs and disappear from Star City or even the world!”

"WHAT?"

Hu Xinmin's face instantly turned unsightly. The shareholders present were also looking at each other in dismay, aghast.

"Does this Tang Xiu young man has any grudges with the Zhangs?" a middle-aged man asked.

"Yes, Tang Xiu has once hit Zhang Deqin and Zhang Yongjin. So Zhang Deqin took revenge on him, asking her fiancée to lead some people to strike Tang Xiu. Her fiancée was an instructor in Rising Dragon Martial School back then. But not only did they fail to clean him up, Tang Xiu even tidied them up instead. He even sent them back to their school hall and humiliated the Rising Dragon Martial School as well. In the end, the Schoolmaster compensated him with 100 million yuan, only then the matter ended. However, later on, Zhang Deqin still wanted revenge, so she hired three assassins from abroad. But the result was that not only they failed to kill him, they even died outside South Gate Town instead." Hu Wanjun said.

At present, seven or eight major shareholders of the Hu Group turned aghast and horrified. They also heard about the murder case outside South Gate Town, but they never imagined that the meat of the matter turned out to be like this!

Hu Xinmin's face now also turned extremely ugly as his body shivered. After taking a deep breath, he said with a deep tone, "Where's Tang Xiu now?"



“He seems to be in a box on this floor.” Hu Wanjun answered.

“Take me to see him.” Hu Xinmin said with sunk tone.

"Dad..." Hu Wanjun quickly cried.

With a sunk tone, Hu Xinmin shouted, “GO!”

Hu Wanjun quickly lowered his head and then took the lead out of the box.

In the hallway, Hu Xinmin rushed and blocked Hu Wanjun. He fiercely slapped his face and snapped with a stern voice, “Tell me, what grudge do you have with that surnamed Tang kid?”

Hu Wanjun covered his face on pain and said, “We had some conflicts before. But those matters are already over. I wasn’t involved in the conflict between him and the Zhang siblings.”

Hu Xinmin heaved a deep breath. He took out a checkbook and wrote 21 million yuan on it and ordered Hu Wanjun to ask Tang Xiu’s box number and rushed there. Although he was quite reluctant to part with 21 million yuan, however, he had no other choice. He saw the Zhang Family’s fate, and Tang Xiu must also be one of many behind the incident. Even if he didn’t want to, he also didn’t want his Hu Family to end up collapsing just like the Zhangs.

In his heart, the ones he most hated were not those masterminds, but the Zhang Family, especially Zhang Fengxian. The Hu Family amassed two billion yuan and gave it to Zhang Fengxian as to join in the project's preparation and share the cake. They had even signed a contract in private.

In the end, not only did the chicken fly the coop and the eggs break, they even suffered a loss of two billion yuan.

Not only that! Even the members of the Zhang Family disappeared collectively. He could only swallow his own suffering without being able to speak it out. Therefore, he didn't want to make the slightest mistake now. Even if Tang Xiu was just merely related with the Long Family.

Inside a spacious box.

Chen Wei savored the fragrant meal absentmindedly. She wasn't even tasting its flavor as her eyes couldn't help but always look at the box's door.

Finally, she put down the chopsticks in her hand, turned to Tang Xiu and asked, "Tell me, will they come here?"

"They will!" Tang Xiu said calmly.

"How can you be so sure?" Chen Wei asked.

"Because they're afraid of me!" Tang Xiu replied indifferently.

Tang Xiu's reply amused Chen Wei. Her disturbed mood gradually disappeared. She shook her head and said, "I really can't figure you out! Han Qingwu told me that you're just an ordinary student. Except your good achievements in school, she said that there's nothing else special. But now, I beg to differ. The things you did yesterday and today are kinda giving me a feeling that you're very mysterious."

Tang Xiu involuntarily laughed, "Hahaha, You're not Conan, you shouldn't be overly suspicious like that! Just take it easy and eat. I believe we'll get an answer soon."

Chen Wei nodded and grabbed the chopsticks again. The moment she was about to continue eating, the box's door was knocked as the attendant outside came inside and said, "Hello, Mr. Tang. Hu Xinmin—the owner of the Hu Group and his son, they are outside. Do you want to receive them?"

"Let them come in!" Tang Xiu said.

"Understood!" The attendant turned around and left the box.

Shortly after, Hu Xinmin took Hu Wanjun into the box. His eyes glanced at Chen Wei for a moment before landing on Tang Xiu. He quickly walked a few steps before Tang Xiu and said while smiling, "I have heard much about the distinguished name of Mr. Tang, I finally can see you today. Truly, you're a promising young man! I'm Hu Xinmin, the Head of the Hu Family."

Looking at his stretched out hand, Tang Xiu ignored it as he said with a dull tone, “I know why you came. Leave the compensation and get out.”

Hu Xinmin’s complexion was stiff as he took back his hand with an awkward expression. He pulled a check out of his pocket and put it on the table in front of Tang Xiu and said with a wry smile, “Mr. Tang, this son of mine is naïve and insensible, he offended you and your friend thoughtlessly. I hope you accept my apology. Here’s a 21 million check and your bankcard, 22 million yuan altogether. Please consider the money as the apology of our Hu Family, I hope it’s not lacking.”

Tang Xiu nodded and said with a dead-pan expression, “I know your Hu Family signed an agreement with the Zhangs and you suffered quite a loss. But I politely advise you to pay more attention in making friends as well as involving yourselves in schemes. It’s the same with your son. You need to teach him well and not let him use his family background to commit evil deeds. Oftentimes one’s entire family is implicated only because of a trivial matter, just like what happened with the Zhang Family siblings. Alright, since I’ve said everything, you can go!”

Hu Xinmin’s pupils shrunk. Dreadful raging waves surged inside his heart upon hearing Tang Xiu’s words. Before, he wasn’t sure Tang Xiu was the main mastermind behind the scheme against the Zhang Family. But to think that he knew the clandestine agreement signed by the Hus and the Zhangs; then, perhaps, the clansmen of the Zhangs had died and been destroyed by his hands.

“Yes. I understand!” Hu Xinmin replied with an obsequious

smile.

Immediately after, he fiercely glared at Hu Wanjun as he turned around and left the box.

At this moment, Chen Wei was dumbstruck. Not even in her wildest dreams had she ever imagined that Tang Xiu's words would come true. Not only did the other party paid the compensation, they even gave several folds more compared to the amount Tang Xiu had given before.

When there were only the both of them inside the box, Chen Wei quickly grabbed the check and carefully read it. Then, she said with a flabbergasted look, "This Hu Family truly paid?! And it was the Head of the family himself?! Didn't you tell them you wanted only 11 million in compensation? Why did they pay you 22 million?"

"That means that Hu Xinmin is a sensible and thoughtful person. About this matter, gimme your bankcard, I'll give you two million yuan as your medical expenses. I'll take the rest." With a pale smile, Tang Xiu said.

Chen Wei stared blankly for a moment. Then, she shook her head and said, "No no no. I can't take it! They definitely didn't want to give the compensation to me, it's all because of you."

"Well, I take back my words." Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“What?” Chen Wei was puzzled.

“That you have a backward IQ?!” Tang Xiu said

Chen Wei froze. She finally couldn't help smiling as she cursed, “Damn you! You even dare to tease me! Anyways, who are you really? Why would such a big respected family's Head come apologize to you personally? To think that he even apologized with such fearful expression? And, the Zhang Family you mentioned, were they very powerful?”

Tang Xiu said with a pale smile, “I'm just me, an ordinary high school graduate, no more no less. As for why they came to apologize, that was because they were repenting for their wrongdoings. It's the truth, honest! About the Zhang Family, I don't want you to ask about it again, as well as forget everything I've said today.”

Chen Wei cast him a sidelong glance and said with dissatisfaction, “Hmph, virtue and morality wise eh?! If you don't want to say it, then so be it. This Miss doesn't want to know it either.”

“Knock, knock...”

The door was knocked.

Tang Xiu looked and immediately saw Long Zhengyu leaning on the door, beaming a smile with his arms folded. Tang Xiu smiled

back as he waved at him and asked, “How did you know that I was having a meal here?”

Long Zhengyu chuckled, “How could I not know? You made quite a ruckus.”

“Cut the crap, just say it!” Tang Xiu snapped.

Long Zhengyu laughed, “Hahaha, I just happened to bump into Hu Xinmin. His face is so black! He looks like he bathed in black charcoal. I greeted him back then, only then did I know that his son Hu Wanjun offended you, saying he came to pay you compensation!”

Tang Xiu smiled indifferently and said, “Since God can forgive sinners, why can’t we do the same? This Hu Xinmin is also a flexible person and knows how to adapt to the situation. That’s why the matter ended like this. Anyways, have you had lunch? If not, care to join us?”

Long Zhengyu was a bit curious as his eyes fell on Chen Wei and asked, “This is...”

“Ah, she’s just a passerby, Stranger A. Wait until tomorrow and you won’t see her again in your entire life. Don’t ask what and how.”

“Hmph, you’re the Stranger A!”

## Chapter 216: Sorted Out

---

Chen Wei whispered resentfully. She stood up to give Long Zhengyu a handshake and said with a smile, “Hello handsome. I’m Chen Wei. You can call me Weiwei.”

“Hi too, Weiwei!”

Long Zhengyu and Chen Wei shook hands. However, his expression slightly flickered upon feeling that Chen Wei was using her small finger to scratch his palm.

Tang Xiu was keenly aware of Long Zhengyu’s expression, he couldn’t help but be amused and stared at Chen Wei as he said, “I tell you, you can never tease him! He has women all over Star City, they can’t fit inside this box. Also, you’d better restrain yourself. And don’t mess around chasing men everywhere. You gotta be careful not to catch an STD later.”

“Tang Xiu, how can you undermine me like this? No matter what you say, we are friends that have shared trials and tribulations together, haven’t we?” Chen Wei resentfully retorted.

“Uh, have we shared any hardships at all? When was that?” Tang Xiu said and surprised.

“Last night in the pub?! Also in the hotel?!” Chen Wei spoke forcefully with conviction.



Rolling his eyes, Tang Xiu snapped, “You call that sharing trials and tribulations? Bah! You old woman, your preposterous argument is truly crooked. Hey, Zhengyu, why on earth are you stunned for? If you don’t want to eat with us and already had your lunch, just go take care of your own business!”

Long Zhengyu actually had his lunch already, and didn’t plan to stay for a meal either. However, Chen Wei’s nature and her relationship with Tang Xiu sparked his curiosity. Immediately, he pulled a chair and said with a smile after he sat down, “Did the both of you book a room in the hotel last night? Damn, you truly have good fortune Miss Weiwei. But you’re also very unlucky!”

“Huh?” Chen Wei was puzzled and asked, “What do you mean?”

Long Zhengyu chuckled, “I’m saying that you have good fortune since I’ve never heard that Tang Xiu would prostrate himself under a woman’s skirt. As for bad luck, you have so many love rivals. Moreover, each and every one of them is very extraordinary and outstanding. Some of them can even make my heart palpitate unceasingly.”

“Ehh? He also has a woman he likes?” Chen Wei was flabbergasted, and said, “What joke is this? Aside from acting cool and his venomous vile tongue, how can any woman fall for him?”

“Speaking about that, it’s also a coincidence. There’s a very beautiful woman two boxes away from this room who’s wishing to devote her life to him.” Long Zhengyu chuckled.

“Where?” Chen Wei quickly asked.

“To the left side.” Long Zhengyu answered.

Chen Wei got off her chair and quickly ran outside.

Upon seeing this, Tang Xiu immediately shouted, “Hey, where are you going? Don’t mess around and create trouble. Come back and eat your meal quickly!”

However, Chen Wei simply ignored him. After leaving, she then ran to the left corridor.

Tang Xiu turned his head as he glared at Long Zhengyu and said, “What rubbish did you injected in her eh? That woman is a rare marvel. She just came back from abroad and arrived in Star City last night. Originally, she was to stay with her friend, but since her friend had something important to take care of, she entrusted her to me, wanting me to look after her for two days.”

“Ugh.” Long Zhengyu spoke with a weird tone, “Which friend of yours is she? To think that she even can make you act so meticulous like this?”

Tang Xiu reluctantly replied, “Ah, forget it. I’ll tell you the truth! She’s my third year’s teacher in charge.”

“Ah, so that’s how it is!”

Long Zhengyu said with a smile, “You have an indifferent nature, if not cold and detached that is. Wanting to be your friend truly is difficult as reaching the sky, so I was really curious about someone who has the ability to even make you regard them as a friend! That reminds me, however. I heard that your teacher-in-charge is a very beautiful woman, yes?”

“Damn, you don’t have anything else except beautiful women in your mind, do you?” Tang Xiu said.

Intentionally showing a loving look, Long Zhengyu said with a tender and soft voice, “I still have you in my eyes!”

“Fuck you!” Tang Xiu shivered down his spine and snapped with fright.

Inside another box.

Kang Xia was having lunch, accompanying several top brasses from the city authority, whereas Jack was throwing some Chinese jokes charmingly, teasing the several city leaders to burst into laughter. The wine in their glasses also reduced in a fast rate.

“I’m sorry Miss, you can’t go in.” An attendant’s voice was heard.

Even when she was speaking, Chen Wei had already squeezed into the box. When her eyes looked at the people on the wine table, her sight finally landed on Kang Xia’s face, as she immediately

stared blankly afterward.

Beautiful! She's really gorgeous!

She had seen numerous beauties, but not even one of them could be compared with this woman! Even her good sister—Han Qingwu was slightly worse.

However, why would this super beauty look somewhat familiar?

Chen Wei shook her head. She didn't believe that Kang Xia would know Tang Xiu. After all, Tang Xiu, in front of Kang Xia, was just like a toad wanting to have a go at a swan.

However, she also wanted to confirm whether Long Zhengyu's words were true or not. So she asked, "Hello beautiful woman, might I ask whether you know Tang Xiu?"

On the other hand, upon seeing that a stranger suddenly broke into the box all of a sudden, Kang Xia herself was quite displeased and was about to question Chen Mei. However, upon hearing the inquiry from her out of the blue, she immediately stood up and waved to the attendant and asked back, "I do know him, and you are?"

"Are you sure you know him?" Chen Wei was surprised and then continued, "This Tang Xiu I'm speaking about is very young, less than 20, and just attended the CET!"

“The person you said and the one I know of, should be the same person,” Kang Xia said with an ascertaining tone.

Astonished, Chen Wei said, “That means what Long Zhengyu said is true? Do you like Tang Xiu and is one of his pursuers?”

Kang Xia looked at Chen Wei with a strange expression. A few seconds silence later, she probed, “Did Tang Xiu listen Long Zhengyu’s words and admit it?”

“Hmph, knowing that Tang Xiu chap who’s always reluctant to admit anything, how can he confirm it?” Chen Wei said.

Kang Xia was secretly relieved. A smile crept up on her face. She then turned around, looking at the few city leaders on the table, and then said with a smile, “Gentlemen, I have a small private matter I have to deal with, so I’ll have to leave you to your drink fist. Jack, please entertain these leaders well. If they don’t enjoy their drinks to the full, I won’t forgive you!”

“Understood, Madam!” Jack laughed.

Kang Xia let out a faint smile and left the box along with Chen Wei. After they were at the corridor outside, she asked, “Is Tang Xiu also here?”

“Yup! He’s the one who brought me here!” Chen Wei nodded.

“Alright. I haven’t introduced myself. I’m Kang Xia, the General

Manager of Magnificent Tang Corporation. By the way, might I trouble you to take me to him?” Kang Xia said with a smile.

“Huh?” Chen Wei curiously replied, “Why do I feel like I have heard your name somewhere?”

“Well, my name sounds familiar to a lot of people since it’s very common, to begin with.” Kang Xia said with a smile.

Chen Wei shook her head to suppress the doubt in her eyes before she replied, “Let’s go! I’ll take you to see him. Long Zhengyu said there’s a lot of beautiful women who like Tang Xiu and there’s one of them in the box here. I didn’t believe him at first. But after coming here, what he said is true. You’re the most beautiful woman I have ever seen.”

“Thanks for the compliment!” Kang Xia said with a faint smile.

After they arrived at the box where Tang Xiu was in, Kang Xia saw that Tang Xiu was chatting with Long Zhengyu as she greeted with a smile, “Boss, I’m disturbing your lunch, am I?”

“I just heard from Zhengyu that you’re drinking with several city leaders in the next box. How is it? You drank a lot?” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“I still have some work in the afternoon so I only drank a little. Besides, it’s Jack who’s accompanying them.” Kang Xia said with a smile.

Nodding, Tang Xiu said, “Gimme a few years and I guarantee that you won’t have to entertain people in drinking parties to secure business deals for our company. It will be others who will beg to do that for us. In addition, if someone dares to disrespect you, you don’t need to care about their faces and you can directly slap them. Anyone who dares to backstab us, you tell me and I’ll fix them up.”

“Having a Boss like you is so rewarding,” Kang Xia said with a smile.

“Ehh? Wait, wait!”

Chen Wei walked to Kang Xia. Both of her hands stretched between Kang Xia and Tang Xiu as a look of disbelief was written all over her face, “Chief Kang, what did you just call him? Boss? You said you’re the General Manager of Magnificent Tang Corporation, then that means he’s the Big Boss of the company?”

“Yes! He’s the Big Boss of the Magnificent Tang Corporation!” Kang Xia nodded with a smile.

As shocked as she was, Chen Wei looked at the two. After a moment of hesitation, she asked, “Then... how much assets do the Magnificent Tang Corporation have?”

“It’s a business secret, so it’s inconvenient to tell you.” Kang Xia shook her head and said.

“You tell me!” Chen Wei’s sight shifted toward Tang Xiu and shouted.

Tang Xiu didn’t directly answer her question. But he looked at Kang Xia and asked, “That matter should be almost over, right? How much shares we got from it?”

“Well, it could be said so. After the finishing touch has been handled, we’ll obtain the result soon. About the amount, it should be around four billion yuan after dividing it between everyone.” Kang Xia answered.

With a satisfied look, Tang Xiu said, “Spending 200 million and earning 4 billion. It’s worth it.”

Chen Wei was flabbergasted as he watched the two. Her jaw dropped opened so wide that even a big goose egg could be stuffed into her mouth.

“You-you- Who are you exactly?” Chen Wei pointed at Tang Xiu.

“You are you, who are you?” Chen Wei didn’t waited for Tang Xiu as she cried out.

“Didn’t he just say it? He’s the Big Boss of the Magnificent Tang Corporation. I even dare say that with the well-renowned Kang Xia working for him, the total assets of the company will be rising from a hundredfold to a thousand-fold in the future. Maybe they’ll even surpass Bill Gate.” Long Zhengyu answered her with a sour



tone.

Chen Wei's eyes blinked. Her body suddenly shook as she almost fell to the floor. As shocked as she was, she looked at Kang Xia and involuntarily shouted, "Oh my God! I remember now! You're Kang Xia, the business genius from the Wall Street who shook the entire world, aren't you?"

Kang Xia said with a smile, "I dare not accept that my name has shaken the world, though. But I indeed came from Wall Street."

Chen Wei staggered, before she sat down on her original seat. She covered her chest with her hands and was speechless for a long period of time.

It was a great shock! She was shocked down to the core way too much today!

The shock this time was not because of Kang Xia at all, but it was because of Tang Xiu! Even in her dream she had never expected that the fellow who accompanied her this time, who ridiculed her with his sarcasm, turned out to have such a terrifying identity.

Who was Kang Xia? She was the most brilliant genius in the business world. An outstanding talent that numerous super consortiums wanted to hire. However, she actually returned back to her homeland and unexpectedly became Tang Xiu's subordinate.

That's right! Long Zhengyu had just said before that Kang Xia

was interested in Tang Xiu? Was it true as well?

Chen Wei's reaction was somewhat ridiculous for Tang Xiu. However, he didn't say anything more due to the presence of Kang Xia and Long Zhengyu. Instead, he spoke to Kang Xia, "Anyways, if you don't have to entertain them anymore and have nothing left to do, you should go back and rest earlier!"

"I still have to return since it's not over yet. I left Jack as the host there to accompany them! It's not convenient for me to leave them for too long, so I'll go back there first!"

"Alright then!" Tang Xiu nodded.

# Chapter 217: Accomplishing the Task

---

The lunch was over.

After parting ways with Long Zhengyu, Tang Xiu took Chen Wei to a nearby bank to change the 20 million check and gave 2 million to Chen Wei, who was hell-bent on refusing it.

After leaving the bank, the duo stood on the heavy traffic road as Tang Xiu asked while smiling, “Lunch is done, and we also got some money, so you can stay obediently in the hotel this afternoon, can’t you? I’m afraid I have no time to stay with you since I have something to deal with.”

"Where are you going?" Chen Wei asked.

"Do something important." Tang Xiu said.

Chen Wei hesitated before she finally nodded and said, “Well, go then! I’ll just go back to the hotel myself. As for tonight... are you still gonna accompany me to dinner?”

“I can’t. But if you can keep your word to stay in the hotel obediently, I will come over at noon tomorrow. Han Qingwu will come back to Star City tomorrow noon. So I’ll say to her that I’ve done her errand and send you back to her.” Tang Xiu said.

With a somewhat complex expression, Chen Wei replied, “You’re anxious to send me to Han Qingwu, aren’t you?”

“The two of you are good sisters, so naturally, I want you two to meet earlier.” Tang Xiu said.

“If you don’t stay with me, I’ll stroll around myself.” Chen Wei said.

Tang Xiu was surprised for a moment before he forced out a smile and shook his head.

The day passed quickly.

Chen Wei was as though a dog plaster as she didn’t let Tang Xiu leave for whatever reason. Even at night, she didn’t want Tang Xiu to go back to South Gate Town. She said she was afraid that something just like last night would occur again and wanted him to accompany her to the hotel. Tang Xiu was fuming with anger and almost knocked her out.

The noon of the next day.

Tang Xiu received a call from Han Qingwu when Chen Wei was wolfing down snacks and drinks as much as she wanted in the streets. After Han Qingwu arrived, Tang Xiu bluntly said, “Teacher Han, for this kind of annoying task, please don’t bother to look for me again later. Well, since I’ve done my task, I’ll go first.”

Han Qingwu quickly pulled him. With an expression of being at a loss whether she had to cry or laugh, she said, “Tang Xiu, didn’t

you just accompanied Chen Wei for two days? How can you loath and be bitter like this? Did that girl harass you? I knew her personality. She does have indecent thoughts but she isn't evil and has no courage; she even had no boyfriend up until now."

Tang Xiu rolled his eyes, "Hmph, she's simply a big crook! Were it not for me making some ruckus back then, I'm afraid she would have had a go with a pretty lass in the hotel merrily."

Han Qingwu involuntarily laughed, "Hahaha, did that girl tell you she's bisexual? Ignore her rubbish talk! Her sexual orientation is normal."

Tang Xiu blankly stared for a moment. Looking at Chen Wei who was immersing herself in gorging out her snacks, he almost had the urge to tear her mouth. This woman's inner world was true as though a seabed of needles. He truly had been fooled by her thoroughly.

"I gotta go, bye!" said Tang Xiu as he strode away.

Han Qingwu looked at his back as she shook her head with a wry smile. Then, she sat down next to Chen Wei and said with a smile, "What did you do to make him look like as if he's been tortured?"

Chen Wei looked up, watching at the direction toward Tang Xiu's back who had just left. A touch reluctance flashed from her eyes as she concealed it by raising her hand in front of her forehead and caressing her long hair to the side. After that, she pretended to look calm when she spoke, "Hey, I'm not a vixen. How can I do

things like that to him? I tell you, this student of yours is a marvel. He's simply a deity. Following him to drink and have meals even earned me some money. If it wasn't for him hitting and knocking me out, these days could be said as very great."

A strange expression was written all over Han Qingwu's face as she looked at Chen Wei. She suddenly felt a feeling as if the last two days for her were very splendid! However, her complexion flickered upon hearing that Tang Xiu hit her.

"Weiwei, did Tang Xiu hit and knock you out, for real?"

Chen Wei harrumphed and said, "Hmph, he did, and it was kinda heavy as well."

Han Qingwu asked, "Why?"

"He's just like the dog that bites Lu Dongbin, paying my good kindness with ill reward. It was very dangerous two nights ago. And out of my kindness and good intention..." Chen Wei said resentfully.

Along with her narration, Han Qingwu figured out the whole story. Despite being informed about it, she was also shocked by the story and was even unable to speak for quite a long while.

"You... you mean that Tang Xiu was the one who called the police to come to the pub, in order to make you go back to the hotel obediently and then found some people selling drugs there? And

then he also tracked the following clues up to Caesar Grand Hotel? Which then the shootout happened and a lot of people died?”

“Yes. But it was more amazing in the reality version than the movies, though. So, that Tang kid didn’t listen to my advice and was against it. Not only did he knock me out, he also went out and successfully became a hero. Fortunately, he was alright. Or else, it would have been me who had to take care of him, instead of the other way around.”

A trace of envy appeared on Han Qingwu’s face as she said, “You truly had splendid times. Had I known about it, I wouldn’t have gone to Shanghai in the first place. Ah right. You just said that you also got some money when you were out with him, what do you mean by that?”

A bright smile suddenly surfaced on Chen Wei’s face as she belched and said, “Nope, I can’t tell you this one since I gave my word to him not to tell this to anyone. But I can tell you that your student is truly awesome. Even after living in the United States for so many years and also seeing a lot of gifted people, geniuses, clever individuals and devilish talents, there’s no one who can compare to his fierceness. Just wait! In the future, he will absolutely exude a golden light all over his body, just like the dazzling deity in his war armor!”

“Pfft, hahaha...” Han Qingwu couldn’t help laughing and then said with a smile, “Weiwei, the way you’re speaking isn’t describing a great man, but it’s like you’re describing a bridegroom! Tell me honestly, you took a liking to my student, didn’t you?”

Chen Wei rubbed her belly and joked back, “I do have fallen for him. But if I marry him, then it means I have to follow him in calling you Teacher Han also!”

“Damn you...”

“Hahaha...”

After laughing merrily for a while, Han Qingwu asked, “Weiwei, you haven’t answered my question!”

Chen Wei stopped laughing and replied, “I can answer you about one topic. As for the other questions, you have to find that student of yours if you really wanna know.”

“Which one?” Han Qingwu asked with doubt.

“It’s about his awesomeness. So to speak, is the Long’s Dining Hall a very high grade restaurant in Star City?” Chen Wei said.

Han Qingwu replied seriously, “It is. If it was said as the second, no others can be said as the first.”

“Tang Xiu is a member of this Long’s Dining Hall and even a VIP there. As for the rest, figure it out yourself!”

“Tang Xiu is a member of the Long’s Dining Hall?”



Han Qingwu said with a look of disbelief, "Who are you joking to? Tang Xiu is only a student, and the situation of his family is not particularly good either. How could he get the Long's Dining Hall's membership? Weiwei, you must be joking with me."

Chen Wei raised two fingers, ascertaining it, "If I were to say a lie, may I won't marry anyone else but you in this entire life of mine."

"Hey! That's so damn indecent." Han Qingwu was amused and burst into laughter.

At Star City Airport.

After Tang Xiu bade farewell to Han Qingwu and Chen Wei, he took a cab and rushed here. Yesterday he had made an appointment with someone to go to Tianjin City to buy Wintertide Fluorite and Star Fragment Stone.

Since there were still nearly two hours before the flight took off, Tang Xiu casually looked for a café, drinking coffee while killing time. However, he inadvertently found a woman who was trying to be secretive. She was wearing a sun hat, big black sunglasses, black trench coat, and was quietly slipping into the café.

"Huh?" Tang Xiu's face suddenly flickered, he found that the woman looked very alike a famous female singer.

Zhang Xinya?

After entering the café, the woman looked around and glanced over toward the vacant seat next to Tang Xiu. Since the spot was located at the corner of the café, it was relatively remote and quiet.

“Miss, can I take your order?” A staffer asked politely.

A clear voice, as though a silver bell, came out of the woman’s mouth, “One cup of Mocha, please. And thank you.”

“Please wait a bit!” The staffer answered and then turned away.

Tang Xiu looked at her. She now took off her big sunglasses gently, which then made him immediately recognize her. She was indeed the popular singer in Asia who was moving toward the international stage, Zhang Xinya.

He wasn’t a fan of hers. Although Zhang Xinya’s facial features were indeed extremely beautiful, he only glanced at her twice before he lowered his head to take out his mobile phone. Recently, he just realized that it was very convenient to browse the Internet using a mobile phone. Not only was he able to read all kinds of news, but he can also search everything he wanted to know.

Ten minutes later.

When Tang Xiu was fiddling with his mobile, the silver bell’s voice sounded again, “Sir, may I borrow your mobile phone? I

need to make a phone call.”

Tang Xiu looked up and saw that Zhang Xinya was carrying a cup of coffee as she approached and then sat down on the opposite sofa. After a moment of silence, Tang Xiu said indifferently, “If you want my cell number, I’m sorry; I can’t give it to strangers. If you really want to answer a phone call, 100 yuan per minute.”

“You...” Zhang said angrily, “I’m not interested in your cell number, I just want to borrow your mobile phone. You want to rip me off?”

“No, you’re mistaken. My mobile is my personal belonging. There are many confidential things inside that need to be kept secret and are not for others to see. If you want to borrow my mobile phone, you gotta pay for it. Do you think 100 yuan is too much?” Tang Xiu said.

“Your argument is preposterous. It’s simply crooked. Your confidential things are useless to me. Besides, do you know who I am?” Zhang Xinya was incensed.

“Should I know you?” Tang Xiu asked back.

Astonished, Zhang Xinya said, “You really don’t know me?”

Tang Xiu snapped humorlessly, “Are you going to use the phone or not? If not, then shut up.”

Zhang Xinya couldn't utter any words. Ever since she was 18 and joined the entertainment industry, it had been six years since her name became famous. With her good singing voice and extremely beautiful looks, she had attracted a large number of fans; and she was confident that the children of several years old or the elderly in their 70s or 80s across the country, 99% of them would probably have seen her, either through the TV, Internet or even other media channels.

“Could it be that this chap just came out of the mountain region's ravine? But even if that's the case, as a man, he also ought to respond to such a very beautiful woman like me, no?”

Zhang Xinya also observed Tang Xiu just now. What made her astonished was that Tang Xiu's eyes were very clear, as though the eyes of a newborn child with no impurity in them; of which she had never seen from other men.

## Chapter 218: Closely Related

---

Zhang Xinya took a deep breath, suppressed the anger in her heart and said, “Deal. 100 yuan per minute, Now lend me your phone!”

“Take it!” Tang Xiu handed over his mobile.

Zhang Xinya took it. She got up and walked to the side and quickly dialed a number. After she whispered with the other side for a while, she then hung up the phone. Just as about to go back to her seat, she suddenly turned, recalling Tang Xiu’s words about some secrets on his phone. Then, she immediately checked the phone’s contents.

Two minutes later, just as she opened the call log, several familiar names reflected in her eyes.

Ouyang Lulu?

Chen Zhizhong?

Chu Yi?

Bai Tao?

She remembered Ouyang Lulu’s cell number and had even memorized it perfectly. When she opened the name ID and saw the

number, an incredible expression was cast on her face.

The number was... real?

Zhang Xinya turned and carefully looked at Tang Xiu over. Then, she returned back to the seat at Tang Xiu's opposite side. Swaying the mobile phone in her hands, she asked, "What's your name?"

"Shouldn't you introduce yourself in a polite manner when you're asking someone else's name?" Tang Xiu said indifferently.

Zhang Xinya paused. She forced out a smile and said, "You're really a freak, you know that? Alright, I'll introduce myself. I'm Zhang Xinya, a singer star. And you?"

"Tang Xiu, a student!"

"Looking at your young appearance, I know that you should be a student. But how do you know Ouyang Lulu? She's an islander of Jingmen Island. Are you from there also?" Zhang Xinya said.

"Nope, we're just friends." Tang Xiu answered.

As curious as she was, Zhang Xinya asked, "You are her friend? How haven't I heard of you from her before?"

"She might feel no need to say it since I'm not someone important to her. Well, questioning time is over, shouldn't you

give me back my phone? Also, you just used it for four minutes, that should be 400 yuan, thank you.” Tang Xiu said.

Zhang Xinya handed the phone back to Tang Xiu. After a moment of hesitation, she spoke in a low voice, “About that... can we talk about it? I’m Ouyang Lulu’s friend. So are you. So let’s just forget about the money, OK? Since we also introduced each other, it can be regarded as fate, right?”

“No, that is that, and this one is another matter! Just give me the money!” Tang Xiu shook his head and said.

“Why are you so hell-bent on money?” Zhang Xinya replied angrily.

Tang Xiu said, “You know that money is a good thing. You can buy food, drinks, clothes. In addition, for the parents, they can bring up their children. For a young man, it can be used to marry a wife in the future, raising children...”

"Stop, stop, stop!"

Being at a loss whether she had to laugh or cry, Zhang Xinya said, “Who doesn’t know the usefulness of money? But we’re both Ouyang Lulu’s friends. I also know Bai Tao and Chu Yi. That’s right, I’m an acquaintance with Chen Zhizhong also. With so many layers of closely related personal contacts between us, how about we exempt money in this? You too know that the friends of our friends are my friends too, right? Since we’re friends, always talking about money will hurt the sentiments and feelings between

us.”

Despite being incensed, Tang Xiu smiled, “Do we even have sentiments between us?”

“Ugh...” Zhang Xinya was speechless.

“Don’t try to befriend me. You owe me money and that’s that. Pay it!” Tang Xiu said.

Zhang Xinya stared angrily at Tang Xiu. Forcing out a smile, she said, “I have no money on me. I lost my wallet and all my luggage. Or else I wouldn’t be hiding here.”

“So basically, you don’t want to pay your debt?” Tang Xiu asked.

Zhang Xinya fumed with anger, “Do I look like a person who will renege on a debt?”

“Looking at your behavior, that would be very likely.” Tang Xiu said with a deadpan expression.

Zhang Xinya was so angry that she breathed heavily for awhile. After thinking deeply for a moment, she reached out her hand and said, “Gimme your phone, I must call someone.”

“You haven’t paid for the previous one, why should I lend you my phone now? You also just peeked on my phone’s information.



And I haven't settled the score with you about that!"

Zhang Xinya flared up again, "Who the hell wants the information on your phone? Just gimme quickly. If you want your money, lend me the phone."

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment and then handed his phone over again.

Zhang Xinya took it. She picked Ouyang Lulu's number and directly called it. After a few seconds, Ouyang Lulu's voice came over. Since Zhang Xinya pressed the loudspeaker, Tang Xiu could also hear it.

"Honey, do you miss me? In fact, I also miss you! Our hearts at last are linked as one, yes?"

Zhang Xinya was stunned. Tang Xiu was also helpless and rolled his eyes.

"Cough, cough..." Zhang Xinya coughed dryly a few times and probed, "Lulu, it's Zhang Xinya."

"Ah? Xinya? Y-y-you, are you... How come you're using Tang Xiu's phone to call me? You... Whoops, so fucking damn! Don't take what I just said seriously! I... I was just joking!" From the phone, Ouyang Lulu's shocked and awkward voice came out.

"Relax! We're good sisters, so I won't laugh at you! Anyways, you

really know this Tang Xiu? Judging from your words, you seem to be very close to him, no?” Zhang Xinya smiled softly and replied.

“You can say that. I know him inside out. I even know which direction his bedside is turned to... ..” Ouyang Lulu said before she abruptly stopped speaking. She realized that there are some subtle meanings that would easily be misunderstood from her words.

A strange expression was written on Zhang Xinya’s face. She glanced at Tang Xiu a few times before she said with a smile, “Since your relationship is at the ‘candidly sharing everything’ stage, he will give you face, yes? Do me a favor, would you? I just borrowed his mobile and he wants to rip me off. Help me convince him I’ll pay the debt when I meet him again later.”

As ashamed and angry as she was, Ouyang Lulu shouted, “Xinya, don’t talk nonsense, will you? My relationship with him is but a pure chaste friendship. But heck, how do you know about this anyway? Alright, where are you now?”

Zhang Xinya said, “Star City Airport, I just came here by chance.”

“And why would Tang Xiu also be at the airport?” Ouyang Lulu was surprised.

“Even if you ask me, how would I know? Just talk to him quickly, that I’ll pay him later.” Zhang Xinya said.

“Give the phone to him! I’ll speak with him.” Ouyang Lulu

chuckled.

Zhang Xinya directly handed the phone to Tang Xiu and said, “She wants to speak with you!”

Tang Xiu took it and rolled eyes with a foul mood to Zhang Xinya before he spoke, “Lulu, do pay attention to what you speak later. Don’t make others misunderstand. Also, I have heard what you just said, and since she’s really your friend, I won’t bother with it again! Alright, if there’s nothing else, I’ll hang up!”

“Wait, wait! Why are you at the Airport? Are you coming to Jingmen Island? If you are, I’ll go to the Jingmen Island’s Airport and wait for you.” Ouyang Lulu quickly called out.

“No. I’m going to Tianjin City!” Tang Xiu said.

“What are you gonna do there? Is there anything good there?” Ouyang Lulu asked doubtfully.

“Yes, there are some good things I wanna buy there!” Tang Xiu answered.

“You want me to go with you?” Ouyang Lulu hesitated and asked.

“You’re in Jingmen Island, while I’m in Star City. How come you want to go with me? Alright, take care of your business, and if you’re done with it, we’ll talk again later! Do remember to contact Kang Xia. She’s the one who handles every issue related to the

business aspect. She can make any decisions on my behalf.” Tang Xiu replied snappily.

Ouyang Lulu cried out, “Can I not see her? That woman has no good intentions toward you.”

“Huh?” Tang Xiu was quite puzzled, and asked, “Why would she have no good intention toward me?”

“This...” Ouyang Lulu hesitated. Then, she hummed and said, “Mhm, I think she has some, well, bad intentions in following you. She’s a capable woman and her beauty isn’t any worse than mine. But she’s too false, a hypocrite.”

Tang Xiu laughed involuntarily, “Hahaha, why do I feel like you’re a concubine in a harem who’s fighting for a favor?” Then, he continued, “Alright, I’ll hang up the phone, I’m about to board my flight.”

Zhang Xinya, who sat at the opposite side of Tang Xiu, could hear their conversation. She was keenly aware that her good sister had definitely fallen for Tang Xiu. It had been 7-8 years since she knew Ouyang Lulu, and it was her first time seeing Ouyang Lulu acting like a young spoiled girl when she talked with a man.

Upon seeing Tang Xiu hung up the phone, her curiosity toward Tang Xiu was piqued all of a sudden as she then asked enthusiastically, “Wow. I didn’t expect that that proud sister of mine would even curl up her tail, she surely has a soft spot for you. Tang Xiu, what are you gonna do in Tianjin City? I also have to go

there, but unfortunately, I lost my ID card and personal documents. Or else I could have gone there with you.”

“I’d rather not, though. Your identity is way too piercing for the eyes. I’m a low profile person, and I have never liked to be stared at by people wherever I go!”

Zhang Xinya was utterly speechless. She really couldn’t utter anything at all toward a rare marvel such as Tang Xiu.

“Alright, I’ve gotta board my flight, so I’ll go first!” Tang Xiu stood up and said. After having said that, he took 200 yuan out of his wallet and put it on the table, “I’ve paid the bill for your coffee too. If we meet again in this life, do remember to pay your debt.”

"Wait!"

After seeing Tang Xiu’s manner, Zhang Xinya was also quite grateful. She stood up and asked, “Can I ask you one last question?”

Tang Xiu said, "Ask!"

“I saw Chen Zhizhong’s number in your mobile phone a moment ago. Are you very close to him?” Zhang Xinya said and asked.

“We’re close!” Tang Xiu said.

Zhang Xinya hesitated and said, “Since you’re very close to him, can you do me a favor? I have an urgent matter that I need to find him for. However, I’m unable to find him, since he seems to be very busy recently. Even if I make an appointment, I’ll have to wait for many days.”

“Didn’t you say you know him? Just call him directly.”

“I did call him, and he also picked up my call. But he said that he had no time at present.” Zhang Xinya forced out a smile and said.

“Why do you want to see him?” Tang Xiu asked again.

“I know that he owns the Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical which runs the Chinese herbal medicine business. I need a very valuable medicinal herb and am hoping to buy it from him. To be frank, my father contracted a strange disease, which exactly needs that kind of herb.” Zhang Xinya said.

“What medicinal herb?” Tang Xiu asked.

“Lone Riverserpent.” Zhang Xinya said.

Tang Xiu’s face flickered, as he asked with astonishment, “This medicinal herb is the key ingredient to treat the Virtual Fire Deficiency disease. Did your father contracted this Virtual Fire Deficiency disease?”

## Chapter 219: Demon Stone

---

Astonishment was written all over Zhang Xinya's beautiful face. She didn't expect that Tang Xiu could correctly guess the type of disease her father contracted by merely knowing the medicinal herb's name she gave out.

"Is he... a Divine Doctor?" The idea appeared inside her mind, even though she quickly cast it aside.

If it was someone else who said it, she might believe he was a Divine Doctor! But when it came to Tang Xiu, she wouldn't believe it even if she was to be beaten to death. Tang Xiu was, after all, too young. Weren't the Chinese Medical doctors whom were very proficient in Chinese Traditional Medicine, all of the old age?

"It's as you say, he contracted the Virtual Fire Deficiency disease." Zhang Xinya nodded with an agonized expression.

"Lone Riverserpent is indeed a good medicinal herb to treat this disease. The effect would be even better if it's added to the Silver Bluegrass. Alright, since Ouyang Lulu has spoken for you, I might as well help you to the end." Tang Xiu said.

After having said that, he dialed Chen Zhizhong's number.

"Master, you're looking for me?" Chen Zhizhong's voice came out of the phone.

“Yes. I have some trivial things to ask you. Do you know Zhang Xinya?” Tang Xiu asked.

“I do.” Chen Zhizhong replied.

“I see. She needs a Lone Riverserpent herb. Help her to look for it, give a discount if you can. She’s Ouyang Lulu’s friend.” Tang Xiu said.

Without hesitation, Chen Zhizhong said, "Understood, I'll contact her later."

“She’s with me now, you can speak to her!” Tang Xiu said.

After having said that, he handed the phone to Zhang Xinya and said lightly, “It’s Chen Zhizhong, you talk to him.”

Zhang Xinya was pleasantly surprised. She thanked gratefully as she took the phone and said, “Hello, I’m Zhang Xinya. You’re Uncle Chen?”

“Yes, it’s me. My Master has just told me about your situation. I’ll try to find this Lone Riverserpent herb to the best of my abilities, and I’ll immediately inform you after I found it.”

“Your Master?” Zhang Xinya was dumbfounded. A confused expression filled her eyes as she subconsciously asked.



“So you actually didn’t know that the person who owns this mobile phone is my Master?! Alright. Since Master has told me to take care of this matter, you can consider it done. Anyways, since I wouldn’t have to talk to him over the phone again, I’ll hang up.”

“Alright...”

Zhang Xinya answered. Then, the muted beeping sounds came out of the phone. A shocked expression was written on her face as she looked at Tang Xiu as though she was looking at an alien.

“Master? Tang Xiu is Chen Zhizhong's Master? Heavens! How is this possible?”

Who was Chen Zhizhong? He was the Big Boss of the Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical, a powerful billionaire with ten billion worth of assets. How was it possible that he worshipped a young man in his 20s given his elated status?

Zhang Xinya swallowed a mouthful of saliva and asked with a trembling voice, “T-Tang... Tang Xiu, are you really Boss Chen’s Master?”

"Is there a problem with that?" Tang Xiu calmly asked.

“N-no problem, of course, there’s no problem... it’s just... that... I was a little surprised.” Zhang Xinya shook her head and waved her hands repeatedly and said, “Oh, right. Thanks. Thanks a lot. If it was me, calling Boss Chen would’ve been extremely difficult.”

Tang Xiu said with a pale smile, “You’re welcome, and no need to be that polite. So long as you see Ouyang Lulu later and don’t say anything bad about me in front of her, I’m content enough. Alright. Since I’ve done all I can, I’ll be boarding my flight. Farewell.”

“Wait! I’ll send you off!” Zhang Xinya quickly said.

Tang Xiu stopped her, and said straightforwardly, “No. I don’t want tomorrow’s news headline to be ‘A Big Pop Star Zhang Xinya Is On an Intimate Secret Date with A Mysterious Young Man at The Airport’. So please, just stay where you are.”

After having said that, he took his black travel bag and walked to the door toward the departure gate.

Zhang Xinya stared at Tang Xiu’s back, dazed. Her heart was as though being turned upside down; with a mix of sour, sweet, bitter, spicy, and hot feelings inside. Even in her dreams, she didn’t dare to think that she would come across such a bizarre encounter, of having met an amazing person!

Originally, it was simply a mere coincidence. She lost her luggage. Then, a trivial matter of borrowing a mobile phone happened. Following that, everything accidentally led to the completion of her purpose in visiting Star City. Not only did she meet a friend of her good sister, the other party even seemingly was a practitioner who had high attainments in Chinese Medical science.

\*\*\*

## Tianjin City!

Since its location was very close to Beijing, Tianjin City developed extremely fast. A large number of towering high-rise buildings were built along with row after row of shops with its dazzling lineup of merchandises. The transportation network was also extensive as it was accessible from all directions, with an unending flow of traffic that looked as though the full convergence body of a dragon.

The night had almost fallen when Tang Xiu arrived in Tianjin City. Just as he arrived at Tianjin City Airport, he dialed the mysterious old man's number. He then rushed toward the Antique Trading Market of Tianjin City after asking about the address.

“Desolate Origin Ancient Gate.”

The shop had a strange name and its decoration style gave off a gloomy vibe.

Carrying his travel bag, Tang Xiu entered the front door of the most remote store in this Antique Trading Market. A sense of repression floated inside as well as shrouding his mind. The big rafters, the walls, including all furniture inside were all black. The different colors he could see were only the rows of curios and antiques on the black shelves.

At present, there wasn't anyone on the first floor. Aside from two visitors who were looking at the curios and antiques here, there was no one else. Tang Xiu was secretly surprised and wondered, was this shop owner not afraid that the visitors would steal the merchandise? However, in order to find the old man he just talked with on the phone, he released his perception and immediately found him in a private room on the second floor. Aside from a white-haired old man wearing reading glasses, there were also a couple of middle-aged man and woman there. The trio was currently staring at a foot length and a half-foot height finely carved coffin on the table in front of them.

"That is..."

Tang Xiu's pupils flickered. Along with the expanding of his perception, he focused his attention on the coffin. He didn't expect that he would find a Demon Stone on Earth.

Demon Stones were necessary treasures needed by Demon cultivators from the Demon Realm. It contained a great amount of demonic force inside, for which it could enhance their cultivation bases and strength after they absorbed and refined it. It had the same usefulness as the Immortal Stones used by the Immortals in the Immortal Realm; whereas for the Immortals, they absorbed the immortal force from the Immortal Stones to enhance their strength.

"I have to obtain it!" Tang Xiu's eyes flashed.

For Tang Xiu, at present, unlike the Immortal Stones that would only bring about ordinary effects for him, Demon Stones were different. It was because of his cultivation technique—the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis was actually a cultivation technique to refine the body into that of a Demon and God’s Divine Body. In the case that he was to absorb its demonic energy, it would be a great boon for him in molding a Divine Body.

Tang Xiu took a deep breath and then walked to the second floor. He stopped at the door and knocked it.

“You are?” As the door was opened, the silver-haired old man looked at him curiously.

“Tang Xiu, from Star City.” Tang Xiu answered.

The silver-haired old man suddenly realized. However, he immediately frowned because he didn’t expect that Tang Xiu would be so young. After hesitating, he said, “You see, this old man is kind of a dotard. You’re the one who called me, right? That... ah please wait a bit! Some people came to me to sell an old object. I have to entertain them first.”

“An old object? Can I take a look at it?” Tang Xiu pretended to be surprised and said.

The silver-haired old man actually wanted to refuse it. However, recalling that Tang Xiu was here to buy his precious stones, he nodded as to avoid other difficulties later.

After entering the room, the silver-haired old man was as though he forgot Tang Xiu's presence. He quickly went back to inspecting the small coffin with the middle-aged man and woman, constantly moving back and forth.

"I can't open it! Didn't you say that this was passed down from your ancestors? Could it be that nobody among your ancestors was able to open it?" Finally, the silver-haired old man couldn't help but ask.

The middle-aged man was plainly dressed and looked simple and honest. Upon hearing the question, he immediately shook his head and said, "Originally, the elders of the family thought that opening this coffin would be... ominous, thus they put it in the family's ancestral shrine. Recently, there was a fire in our village. Dozens of houses were burnt, including our family's ancestral shrine. At first, we thought that everything had been burned to ashes, but we didn't expect that after we cleaned up the ruins, we'd found this coffin still intact. We also wanted to open it, however, no matter what means we tried, either smashing it with a hammer, burning it, nothing could damage this coffin, even a bit. This object is extremely hard. Even though I don't know how hard a diamond is, but I'm definitely sure that this coffin is harder than a diamond."

The silver-haired old man nodded and said, "Yes, this object is indeed extremely hard. I just used an electric drill and cutting machine before, but I can't destroy it. Also, this is the first time I saw this object and I can't identify the material and its quality. I'm not sure about the origin of this object, from which dynasty era. As for the valuation of this object... It's really hard for me to estimate it."

The middle-aged man and woman glanced at each other as disappointment could be seen on their faces.

They had visited more than a dozen antique stores. Neither of those shopkeepers or antique experts were able to figure out the value of the coffin. Even the highest price they were willing to offer was but only a mere 50 thousand yuan.

The middle-aged man asked, “Old man, just say your price. If we feel that it’s okay, we’ll sell this thing to you. If not, then we’ll leave.”

The silver-haired man had obviously considered the issue of the price for a long time. Upon hearing the middle-aged man’s question, he stretched his finger and said, “I’ll buy it for 100 thousand.”

Upon hearing the offer, the middle-aged man and woman’s faces were still full of disappointment. The middle-aged woman then asked again with anticipation on her face, “Can you give a higher price? We’re really in need of a lot of money, but we can’t sell it for only 100 thousand!”

For a moment, the silver-haired old man was silent. After that, he slowly said, “120 thousand yuan. This is the highest price I can offer. It’s because I’m also taking a great risk in buying this object! If you can accept it, then we’ll conclude the deal now. But if you can’t, I won’t raise my offer again.”

The middle-aged man said with a bitter expression, “I’m sorry,

we can't sell for 120 thousand yuan.”

After having said that, he wrapped the coffin with the yellowish cloth again, looking down and dejected.

"Wait!" Tang Xiu suddenly spoke.

That middle-aged man was surprised for a moment, even the middle-aged woman and the silver-haired old man were astonished.

Looking at the middle-aged man, Tang Xiu asked, “Can you tell me what happened to your family?”

“Ah, alright. A big fire broke out in our home. Not only was the house all burnt, even my father got severe burn injuries. In order to treat our old father, we, husband and wife, have borrowed a lot of money. So, if this object is sold for less than 300 thousand, we can't even pay our debt.”



## Chapter 220: Geologist

---

With a compassionate expression, Tang Xiu solemnly nodded and said, "Filial piety is the most important of all virtues. So you have done the right thing. Even though I don't know what the object is, however, this object should be a good thing since this elder offered 120 thousand yuan. Then, I'll give you 300 thousand. Sell it to me."

"Really?" The eyes of the middle-aged man and woman brightened up and looked excited.

Tang Xiu took out his mobile and calmly said, "Tell me your bank account number so I can transfer the money to you. Remember, the most important virtue one should have, is to be filial to our parents. No matter if we have to sacrifice everything or lose the family fortune, we have to make our family's aged parents have a good and comfortable life."

The middle-aged man said with a grateful expression, "Thank you, thank you."

After Tang Xiu got the middle-aged man's bank account, he thought for a moment and then transferred 320 thousand yuan. After that, he calmly spoke, "I added 20 thousand more. Use the money to buy nutritious food for your old father."

"This..." The middle-aged man and woman looked at each other.

For a moment, they almost knelt out of gratefulness. They were really in dire need of money. Not only did they need it to pay

their the debt, but also to rebuild their house and their children's tuition. Back then, they said that they had a little more than 200 thousand yuan in debts, and now they had an excess of nearly 100 thousand yuan, which can be used to rebuild their house and for their children's tuition.

This sum of 20 thousand yuan was definitely not a small amount for them.

A few minutes later, the middle-aged man and woman left. There were only the silver-haired old man and Tang Xiu inside the room. The old man narrowed his eyes, carefully looking at Tang Xiu for a long period of time. Only after awhile did he slowly spoke, "If I'm not mistaken, you bought the object for 320 thousand yuan not solely because of their filial piety."

As always, ones who came across something worth celebrating would look spirited and happy.

"Indeed. Since you didn't want to buy such a good object, naturally, I had to act. Of course, even if you eventually bought this object, I'd still think up every possible means to get it, no matter the price." Tang Xiu said with a smile.

The silver-haired man's face flickered. He propped up his glasses and asked with a deep tone, "That means you know about this object, yes?"

Tang Xiu nodded.

However, he actually didn't want to talk about this topic anymore. After all, the Demon Stone was not something that could be understood by the silver-haired old man, to begin with. After he received and wrapped it, he said, "The elder's surname is?"

The silver-haired old man said, "My family name is Hu. You can call me Professor Hu."

"Mr. Hu, I believe you already know the purpose of my visit from Star City. I want to buy the ores we spoke about. How many do you have?" Tang Xiu said.

The silver-haired old man's eyes flickered, "There are two Wintertide Fluorite and one Star Fragment Stone. All of which are at the size of an adult's fist. Since you know about these two ores, I believe you know their value."

"May I see the ores first?" Tang Xiu asked.

"Alright!"

The silver-haired old man walked downstairs followed by Tang Xiu. After passing through the corridor, they arrived at a small courtyard in the back. Much to his surprise, Tang Xiu found that the yard had no plants whatsoever. Aside from the cold, hard concrete pavement, there was only a black painted house, giving off a vibe of repression and gloominess even if one was merely standing.

“Please wait a bit!”

The silver-haired old man spoke as he entered the partial room. Without much effort, he came back with two small black suitcases.

“The ores you want are inside the suitcases. Open it.”

Tang Xiu opened the suitcases and saw the Wintertide Fluorite and Star Fragment Stone inside. After analyzing them for two minutes, he slowly nodded and said, “These indeed are the Wintertide Fluorites and Star Fragment Stone. Professor Hu, say the price!”

“For the two Wintertide Fluorites, 5 million each, and 10 million for the Star Fragment Stone. Altogether is 20 million yuan. If you want them, pay it directly. If you don’t want it, please leave.” The silver-haired old man said.

"20 million?" Tang Xiu frowned. He only had a few million now and couldn’t pay 20 million. However, he wanted these Wintertide Fluorites and Star Fragment Stone, so he dialed Kang Xia’s number, asking her to transfer 20 million to pay these three ores.

A few minutes later, the silver-haired old man had received a transfer of 20 million yuan.

“Might I ask what are you going to do with these two ores? Of course, if it’s not convenient for you to answer, you can forget it.”

Tang Xiu nodded and answered, “Forge some tools!” Then, he took the two small suitcases as well as the Demon Stone coffin which was wrapped in a yellow cloth.

The silver-haired old man quickly asked, “You have the technology to forge them? What can you forge out of them?”

While walking, Tang Xiu answered, “I do have some forging skills and techniques. As for what I want to forge, it’s not convenient to say it. By the way, since we’ve concluded our deal, I’ll go back now. If you’re able to get these ores in the future, please remember to contact me. I’ll take as much as you have.”

The silver-haired old man didn’t speak for a few seconds before he slowly spoke, “Although I only have these many, I know someone who has several Wintertide Fluorites and Star Fragment Stones. It’s just, I don’t know if he wants to sell it or not!”

“Someone else also has them? Who is it?” Tang Xiu stopped walking and asked in astonishment.

“He’s my best friend, Le Baiyi. He’s a geologist in Shanghai University’s Department of Archeology. I’d be able to help if you want to find him, he’s also in Tianjin City right now.” He said.

Tang Xiu said with a smile, “Professor Hu, have you had dinner yet? How about we dine together?”

A surprised glint flashed from the silver-haired old man’s eyes.

He nodded and said, “Well, let’s consider it as me giving you a welcoming dinner as well. So we can also meet with my old friend.”

The night in Tianjin city was as though within the blue dome of heaven with falling stars. It was filled with bright colorful lights which illuminated everything along with flashing neon lights, leading to a flowing river of lights.

Lotus Blossom House.

This name was famous among the upscale restaurants in Tianjin City and was considered as the best, either for its cuisines or the environment. It was a three-storied restaurant. The first floor was an open hall without tables and chairs with a variety of inlay mosaic paintings and calligraphies on the surrounding walls. Each and every painting had its own title and autograph, whereas the painting patterns were all related with lotus flowers.

Tang Xiu was following the silver-haired old man—Professor Hu to Lotus Blossom House. After arriving, only then did he knew that dining in this place turned out to have a very demanding requirement, for one had to have left behind at least one painting in the hall on the first floor. As for Professor Hu himself, he also had left one painting in the hall.

Tang Xiu used his perception to look around and found that there were a total of more than 200 paintings, which meant that this place only had a little more than 200 patrons. However, one could bring their friends to dine here.

“This custom is truly rare and wonderful!” Following behind Professor Hu, Tang Xiu walked upstairs and exclaimed.

Professor Hu said indifferently, “Some people do have this kind of hobby. As for how they manage and run it, it’s naturally their own business to take care of. There are a total of 24 boxes on the second and third floors. In the case that all of them are fully occupied with guests on the same day, it’s impossible for others to dine here. Needless to say, this method is truly effective as this place is practically fully occupied almost every day.”

“It’s the Hunger Marketing tactic!”

Tang Xiu nodded slowly. It reminded him of the marketing model for Apple’s iPhone. This model specially focused on the psychological aspect of the consumers in regards to the rarity of consumer goods which would result in its value rising. So to speak, as long as the food and wine were that of good quality, the business would be guaranteed to flourish.

“Professor Hu, since Lotus Blossom House is running this type of business concept, wouldn’t they only get a few profits?”

“No. It’s the contrary. Their profit is very big.” Professor Hu shook his head and answered.

Tang Xiu was surprised, "Why is that?"

“The rarer the goods are, the more expensive they become. And in this case, the emphasis is on the ‘expensive’ word.” Professor Hu said.

Tang Xiu understood it in a flash. Even if there were only 24 boxes and a total of fully occupied tables were just 24; however, if the price was extremely expensive, then the profit margin was quite big.

Numerous boxes here were separated by partitions and divided into dining rooms and small drawing rooms. Since Professor Hu’s old friend hadn’t yet arrived, both of them sat on the couch in the small drawing room as the waiter assigned to them handed over the menu for the tea, beverages, and desserts.

Shortly after, a pot of Scarlet Oolong Tea and four desserts had been placed on the tea table in front of them.

“It’s really expensive, truly. 2800 yuan for a pot of Scarlet Oolong Tea and 1200 yuan for four desserts. Even before the main course, we have already spent 4000 yuan. It seems the owner of this restaurant truly has applied the essence of ‘the rarer the goods the more expensive the value’ without restraint. All in all, the requirement to dine here is truly high since people also have to understand about paintings, but they also have to be wealthy and respectable.” Tang Xiu couldn’t help but sigh.

“You yourself are still very young, but you can come up with 20 million to buy a few stones. I believe your identity and background is also unusual, yes?” Professor Hu said with a pale smile.



Tang Xiu couldn't help but reply in contrast, "I'm only a student who just attended the CET."

"Huh?" Professor Hu stared blankly for a moment as he said with astonishment, "You're still studying?"

"Who's still studying?"

A waiter opened the box's door as a half-bald old man dressed in a Chinese tunic came in from the outside. The most eye-catching was his eyes, which were full of spirit and extremely bright. Following behind him was a graceful, fairy-like girl. Despite being used to see beautiful women, Tang Xiu himself was somewhat moved upon seeing her.

"Old Le, you're late." Professor Hu stood up and said with a smile.

Le Baiyi forced out a smile and said, "This Tianjin City of yours is way too cramped. It's almost catching up with Shanghai."

Professor Hu involuntarily laughed. He then spotted the girl as he said with a pale smile, "Ah, it's the famed first beauty in the capital, Mu Wanying! I heard that a few days ago you painted the 'Playing White Crane and Lotus' painting, yes? The news about it quite resounded in the Lotus Blossom House!"

"You're overpraising me, Professor Hu." Mu Wanying humbly

replied.

Professor Hu faintly smiled. While pointing at Tang Xiu, he spoke to Le Baiyi, “Old Le, the person who wants to see you today is him.”

“How do you do Professor Le, I’m Tang Xiu.” Tang Xiu said.

“You want to see me?” Le Baiyi was puzzled.

“Yes, Professor Le. I heard from Professor Hu that you have several precious ores. Might I ask whether you’re willing to sell them?” Tang Xiu said.

Le Baiyi looked at Tang Xiu with astonishment. He then shifted his vision with a look of inquiry toward Professor Hu.

Professor Hu said, “I’ve sold the two Wintertide Fluorites as well as my Star Fragment Stone to this young man. However, his appetite is quite the big one.”

Le Baiyi understood in a flash. His expression turned more apathetic as he looked at Tang Xiu and said, “I understand your intentions, but those several stones of mine are not for sell.”

“It’s a pity!”

Tang Xiu secretly sighed inside and nodded silently. As the

common saying says, a noble person doesn't rob others' favorite things.

He was already content to buy two Wintertide Fluorites and one Star Fragment Stone from Professor Hu. If he could buy more, it would naturally be a good thing. But since the other party didn't want to sell it, he also didn't want to force him.

## Chapter 221: Disappointment

---

A surprised glint flashed from Mu Wanying's eyes. She knew that this professor had a few precious ores he got from an ancient tomb many years ago. Those objects were regarded as his treasured collection.

Thus, she was very curious. Tang Xiu was very young, why would he want to buy those few precious ores?

“Alright, let's have dinner!”

Professor Hu himself didn't care whether Le Baiyi was willing to sell the ores or not. His purpose was simple-clarify Tang Xiu's identity, and meet his old friend while convenient.

After they sat, Le Baiyi asked with a seemingly inadvertent manner, “Anyways, your name is Tang Xiu, isn't it? You too know that the values of the Wintertide Fluorite and the Star Fragment Stone are extremely high. Might you tell me for what purpose you're buying them?”

“To forge some tools.” Tang Xiu said calmly.

For a moment, Le Baiyi stared blankly. Following that, he laughed involuntarily, “Hahaha, are you kidding me?” Then, he immediately continued, “For the Wintertide Fluorite I can believe that, since it's structure is easy to melt and cut. But the Star Fragment Stone has a degree of hardness that can be compared to diamond! This joke's not funny at all.”

Tang Xiu didn't explain. Others might be unable to forge tools from the Star Fragment Stone, but he can easily melt it. Would ordinary people even be able to understand his refining technique to begin with?

Professor Hu's curiosity was sparked once again. After hesitating for a moment, he asked, "Tang Xiu, you said you want to forge tools. Can you tell me about the forging methods? Also, what kind of object are you going to forge from it?"

Tang Xiu said lightly, "It's just some small objects and not worth mentioning, to be honest. However, as for the forging method, you won't be able to understand it even if I say it."

"... .."

Professor Hu and Le Baiyi looked at each other and paused before they secretly shook their heads.

Extremely arrogant!

Tang Xiu was way too arrogant in their minds. What he said incensed them. Even Mu Wanying also felt that Tang Xiu was arrogant and couldn't help but have feel some contempt at him.

Looking at Mu Wanying, Professor Mu asked, "I heard that you just graduated from Beijing University and are preparing to take your Master's Degree in Shanghai Uni."

“I did. I was majoring in Law, but I don’t like it. I love travelling as well as archeology so I’m preparing to follow Teacher to the Shanghai University and take Archeology.”

Archeology?

Tang Xiu’s brows raised as a surprised expression glinted from his eyes.

He just finished his CET and filled his application form to enroll there. He also chose Archeology. The reason being, he mainly wanted to find precious ores, as it would be helpful for his cultivation.

Professor Hu sighed, “Archeology is indeed the gate to the greater knowledge. It’s necessary for us to explore the traces of five millenniums of culture and civilization left behind in China, excavating the historical data that has yet to be recorded in intellectual literature. It has a great influence and will be very helpful for the future generation. This Old Le is a Geology Professor as well as the Vice President of the Archeologist Association, you really can learn a lot from him.”

Mu Wanying gently nodded and replied, “Teacher is indeed very knowledgeable. He has taught me a lot of things and I also benefited greatly even though I learned from him for just a few days.”

"Knock, knock..."

The box's door was knocked as the waiter entered and smiled, "Lady and Sirs, our Lotus Blossom House is welcoming a VIP today. He has successfully passed the test in painting skills and is using his right according to our old custom. He wishes to come to this box and have a toast here."

"Ah, the Lotus Blossom House has been very lively in the last few days! In just 10 days, four to five people have succeeded in becoming VIPs through the painting test. Who's the person who passed today?" Professor Hu spoke with astonishment.

"Zhu Xiang!" The waiter said with a smile.

Professor Hu's brows pricked and said, "Ah, it turns out to be that arrogant prick. A rampant youth and someone who thinks he's unrivalled in the world. I was originally too lazy to see him. But since it's the custom of your Lotus Blossom House, then let him come!"

Le Baiyi was surprised and asked, "Old Hu, you have such a bad evaluation of him? Who's that kid and what's his background?"

Professor Hu shook his head as he sighed, "Aii, he's indeed a genius in painting and calligraphy. But his family spoils him too much, turning him into a young man without a hint of modesty; people would only be able to see his arrogance and rudeness. You heard about the Shanghai Golden Duck Exhibition two years ago, right? This kid reached the height in a single bound in that art exhibition and numerous people know him ever since."

Le Baiyi suddenly said, "Oh, it turns out to be him! He's indeed a proud little chap. But I know nothing much about calligraphy and painting, though. So it didn't catch my attention."

"I too have heard of him. He's notorious and has ruined a lot of girls' chastity." Mu Wanying said.

"How come you know that?" Professor Hu was stunned.

"At first, I also liked his paintings, I even collected one of his works. But I accidentally heard from a friend of mine that he's notorious for ruining the chastity of a lot of girls in Shanghai as well as dumping them afterward. One of whom was even was pregnant and then committed suicide by jumping from a dozen-storied building, claiming two lives. Since his family has quite a few connections, the case was put down. However, since I wanted to find out whether the case was true or not, I asked my friend in Shanghai to investigate it, and it turns out that everything is true."

"What a bastard!" Le Baiyi's face changed as he loudly cursed.

Tang Xiu had no interest in these matters. He silently ate his meal, thinking whether he should go back to Star City immediately after dinner or spend the night in Tianjin City and go back in the morning.

He still had something to do as fast as possible-set up the winery!



Even though he had taught the recipe and its process to Scarblade Qiang, but he couldn't tell whether Scarblade Qiang would be able to produce the delicious fermented wine after the rebuilding of the winery.

And at the moment, along with the increasing need of resources, he would also need more money. If he didn't think of a way to speed up the speed in making money, he would definitely be unable to support his and Gu Yin's cultivation.

Furthermore, he also had to take a trip to Jingmen Island in the near future to see Yan'er's condition. The longer he delayed, the more severe her injuries would be. He already asked everyone he knew of to help him find the Chrono Crystal as well as the Demonic Revival Grass. Although there was only a minute possibility of finding them on Earth, he didn't want to give up even if the chances were very low.

"Excuse me. I'm Bai Yu, the General Manager of this Lotus Blossom House."

The box's door was knocked as a middle-aged woman in a blazer approached the box along with a proud and arrogant looking young man.

Professor Hu stood up. He didn't like this youth, but he had no choice but to give face to Bai Yu. After all, the Bai Family had an aloof status in Tianjin City. Even though Bai Yu referred herself as the manager of the Lotus Blossom House, but regular patrons here knew that she was actually the owner of this place.

"Congratulations, Manager Bai. Your restaurant has added a VIP yet again."

Bai Yu smiled, "Thank you, Professor Hu. I haven't seen you for quite a while in our Lotus Blossom House. Could it be that our service here is too poor so it doesn't meet your elderly satisfaction?"

Professor Hu waved his hand and said, "Nah, I was just very busy lately so I rarely had the chance to come by."

Bai Yu nodded, "Professor Hu and everyone. I will introduce you a distinguished VIP of our Lotus Blossom House, Zhu Xian. Zhu Xian, this one is Professor Hu, he once served as a Professor in the Department of History at Tianjin University."

Zhu Xian went into the box. His eyes swept over at everyone before his sight finally landed on Mu Wanying. All of his attention was fully focused on her as even his expression froze. He didn't hear anything spoken by Bai Yu and Professor Hu.

As a son of an influential family in Tianjin City and also having studied in Shanghai University for four years, he had seen numerous beautiful women already, but he could hardly find one of them to be compared to Mu Wanying.

"Zhu Xiang..." Bai Yu knitted her brows and called out again.

This time, Zhu Xian finally was able to get back his composure. He looked at Bai Yu and immediately walked toward Mu Wanying. Trying to look as amicable and graceful as he could, he shoved a handshake and smiled, “Hello, I’m Zhu Xiang. Might I ask this young lady’s surname?”

At this moment, Professor Hu’s face blackened as an awkward expression was written all over Bai Yu’s face as she angrily glared at Zhu Xiang.

Mu Wanying didn’t get up nor even looked at him. She sat still in her seat and quietly savored her dishes. Tang Xiu also didn’t get up. He had no interest at all toward this Zhu Xiang or the Lotus Blossom House. The purpose of his visit here was to buy the Wintertide Fluorite and Star Fragment Stone from Le Baiyi, even though it was a pity that it was a wasted trip. Therefore, he had decided that he would find a hotel to spend the night after the meal and return back to Star City tomorrow.

Zhu Xian frowned. Looking at Mu Wanying who was ignoring him, despite being angry inside, he still pretended to not care about it as he still held his amiable smile, “Miss, by virtue of my painting skill, I got the VIP membership of this Lotus Blossom House. Might I ask whether Miss knows about paintings? I also brought along my work with me, would you like to appreciate it?”

Mu Wanying finally looked up slowly. She coldly looked at him as she shook her head and said, “No. Unless it’s the work of a famous expert, I won’t see it. Furthermore, I offer you an advice, we—Chinese have a traditional virtue, that is, respect for the elderly and care for the young. The manager of dining hall just

introduced you to Professor Hu, but you blatantly ignored him. I really want to know whether you were educated or not. If not, I know a place that might make you educated and cultured.”

At the opposite of her, Tang Xiu looked up and thought that Mu Wanying’s line was quite interesting. A smile outline revealed itself on the corner of his mouth as he asked, “Where is it?”

“Juvenile Correctional Center.” Mu Wanying glanced at Tang Xiu and lightly said.

Tang Xiu looked at her with an odd expression. Inside, he was at a loss whether to cry or laugh. The words she spoke were truly venomous. The correctional institution was actually enough to express it, but she still added “juvenile”. This meant that in her eyes, Zhu Xian wasn’t a grown up!

“You...”

Anger finally filled Zhu Xiang’s face. But he suppressed the flames of anger in an instant. He couldn’t get the subtle meaning behind Mu Wanying’s line. But facing Mu Wanying who was really too beautiful, he only put the hatred inside and decided to teach her well after he successfully hooked her up.

Zhu Xiang secretly heaved a breath. He turned around and looked at Professor Hu, saying, “Ah, I didn’t expect to see Professor Hu here. Have you been well? My grandfather previously said that you’re in a poor health, so you should take care of yourself better.”

Professor Hu's face became darker. The meaning behind Zhu Xiang's words was as if he deliberately made his health deteriorate. He snorted coldly as he silently sat back in his seat.

Le Baiyi looked at his old friend's expression and secretly sighed inside. He turned toward Bai Yu and said, "Manager Bai, right? I'd have to trouble you to help us send the visitor off!"

## Chapter 222: Too Conceited to Differentiate Good from Bad

---

Bai Yu was also annoyed by Zhu Xian at this moment. But in the presence of other visitors, she couldn't flare up and could only suppress her anger inside her heart. She nodded and looked at Zhu Xian, "Since the guests don't welcome you. You can go now!"

Zhu Xiang frowned. He snorted coldly and said, "Hmph, Manager Bai, what's the meaning with this? I'm your Lotus Blossom House distinguished VIP. How can you dismiss me with such manner?"

Bai Yu had never thought that Zhu Xian was so conceited and unable to differentiate good from bad. Although she was fully angered, she still contained it and wanted him to leave first. However, this person turned to be unable to accept the good intentions of others, and in turn, even bit her.

Under such blazing anger, Bai Yu didn't even care about him anymore as she said icily, "Mr. Zhu. The others clearly said for the visitor to leave and you still want to stay here? Don't tell me you can't differentiate between good and bad. Do you want others to kick you out, only then will you be content? Furthermore, even though you've become our Lotus Blossom House VIP, but you still have to behave yourself. If you want to make trouble in our Lotus Blossom House, then leave. I'll revoke your VIP status."

Zhu Xiang flew into a rage. This kind of feeling of being berated and aimed at was not something his self-esteem could stand. His face flickered unceasingly. He gritted his teeth and said, "Manager Bai, words have been said and you have to be held for your own

words. I gave my painting to your Lotus Blossom House, and you actually want to drive me away? Do you want to destroy your own reputation? Also, I've looked at the paintings on the wall downstairs. Most of them are garbage. I endured having my painting being hung along with the other trash paintings in the same place. And you're still so dense despite my good intentions?"

Despite her fury, Bai Yu smiled as she stared at him and sternly said, "Very good. I really never thought that you'd turn out to be such a character. I'll hold to my words. But starting from today, if you dare step into my Lotus Blossom House even half a step, I will consider it as a provocation to us. I want to see what ability you or even your Zhu Family have."

Professor Hu and Mu Wanying also looked angry at the moment. The paintings hung downstairs, some of them were also their work. And now Zhu Xiang called them garbage, this greatly annoyed them.

"Pa..."

Professor Hu slapped the table. He stood up and shouted, "What a rubbish talk! You are just a boy who hasn't fully grown your hair. You've a little ability, but your arrogance is truly boundless. If our paintings are garbage, then what rank are your paintings? A treasure? Hmph. You just want knowledgeable people to make you a laughingstock."

"Professor Hu, you're a historian, you dare to compare yourself to me in painting and calligraphy? I do respect your trivial knowledge of history and literature. But please don't disgrace

yourself in the painting field. And to be honest, your painting hung on the wall downstairs, is indeed garbage. If you're unable to accept it, let's compare yours with mine and let all the guests of the Lotus Blossom House appraise and comment on them." Zhu Xiang sneered.

Professor Hu was so enraged even his lips shivered. His raised arms also trembled slightly. He already knew that Zhu Xian was very rampant, domineering and uninhibited. But he had never imagined that he would be arrogant to this extent. Did he really have no respect whatsoever for the elderly?

Mu Wanying stood up and coldly looked at Zhu Xiang, "Using your strong point to attack the others' weak point, eh? You know, seeing this attitude of yours, I really beg to differ. Since you want to compare yourself, I'll accompany your play. Let's have a bet!"

Zhu Xiang was surprised for a moment before proudly replying, "Relying on you? It's not that I'm look down on you or Professor Hu, but do you really think that you're better than me?" Suddenly, his eyes turned. An excellent idea sprouted inside his mind as a deceitful smile revealed itself on his mouth. He cleared his throat and said, "However, if you want to bet with me on Professor Hu's behalf, it's fine. But since it's a gamble, a stake must be put onto it. What kind of stake do you dare to bet in this gamble?"

Mu Wanying's brows slightly pressed. Zhu Xiang's meaningful glance disgusted her deeply. After a short moment of silence, she replied slowly, "I have a set of precious calligraphy created by Grandmaster Wang Xizhi. If I lose, I'll give it to you. But if I win, what will you put out as a stake?"



Zhu Xiang's brows wrinkled. He then sneered, "Hmph, Wang Xizhi's calligraphy can be said as a priceless treasure, but I don't think it's enough. If you lose, you have to comply to a condition, whatever it is. But If I lose, I will give you the 'Sailboats and Pavilions' painting by the famous painter in the Tang Dynasty, Li Sixun, while I'll also comply to your condition."

"This..."

Mu Wanying hesitated. She cared about the set of Wang Xizhi's treasured calligraphy, but losing it would only make her distressed for a few days. But, she was afraid that Zhu Xiang would ask an excessive condition she couldn't accept. Furthermore, she also realized that although Zhu Xiang's attitude was bad, his painting skill was very good. She knew that she wouldn't be able to win him convincingly. At the most, it would only be a tie.

"What should I do? Should I give up?"

If she was to give up, it wouldn't only show that she was timid and admitting that her ability is inferior to his.

For a while, Mu Wanying was as though riding a tiger and hard to get off. It was impossible for her to stop here.

Tang Xiu, who was quietly savoring his dishes, finally put down the chopsticks in his hands. He shook his head and sighed, "Aiii, I have seen too many fake and shameless bastards, but only a few can match your shamelessness, Zhu Xiang. I can tell that the

condition you're going to propose is, in fact, to let her dig the pit and jump into it on her own, no? Actually, you don't need to admit it. I know perfectly well about your idea. It's nothing more that you want to use the condition as a constraint that after you win, you want her for you. Am I correct?"

In a split second, everyone's expression greatly changed.

As blazing furious as he was, Zhu Xiang, who was seen through, suddenly hated Tang Xiu and at the same time, immediately shouted in a stern voice, "It's you who's a shameless bastard! Don't you dare slander me! I admit I really like her, but in no way will I use that condition to force her. A graceful lady is there and a gentleman comes to court her, but still, he will respect her right to pursue her own choice. If I can get her heart, I'll marry her."

Marry? Wasn't this also counted as having a hidden intention?

Everyone present inside the box revealed a look of disgust, as Mu Wanying had a terribly blackened face.

Tang Xiu laughed involuntarily and said, "Hahaha, I've seen shameless people, but never have I ever seen a truly shameless one such as you! Fine! How about I accompany you to play? If I lose, say whatever condition you want. But if you lose, I don't want whatever calligraphy or painting you have, just get your damn ass out of here."

Flames of anger were almost blazing out from Zhu Xiang's eyes. He glared angrily at Tang Xiu and snapped, "Who the fuck are

you? Why the hell are you meddling in someone else's business?"

Tang Xiu pointed at Mu Wanying and plainly said, "You just said yourself that you're a gentleman who is trying to court a graceful lady. You can take me as her envoy or guardian. How about it? Didn't you dare to bet with her? And now, do you dare or not to play and bet with me?"

Zhu Xiang clenched his fists. If he didn't strongly restrain himself, he really would have fiercely punched Tang Xiu's face. Looking at Mu Wanying's blackened face, he said, "Fine! Since you want to insult yourself, I'll help you. But I don't like a gambling without stakes. I'll use my "Sailboats and Pavilions" painting and you bet your collection."

"My collection?" Tang Xiu rolled his eyes and turned toward Mu Wanying. He then said lightly, "Do you dare to lend me your treasured set of Wang Xizhi's calligraphy?"

Mu Wanying took a deep breath and spoke with a deep tone, "I'll lend it to you."

Tang Xiu shrugged his shoulders and said, "Did you hear it? The set of Wang Xizhi's treasured calligraphy should be enough, no?"

Despite his fury, Zhu Xiang smiled as he clapped his hands and said, "Alright. Since you wanna bet, then bet we will! Say! You wanna do it here or in another place?"

Tang Xiu looked at Bai Yu and peacefully asked, “Manager Bai, right? Since your Lotus Blossom House has a painting custom, you should have prepared paintbrush and papers, right? May I trouble you to provide the painting tools as well as make an appraisal committee consisted of the guests of your restaurant?”

Bai Yu looked at Tang Xiu deeply. She then nodded and said, “I’ll immediately pass the orders as per your request. The contest will be held half an hour later in the first floor’s hall.”

“Alright!” Tang Xiu replied calmly.

Bai Yu looked at Zhu Xiang with a bad expression, saying, “Now, come with me!”

Zhu Xian snorted coldly and glanced provocatively at Tang Xiu as he then turned around to leave.

Inside the box.

The anger on Professor Hu’s face slowly faded away and was replaced with a bitter expression. He looked at Tang Xiu, shook his head and sighed, “Young man, you shouldn’t have let your decisions be affected by your emotions! I know you did that out of good intentions. Yet, on-the-spot painting is not something you can fake! The set of Wang Xizhi’s treasured calligraphy might not reach the point of being priceless, yet it’s still very valuable. It’s a collection everyone who loves calligraphy and painting long for even in their dreams.”

At the moment, the contempt Le Baiyi had toward Tang Xiu got more intense. He believed that Tang Xiu was just jealous toward Zhu Xiang because of Mu Wanying. He even thought that Tang Xiu was very stupid. He knew that Zhu Xian was very skillful in painting, but still, Tang Xiu gave his face to be slapped by him. The most annoying thing was that Mu Wanying would also lose her precious set collection.

Mu Wanying was also a bit bitter and annoyed. Even though Tang Xiu did it to help her, but to think that she had to lose her calligraphy collection made her quite distressed. One must know that it was given by her grandfather, of whom he spent quite a big effort to find and buy it at a sky high price.

“Tang Xiu, you really can paint?” After hesitating for a moment, still, Mu Wanying couldn’t help asking.

“A little.” Tang Xiu lightly replied.

“You know a little about it?” Mu Wanying couldn’t feel more disappointed anymore.

Professor Hu took his eyes back from Tang Xiu and said with a wry smile, “Ah, how I wish Yang Qing was here. He’s acclaimed as the most outstanding genius of the new generation in the painting and calligraphy world. His skill in painting is extremely high and only a few of the great painters of the older generation are more skillful than him.”

Le Baiyi nodded upon hearing this, saying, “I also have heard

about this Yang Qing name. He's indeed a very skillful young painter. He started to learn painting at the age of five and was able to paint good works at the age of ten. Between the age of 16 and 26, a mere ten years, he won hundreds of awards."

Professor Hu nodded and said, "That's right. If there wasn't the sudden emergence of a certain painting recently, I originally believed that he could win the first place in the next Asian Painting Competition with his 'One Hundred Birds Turn Toward the Phoenix' masterpiece!"

"Huh?" Le Baiyi was surprised and asked, "A sudden emergence? What painting is that?"

"Accurately speaking, it's a grand and majestic large scale architectural design, and was manually hand-painted by someone." Professor Hu exclaimed.

## Chapter 223: Contest

---

Le Baiyi was astonished and Mu Wanying was curious. On the contrary, Tang Xiu's face flickered upon hearing Professor Hu's story.

Architectural design drawing? Was it... his drawing?

“Old Hu, tell me the details. Why would this architectural design be eligible to win the prize in the Asian Painting Competition?” Le Baiyi inquired.

“Why can't it?” Professor Hu asked back, and said seriously, “You haven't seen the drawing, I presume. If you see it, you'll definitely have your jaw dropped. I have many famous and highly respected painter friends. They even admitted inferiority upon seeing it. The creator of that architectural design has a superb painting technique, it's very exquisite. That architectural design is a masterpiece, and looks like it imitates and gives off the majestic aura of the palatial heavenly palace.”

Suddenly, Professor Hu's eyes turned bright. He took out his mobile, opened a mail and its picture attachment. He handed it over to Le Baiyi and said, “I just remembered that my friend sent this architectural design to me. Unfortunately, it's just a picture and I can't see the original one.”

Le Baiyi took the phone. After looking at for a few seconds, his pupils suddenly contracted as disbelief burst from his eyes. Despite his trivial knowledge about paintings, he could see that the

architectural design was unusual. The lines were boldly drawn with incisive technique, giving off a unique charm. The picture was simply the paradise.

The thing that shocked him the most was not only this but the design of the architectural buildings itself. The edifice drawn on it looked extremely palatial and majestic. The style was strange and uncanny and it seemed like it reflected the incisiveness of the author.

He dared say that once someone constructed the edifice in this architectural design masterpiece, it would definitely become the most famous landmark in China. Not only would it be famous throughout the country, it would also be well-known worldwide.

“It’s so amazing. This old man, I, have seen a lot of paintings in my life, including many masterpieces of famous painters. But absolutely none of them can be compared to this painting.”

Mu Wanying, who had yet to see the picture, had her curiosity greatly sparked by looking at the shocked expression on her teacher’s face. She stood up gracefully and came over to Le Baiyi’s side. Her eyes fell on the picture on the mobile screen as her bent waist slightly trembled.

"This is..."

Mu Wanying was shocked. She hardly believed her eyes. She couldn’t believe that there would be someone in the world who was able to paint such a divine masterpiece. She had once seen the



incomplete picture of the “Along the River During the Qingming Festival” painting and she dared guarantee that even a complete version of the painting couldn’t be compared to this one.

This painting... this painting should have existed only in heaven. Why would it appear in the human world?

Le Baiyi handed the mobile phone to Mu Wanying. The shock on his old face hadn’t yet faded away as he sighed, “Ahh, someone who can draw this painting can be called the God of Painting. I really can’t imagine now as to how huge the sensation would it create if the buildings in this painting are really built.”

“Indeed. If the buildings on this painting were really built, I’ll make sure to go to the residential area and buy a house there.” Professor Hu said with a straight approving expression.

Le Baiyi said categorically, “You can count me in as well.”

Mu Wanying took the mobile and went back to her seat. Her eyes full shock, she even didn’t hear the conversation of the two old men. Her sensual lips slightly opened and muttered, “If the author of this painting is willing to accept apprentices, I’ll be definitely be the first one.”

Her voice wasn’t loud. Yet, Professor Hu and Le Baiyi, including Tang Xiu, could clearly hear it.

Professor Hu and Le Baiyi glanced at each other with a forced

smile on their faces. They also had the same kind of impulse!

Tang Xiu reached out his hand to Mu Wanying and said, “Show me.”

Mu Wanying came back to her senses and handed over the phone to Tang Xiu with a complex expression. Her eyes were blurred, and nobody knew what she was thinking.

Tang Xiu took the phone and saw the picture on the screen. Then, a wisp of a smile revealed itself on his face. He didn't expect that the architectural design that was praised by Professor Hu, Le Baiyi, and Mu Wanying turned out to be the one he painted.

Immediately after, he returned the phone to Professor Hu.

Looking at Tang Xiu's manners, Professor Hu and Le Baiyi secretly despised him. Thinking that Tang Xiu simply had no enthusiasm toward it. That made them even worried about the upcoming contest.

Shortly after, a waiter of the Lotus Blossom House came to their box, inviting everyone to the painting exhibition hall downstairs. When the four came to the base floor, dozens of guests had surrounded the two tables in the middle of the hall; they could clearly hear their voices.

“We're so lucky to be able to see the contest between two talented young painters today. Speaking about painting, I also have learned

it in the past for a period of time. But it's a pity that I'm not talented, so I gave it up. Fortunately, I followed Old Wang visiting this Lotus Blossom House today, so I can see the contest between the two evenly matched painters."

"I also have heard about Zhu Xiang's name. He's a quite famous skilled young painter. But as for Tang Xiu, I've never heard of him. He should be a junior who remains low profile!"

"Zhu Xiang is a very arrogant person. A moment ago, when he was introduced and had a toast in the box, his attitude is not friendly nor does he have a shred of modesty in dealing with things. Such a person, even if he has excellent painting skills, perhaps won't have much charm in his works. But I'm really curious about the young man who's his opponent in this contest."

"Tianjin City is very big, and having a Zhu Xiang emerge here is kind of a given. Could anyone else be more skillful than him? But in any case, I think Zhu Xiang will surely win tonight."

"I think so too."

"Well, I look forward to seeing a good show, though."

" ... "

Tang Xiu secretly smiled as he heard these discussions. He indeed had no reputation in Tianjin City, let alone in the painting world. So it wasn't a wonder that everyone present was full of confidence

in Zhu Xiang.

However, if one couldn't handle the pressure, one shouldn't try to be in a position to deal with the problem.

He was confident in his painting skill. Let alone Zhu Xiang who was his opponent now, even if the other party was a master painter, he was not afraid at all.

“Ladies and gentlemen, let us begin now.”

Upon seeing that Tang Xiu and the others had arrived, Bai Yu announced, as everyone immediately came into the large platform in the hall. She then approached Tang Xiu and asked, “Are you confident?”

“Rest assured.” Tang Xiu could see Bai Yu's mind as he replied with a nod.

Bai Yu nodded and said, “If you're confident, please do the best you can. I look forward to your performance.”

“I won't let you down!” Tang Xiu said.

After having said that, he walked to the center of the hall. Looking at Zhu Xiang indifferently, he said, “Bring everything you got, so you won't say that I'm bullying you when you lose.”

Zhu Xiang sneered, “Relying on you? Hmph... if you had decades of experience in this field, maybe you’d be qualified to say this. Let’s cut the bullshit, actions speak louder than words. Let’s see what you can showcase!”

Tang Xiu no longer paid attention to him as he looked at Bai Yu and calmly asked, “Are there any requirements or rules for this contest?”

Bai Yu brought along ten men and women among the onlookers. Only two of them were still young, whereas the rest were middle-aged or elderly. Bai Yu pointed to the ten people and said, “These ten are our distinguished VIPs and have their paintings being exhibited in this hall. I can guarantee their fairness to be the appraisal committee for this contest. Furthermore, after they assessed your works, the other guests will also take a vote. As for the rule of this contest, it’s very simple. Draw your paintings with a Lotus-related landscape theme within half an hour. Your painting brush, paints, and painting papers have all been prepared.”

“Alright!” Tang Xiu nodded.

Zhu Xiang said with unfazed expression, “It’s also fine with me.”

Bai Yu nodded and looked at her watch and then said, “It’s 8:28 PM now, so the end time is at 8:58 PM. I hereby announce that this contest is started... Now.”

Zhu Xiang showed Tang Xiu a ridiculing look. He quickly grabbed

the painting brush on his table. After pondering, he started to slowly paint on the canvas.

Tang Xiu was different.

At the moment when Bai Yu announced the start of the contest, he slowly closed his eyes, imagining the painting he was about to paint. After a few seconds passed, he quickly grabbed the painting brush, identifying all available paints, and then began drawing. His painting speed was a lot faster than Zhu Xian, and quickly, his brush moved as though a dragon serpent as each and every pattern began to take shape on the canvas.

“Ah, he must be lost!”

A touch of bitterness appeared on Mu Wanying’s mouth upon seeing Tang Xiu’s painting speed. She was well aware of the main essence of painting. Unless one was a maestro, whoever dared use the dragon serpent technique and rapid painting movements, definitely wouldn’t be able to draw a genuine masterpiece.

There was a line in the painter circle that the essence of carving and painting was to slowly carve out finely particulate lines without being affected by appearance and shape.

Mu Wanying herself had never heard Tang Xiu’s name before, so he should have no reputation in the calligraphy and painting world. He was but only a nameless youth. Even if he had some skills, he wasn’t someone at Zhu Xiang’s level.

Professor Hu secretly shook his head. While looking at Tang Xiu from afar, he smiled bitterly, “Mu Wanying, you shouldn’t have agreed before. Looking at his performance, it seems like you’ll lose that Wang Xizhi’s calligraphy of yours.”

Mu Wanying was a bit down. But she was still able to stomach it as she slowly replied, “If I have to lose it, then lose it I will! What is lost is lost, no need to cry over spilled milk.”

Professor Hu lamented, “It seems you can remain positive in this situation. However, I feel that Tang Xiu himself is someone with an unusual identity. Even if you lose your treasured calligraphy, perhaps he has thought of something to compensate you.”

“What’s his background?” Mu Wanying was surprised.

“I don’t know.” Professor Hu shook his head. “But have you seen an ordinary student who just finished his CET be able to pay 20 million for only a few stones? Yet he still wants to buy Old Le’s ores. His funds are definitely big, much more than 20 million yuan.”

Mu Wanying replied in astonishment, “Did he buy the two Wintertide Fluorites and the Star Fragment Stone from you with a sky-high price?”

“Yes.” Professor Hu nodded. “Old Le knows very well about the value of these two ores. The price I gave him is only the floor price, but this fellow accepted happily and didn’t even haggle over it, directly transferring me the money. Also, there’s an object

wrapped with yellow cloth inside the travel bag he just handed me; of which, he just recently bought it. Speaking the truth, I can't tell his origin, neither can I see through him."



## Chapter 224: Inciting Awe

---

Le Baiyi unenthusiastically said, “Hmph, anyone can act decent and solemn! Even if he has a bit of status and background, but perhaps he’s just so-so in painting. As spirited and vigorous as a young man could be, he’s just intentional, wanting to show off by challenging a love rival in exchange for his love interest’s attention. Just wait when he loses, only then will he know that he’s just disgracing himself.”

“You’re really pessimist, aren’t you?” Professor Hu chuckled.

Sneering, Le Baiyi said, “Why should I feel optimistic about him? What qualification does he have for me to feel optimistic about him? If he really can win against Zhu Xiang, I’ll agree to sell him my Wintertide Fluorite and Star Fragment Stone! No... I’ll give them to him for free!”

Professor Hu forced out a smile and said, “Old Le, you shouldn’t let yourself be affected by your emotions in taking a decision.”

Le Baiyi sneered, “Old Hu, you know me. I always mean what I say. If he really win against Zhu Xiang, I’ll immediately return to Shanghai and take my two ores and give them to him.”

Upon seeing Tang Xiu’s rapid painting appearance, Bai Yu and the ten painting experts of the appraisal committee also shook their heads. They thought that Tang Xiu was only putting on an act, trying to look mysterious, but in fact had neither truly learned nor was genuinely talented.

The balance of victory in their mind was inclined toward Zhu Xian, including Bai Yu, who was very sick of him along with several other painting experts.

Around a quarter of an hour later.

Tang Xiu put his painting brush away and lightly drew two patterns on the landscape painting. He then pulled out a piece of white paper and tiled it on top of the painting scroll.

“I’m done!” Tang Xiu looked around, his eyes finally landing on Bai Yu’s face.

“The time isn’t up yet. We’ll wait for Zhu Xiang.” Bai Yu nodded and said.

“Alright!” Tang Xiu replied and then stood in front of the table, waiting quietly.

After nearly 30 minutes, Zhu Xiang finally painted the scenery he wanted to draw. He raised his hand to erase the sweat on his forehead, showing a contented smile on his handsome face. He then said with a clear voice, “I’ve painted a good one. This painting can definitely be called as one of my best works.”

“Two of you, which one who will take the first chance to show your painting to everyone?” Bai Yu nodded and asked.

Zhu Xiang answered haughtily, “I’ll showcase my painting to these experts first! Wait until I show mine. I want to make him realize the truth, that looking at paintings is as much the same as eating food. After you eat the good one and then eat the poor one, you’ll absolutely feel bored and feel that’s not worth it.”

“Mr. Tang, how about you?” Bai Yu asked.

“Have it your way!” Tang Xiu said indifferently.

Bai Yu nodded and brought the ten judges to the center. They stood in a circle around Zhu Xiang’s drawing table and began to appraise his painting.

“The skill’s basic foundation is solid. The lines are very clear, with distinct and clear textures. The green mountains and waterfalls are beautiful, with birds springing up and standing on the branches. The most distinguished and best part of all is the deep lake at the foot of the hill in which a beautiful lotus is in full bloom. Looking at this painting can suck people into a world of imagination of the landscape in this beautiful scenery.”

“Yes! Take a look at the color gradation and assortment. It’s delicate and exquisite; the tone is especially dazzling. The birds on the branches have their beaks opened, giving off the vibe of singing folk songs. I’ve seen a lot of paintings, and only a handful are better than this one. If I have to mark it with a number, I can give this one at least 80 points.”

“It’s elegant. This painting gives me a sense of elegance,

unexpectedly. It's really good. I it give 81 points."

"80 points!"

"..."

Bai Yu's face showed a complex expression along with the judges' evaluations. Zhu Xiang's character might be very poor, but the foundation of his painting skill was truly solid. There were a lot of paintings in her Lotus Blossom House, but no more than ten could be said as better than this painting.

At this moment, she couldn't help but secretly feel worried for Tang Xiu.

Bai Yu secretly sighed inside. She then looked at Zhu Xiang and said, "Take your painting and let everyone else to have a look! Wait until everyone has seen your work and the one done by Tang Xiu. Only then will we give you the assessment of the outcome of this contest."

"Alright!"

Zhu Xiang picked up his painting and slowly walked in front of the onlookers. It took a few minutes as he returned back to the table and put back his landscape painting on the table. He looked at Tang Xiu with ridicule and said, "No matter how bad your painting is, it has to be revealed, because any attempt to hide it will be futile in the end. I have showcased mine in front of everybody.

Now is your turn. Of course, if you really feel that you have no chance to win, I'm willing to give you some face. If you directly admit that you lost to me, we won't see your painting."

Tang Xiu shook his head and smiled, "Zhu Xiang, I'm really clueless as to where you got your confidence from. Have you learned the common principle of truth?"

Zhu Xiang raised his brows and sneered, "What truth?"

"The higher you stand, the harder you'll fall. You're clamoring in jubilation now. But in case that you lose, the shame you will face might even be beyond redemption!"

Zhu Xiang contemptuously replied, "Hmph, wanting to defeat me relying on only you? Dream on! Cut the crap and take out your painting. Let everyone take a look at it!"

Tang Xiu paced backward. He turned toward Bai Yu and made an 'invitation' gesture.

Bai Yu came to the front of Tang Xiu's table and gently lifted the white paper that was covering the canvas. When her eyes fell on the painting, her eyes froze and her hand trembled. Her pupils suddenly contracted and shrunk as disbelief flashed from her eyes.

"T-this painting..."

At the moment, no one could understand her shock. Her eyes

were glued to the canvas. Her heart jolted and throbbed faster than usual.

The ten judges, who saw her expression, each and every one of them revealed puzzled expressions. They approached the table. But when they saw the painting on the table, similar expressions as Bai Yu's immediately appeared on their faces.

It was a deathly stillness! The whole scene turned extremely quiet that everyone present could hear if a needle fell on the floor at this moment. However, the ten judges and Bai Yu were all trembling at this moment, with disbelief bursting out from their eyes.

"What happened?"

Finally, a middle-aged man asked aloud amid the waiting onlookers outside the platform.

In a split second, the trembling bodies of the ten judges and Bai Yu turned more intense, even though they also came up to their senses again after the daze. These eleven people, as though they had a tacit agreement between them, glared angrily at the man who just spoke a moment ago.

That middle-aged man was bewildered. He raised his hand and scratched the back of his head. He was clueless as to how he offend the ten judges and Bai Yu. Why would they look at him with such angry expressions?

Bai Yu took a deep breath and looked at Tang Xiu with a complex expression. Then, she said, “It’s truly unexpected. Never in my dreams have I ever imagined of being able to see such a landscape painting! I dare say that it’s not a shock I’ve gotten from this, but a fright. I’m pretty much shivered down to the core by your painting.”

One of the ten judges, also with the same bitter expression, said, “I’m also frightened! I can’t believe that anyone in this world would be able to draw such a landscape painting.”

Zhu Xiang was bewildered upon seeing the ten judges and Bai Yu’s reactions. He didn’t even hear anything as to whether Tang Xiu’s painting was good or bad in the end. After hesitating for a moment, he said aloud, “Manager Bai and ten judges, is this kiddo’s painting so appalling to look at? If so, loudly announce it and let him disgrace himself!”

"Shut up!" A judge angrily shouted.

"Uh..." Zhu Xiang’s face froze. A bad premonition spontaneously rose in his heart.

Bai Yu looked at Tang Xiu deeply and asked, “Mr. Tang, can you let me showcase your painting to everyone?”

“Please, and I’m sorry for the trouble!” Tang Xiu answered with a nod.

Bai Yu nodded. She carefully picked the picture scroll of Tang Xiu's painting as she walked slowly step by step. Not only that, she slowly walked and stopped for every two steps for half a minute. It took her a full seven to eight minutes for her to finish showcasing it around.

Everyone present turned extremely silent after they saw the landscape painting drawn by Tang Xiu. They even looked at Zhu Xiang with complex expressions on their faces.

Professor Hu, Le Baiyi, and Mu Wanying—the first famed beauty in the capital, were also no exception!

Eventually, Bai Yu carefully put back the landscape painting on the table in front of Tang Xiu. After a moment of hesitation, she asked, “Mr. Tang, might I ask if you're willing to sell this painting? Please open your price. As long as I can afford it, I won't haggle over it with you.”

Tang Xiu indifferently shook his head. He looked at Mu Wanying and said, “Since she chose to trust me and willingly lent me Wang Xizhi's authentic work for this contest's bet, I would like to give this painting to her and put a closure in this contest. Actually, it's very easy for me to draw this kind of painting; I can draw thousands of them if I want to. However, I'm very lazy and moody. So my paintings are very few and rare, not only for the time being but also in the future.”

Mu Wanying was struck dumb, “Y-you... y-you want to give this painting to me? N-no, no. This... t-this is too precious!”



Tang Xiu said with calm and tranquil expression, “Expressing the mood by the brush and playing with the inks to express it elegantly. This is what I understood in accordance with those scholars. That’s why painting is just the spice of life. But don’t let it become the main path in life, much less become obsessed with it. Otherwise, the rest of your life will be very plain and boring. Take it! Everything this Tang has given is not supposed to be taken back.”

A splendorous light flashed from Mu Wanying’s eyes. Tang Xiu’s remark caused an indescribably jolt inside her heart. After a few moments of silence, only then she nodded and slowly said, “Thank you very much!”

Standing at the side, Zhu Xiang, that hadn’t yet seen what kind of landscape painting was drawn by Tang Xiu, had a bad feeling at this moment, which was getting even more intense. He took a deep breath, looking at Tang Xiu and Mu Wanying who basically ignored him. Fuming with anger, he suddenly snapped, “Who lost and won has yet to be decided, what the hell did you clamor for? I want to see what kind of trashing junk you have painted!”

Having said that, he strode to the table in front of Tang Xiu as his eyes landed on the painting he had drawn.

"This is..." Coldness struck down his heart the moment he saw the painting. The chill came not from the outside, but rather deep down from his innermost soul.

It was a good painting! Perfecto!

He had seen thousands of paintings, but he had never seen a better one.

The towering mountain peak was as though a giant dragon, endless and spreading across, with a palatial palace on the summit. The magnificently decorated palace was shrouded by faint mist and clouds, with cranes dancing and white-feathered birds chirping and jumping ecstatically under the white clouds in the blue sky.

A leaf boat drifted along the stormy surging river, whereas an elegant young man sat alone in its bow, quietly reading a book as he traversed downstream.

## Chapter 225: Heavy Blows

---

The end of the river was not connected to an endless ocean but ended at a clear, sparkling lake with a pavilion that gave off an elegant ancient charm. A barefooted girl splashed her foot on the lake water, drenching a near lotus.

Suddenly, looking closer, Zhu Xiang found himself in the picture, in the celestial world. He no longer looked at the picture, as if he was seeing this world with his naked eyes.

He was part of this place! He was summoned to this place!

Such sensation was he was experiencing at this very moment.

The onlookers at the first-floor hall of the Lotus Blossom House looked at Zhu Xiang in contempt. They had seen many shameless people, but never once had they seen someone as shameless as him.

Of the two paintings, which was the better one and the most lacking one?

Without needing a brain, even with their toes, they could see it clearly. Zhu Xiang's painting was good, but compared with Tang Xiu's, the difference was the contrast between day and night, there was no need to compare them.

“Hey... that surname Zhu surely has learned that there will always be someone better, huh? If I were you, I'd quickly take off

my pants to cover my head, running from this place. So I can stop disgracing myself again.” Mocks and jeers burst out from the crowd, immediately inciting laughter.

Another one, also with contempting look, disdained, “Surnamed Zhu, you’ve lost. So you must honor your promise and give the painting you promised! The result has been announced, you won’t be such a bastard who will renege on a debt, will you?”

“Right! Good or bad, you’re the second young master of Zhu Family in Tianjin City. Don’t be a sore loser who takes defeat with bad grace. You don’t want to discredit your family, right?”

Among the onlookers, Professor Hu’s mouth severely twitched. Only at this moment did he recover from his shock. The expression in his eyes when he looked at Tang Xiu was completely different from before. He even began to rebuke himself for underestimating him. He was also a painter, but he had judged the book from its cover by looking down at Tang Xiu solely by his age.

“Today is the first time in my life that I committed such a mistake!” Professor Hu couldn’t help but force a smile and heave a deep sigh.

Then, he began to feel sympathy for Le Baiyi. Because he clearly remembered what Le Baiyi said before.

The Wintertide Fluorites and the Star Fragment Stones!

However, he knew very well that the number of ores Le Baiyi had, was more than him, they were worth twice his selling price.

Le Baiyi was taken aback. It was as if a pair of invisible hands grabbed his neck. He flushed red and couldn't even speak for a long period of time.

He was as though a frog looking at the sky from the bottom of the well! So bitter and astringent, he wanted to vomit.

Curiosity was written all over Mu Wanying's face. Prior to this, Professor Hu had said that this young man's identity was mysterious, and now she believed that. Even before, she thought she could read through Tang Xiu, what a joke.

But, she was excited. Because Tang Xiu clearly said that he rarely painted, which meant that this painting would definitely be priceless in the future.

Zhu Xiang finally sobered up under everyone's ridicule. He looked around with a vacant expression as his face began to change, from red to white, white to green, green to purple, finally changing into a pale white as though a wax paper.

He had lost! As reluctant as he was, but the fact was shown in front of him, and he had no choice but to admit it.

Suddenly, Zhu Xiang looked at Tang Xiu with bloodshot eyes. With a stern tone, he shout, "Who are you really?"

Tang Xiu replied indifferently, "I'm just an ordinary person. A student who just attended the CET. You don't need to care about me. I'm neither famous in the painting industry nor do I want to be. Fame will only bring about trouble; there's no benefit gained from it."

Zhu Xiang choked upon hearing his words and couldn't utter anything for quite a long while. He had thoroughly lost in the hands of a student who had just finished the CET!

Only now did he realize that Tang Xiu's remark made sense. The higher one stood, the harder one would fall. He was too arrogant, too domineering; he thought that he was unequalled in the world. But at present, he had disgraced himself to such an extent that he ended up miserable!

Bai Yu looked at him and sneered, "If my memory doesn't fail me, prior to this you've said that you'd give Mr. Tang the authentic work of the famous painter, Li Sixun's "Sailboats and Pavilions" painting. Since you're a local, I suppose it won't take long to take it from your home and bring it here, yes?"

Zhu Xiang stared at her with eyes blazing. Then he looked at Tang Xiu with hatred, saying, "Willing to bet means that I dare to lose. I'll go bring the painting now!"

Having said that, under numerous contemptuous eyes, he ran out of the Lotus Blossom House with an ashamed face.

At this time, a middle-aged man in the crowd shouted loudly, “Say, today that surnamed Zhu has lost so miserably, do you think he still has the face to come back? I dare say he will only send someone to deliver the painting.”

"Hahaha..."

A burst of laughter immediately followed from the crowd.

Bai Yu's mood was very good now. She not only vented the foul mood inside her heart, Zhu Xiang was even kicked out; moreover she even saw such a peerless-unique painting. Once this painting was known in the outside world in the future, her Lotus Blossom House's reputation would also rise.

She could already see the magnificent scene that would happen in this Lotus Blossom House in the future.

“Mr. Tang, thank you for giving me the chance to see such a good painting. Your bill today is on me. Furthermore, from now on, I guarantee that all your expenses also will be free.” Bai Yu said earnestly.

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment. He then nodded slowly, “In that case, I'll write a few words for you! Please do appreciate it well!”

When ones give me a peach, I give him a plum. And since Bai Yu treated him well, Tang Xiu felt that he also should give something

in exchange. He didn't want to give a painting, but rather wanted to write a few words of calligraphy in return.

Bai Yu was startled. In ecstasy, she repeatedly thanked, "Great, thanks. Thank you, Mr. Tang."

Tang Xiu waved his hand and, under the watchful eyes of the onlookers, he picked up the brush and wrote scroll, writing six words in a bold and cursive style.

Elegance Paintings of Lotus Blossom House.

The characters were written in a vigorous and powerful style, giving off the vibe and charm of the elegance of an emperor and the joy of life.

The elegance itself brought about the charm of the imperial aura. Decisive and hard, along with the nuance of chivalry and tenderness.

"What good characters!"

An old man who was not only an excellent painter but also a calligrapher, widened his eyes and shouted loudly.

The moment Bai Yu saw the calligraphy, she immediately loved it. Having drowned herself in paintings and calligraphies for so many years, she naturally could distinguish the quality of the works. Although she couldn't be said to be an expert, she could see



that these six characters were truly written superbly.

“One mi... no. Five million! I’ll buy this calligraphy for five million!”

The old man who spoke just now blinked at Bai Yu, full of expectation.

Bai Yu’s heart jolted and hurriedly shook her head, saying, “Not selling. Let alone five million, even if it’s 50 million, I won’t sell it!”

Disappointment was written on the old man’s face. He turned and looked at Tang Xiu. With a look of expectation, he said, “Little Brother, might I ask... can you also write me a few characters? I’ll buy it from you.”

"Are you sure?" Feeling odd, Tang Xiu asked.

The old man nodded seriously, “I’m sure.”

Tang Xiu looked around and loudly said, “Who else wants me to write some characters? Five million each. And I’ll only write four pieces.”

"I'll buy one!" Mu Wanying took a step and said without hesitation.

Astonished, Tang Xiu glanced at her. He then nodded and said, “Anyone else?”

Professor Hu squinted his eyes and smiled, “Coming across such a good thing today, I’ll also buy one.”

At this moment, a middle-aged woman stood up and shouted, “I’ll also buy one!”

Tang Xiu immediately said, “Alright! The four drawings have been sold out. After this, no matter who they are, I won’t write anymore.”

Having said that, he immediately wrote six characters on each scroll. Soon, he had finished writing on the four scrolls. Tang Xiu then looked at the four people and directly told them his bank account.

The money came by itself.

Tang Xiu nodded contently and suddenly had an impulse. What if he wrote and painted hundreds of calligraphies and paintings on his free time and sold them? If all of them were sold out, he would become a rich man in an instant.

But that was just a passing idea. Since he also understood the profound truth that when one thing was rare, it would become very precious. If he were to draw hundreds of calligraphies, perhaps his works would become too common.

Bai Yu looked at him as she said with a smile, "Mr. Tang, do you want to return to your box? I've sent someone to clean up the dishes and sent tea and dessert there. Please wait there until Zhu Xiang sends the "Sailboats and Pavilion" painting to you."

Tang Xiu turned around to look at Professor Hu, whereas the latter said with a smile, "Let's go back and have a chat."

Le Baiyi was somewhat quite depressed at the moment. Upon seeing Professor Hu nodding at him, he originally wanted to tell Tang Xiu that he would give him his Wintertide Fluorites and Star Fragment Stones. However, since they had to go back to their box, he decided to say it later.

Right at this moment, two women came walking through the Lotus Blossom House's front entrance. Dressed in the latest stylish fashion with famous brand bags, they still gave off a graceful charm despite being in their mid 30s. Suddenly, one of the women's smile elapsed, replaced by a surprised expression.

"Tang Xiu?"

It was someone that Huang Jie couldn't forget. After a short moment of hesitation, she exclaimed aloud.

Upon hearing that someone suddenly called him, Tang Xiu, who was about to walk upstairs with the others, was astonished. He turned around and saw Huang Ji. His mouth couldn't help twitching a few times. If not taking courtesy into account, he really

wanted to leave this place immediately.

As astonished as she was, Huang Jie was also quite pleasantly surprised. She took her companion and strode quickly toward Tang Xiu, saying excitedly, “Tang Xiu, is it really you? Great! I originally intended to go to Star City to look for you!”

Forcing out a smile, Tang Xiu said, “Please never say that you’re looking me, would you. What I’m most afraid of is being misunderstood by people due to that.”

Exposing a lamenting expression, Huang Jie smiled, “You’re the second man who made this Huang Jie keep thinking on him aside from my husband. Anyways, I personally don’t think that this is a coincidence. The thing is, I think you really don’t know what you want!”

## Chapter 226: Proficient in Numerous Skills

---

“As long as you don’t mention that request again, I’m fine with whatever you want to say. But if you ask me again, we might as well be strangers.”

Huang Jie was angered. “Why are you so stubborn? I offered you a professor position in our Regal Classical Music Academy. This is a position that many long for even in their dreams. Why do you always refuse it?”

“I’ve already answered to this question. So I’ll repeat it again, and this time is the last time. I really am not interested in music. I may play music occasionally when I’m the mood, but immersing myself in music for my entire life, is something that I can’t do. I have my own dreams. I hope you can respect this choice of mine.” Tang Xiu said.

"You..." Huang Jie was short on breath.

The woman beside her was astonished. Sizing up Tang Xiu, she pulled Huang Jie’s sleeves, “Sister-in-law, is he the music genius you told me about?” And then said with a smile, “Hello Tang Xiu, I’m Zhu Xinmei, Huang Jie’s husband is my big brother. I’ve heard a lot about you since she talks about you all day everyday recently. I didn’t expect to encounter you in Tianjin City as well.”

Tang Xiu nodded at her indifferently and then said, “Huang Jie, I’ve given you my answer. Anyways, I have to bid you farewell. Professor Hu, let’s go!”

Professor Hu looked at him with a strange expression, whereas Le Baiyi and Mu Wanying also stared at him with foolish expressions. Even in their dreams they had never imagined that Tang Xiu would so blatantly refuse such a good offer of becoming a professor in the Regal Classical Music Academy. They all knew this famed institution, for it could be ranked in the first three music academies throughout the country. Numerous singers had graduated from there, many of whom were greatly famous.

To think he was offered a professor position! Could it be that his accomplishments in music were as equally high as his painting skill?

Bai Yu squinted her eyes and said with a smile, “Mr. Tang, Zhu Xinmei is our Lotus Blossom’s VIP. She’s also very knowledgeable in painting just like her brother. Since her sister-in-law is your friend, how about also inviting her to sit with you? Ah, please wait a bit. I also have something I need to talk to her.”

Tang Xiu frowned. He looked straight at her and asked, “Her Brother? She’s surnamed Zhu, and the guy before also has the same family name. Is she Zhu Xiang’s sister?”

Zhu Xinmei was surprised. “Tang Xiu, do you know my little brother?”

Tang Xiu rolled his eyes and averted his head.

Bai Yu hesitated for a moment, as she then told everything that

happened before. In the end, she solemnly emphasized, “Xinmei, I know you. You have a good integrity and attitude, but your little brother’s character is kinda very difficult to deal with. That’s why I already announced that he’s forbidden from visiting our Lotus Blossom House again in the future.”

“What a damn prick! I knew that he’d cause trouble because of his attitude sooner or later. Manager Bai, Tang Xiu, I really must thank the both of you for what happened, giving him a lesson today. This will blow his arrogance greatly, saving him from future trouble. Don’t worry though. If he doesn’t send the “Sailboats and Pavilion” painting, I’ll make sure to break his legs when I go back home.”

Upon seeing Zhu Xinmei’s sincerity, Tang Xiu also earnestly nodded. But, he shook his head and sighed, “Doesn’t matter if something is good or bad, it takes all kinds to make the world. This remark is indeed justified! Please don’t thank me. As long as your little brother keeps his promise to send the painting, everything is fine!”

Zhu Xinmei nodded and looked at Huang Jie.

At this time, Huang Jie simply didn’t care about the problems between her broken brother-in-law and Tang Xiu. She was more concerned about Tang Xiu’s skill in painting since she was aware of her proud brother-in-law’s painting skill. She didn’t expect that Tang Xiu was even better than him.

“Tang Xiu, are you really proficient in drawing?”

Tang Xiu indifferently said, "I'm just ordinary, enough to abuse the mediocre! Well, we still have other matters to attend, so we'll end it here."

Having said that, he quickly gave Professor Hu a glance.

Professor Hu took the hint and smiled, "Both of you, we do have matters to attend to, so we can't accompany you! If you want to chat with Tang Xiu alone, please choose some other day."

Huang Jie was quite reluctant. However, she felt that it was no good to keep insisting, because she knew that her brother-in-law had offended them.

Looking at their backs, Huang Jie said with a trace of resentment, "Xinmei, we really should teach Zhu Xiang some manners. If his disposition doesn't change, he will no longer be able to take a foothold in society."

As bitter as she was, Zhu Xinmei replied, "You think I don't want to do that? I taught him many times already, but it didn't work at all. Furthermore, his proudness and superciliousness are... Ugh. Alas, our family has done much all his wrongdoings; otherwise, he would have been notorious already."

Pondering for a moment, Huang Jie slowly said, "How about, I tell your brother about today's matter? Your little brother fears nobody. I believe he'll change if your big brother acts."



Zhu Xinmei shook her head. “No Sis, you can never tell big brother of this. Otherwise, he’ll surely break Xiang’s legs.”

“Then what should we do? Let him off that easily?” Huang Jie forced a smile and said.

Zhu Xinmei thought for a long time. After following an attendant and arriving at the box, only then did she speak, “We’ll look at the situation again! After today’s lesson, if he still doesn’t change, I’ll tell big brother about this matter!”

“Alright!” Huang Jie nodded and said.

Inside another box.

After everyone had taken their seats again, Bai Yu stayed for some small talk and then left. She wasn’t familiar with Tang Xiu after all. And even if she wanted to stay and befriend him, she was afraid that he would dislike it.

At this moment, there were only four people. Professor Hu, who kept his curiosity in check all the time, looked at Tang Xiu and asked, “Tang Xiu, aside from painting, do you really understand music?”

“Just a little!” Tang Xiu nodded.

A little?

Professor Hu, Le Baiyi, and Mu Wanying recalled Tang Xiu's reply before, he also said "just a little".

With such a godly skill in painting, can it really be called just "a little" skilled?

At the moment, the trio had already determined that Tang Xiu was really proficient in keeping his temperament. Otherwise, that woman a moment ago would've never asked Tang Xiu to become a professor in the Regal Classical Musical Academy.

Professor! Wanting to become one was not something that someone could easily achieve. Moreover, it was the famous Regal Classical Music Academy.

Professor Hu pondered for a moment before he asked, "Tang Xiu, we just learned that you're from Star City and only a student who just attended the CET."

Tang Xiu understood Professor Hu's thoughts in a flash. "Please. You don't need to beat around the bush. I'm just an ordinary person, nothing more, nothing less. But I do have a little business in my spare time after school. But, as for you, I feel you're kinda strange."

"Huh?" Professor Hu was confused. "What's strange about me?"

Tang Xiu said faintly, “The first time I saw you, I felt a very strong death aura from you. You’re either working in a funeral parlor or a crematory, or you’re probably a grave robber. I can see that there’s a long scar on your left neck. If I’m not mistaken, you’ve encountered a zombie, yes?”

Bam...

Professor Hu suddenly stood up with an incredible light in his eyes as he stared at Tang Xiu. After taking deep breaths, he asked with a deep tone, “How did you know?”

At the side, Le Baiyi’s face also changed drastically.

“Sit down!” Tang Xiu waved his hand and said lightly.

Professor Hu was aware of losing his manners. He sat back on his seat but still stared at Tang Xiu, wanting to obtain the answer from him.

Tang Xiu said, “Nowadays, with this peaceful age, ordinary people rarely deal with corpses anymore. People who just died have only low quantities of death qi in their bodies, and even if living people do stay with them for 10-15 days, they would only become a little contaminated. You’re a living person, but you have death qi inside you. That means that you’ve been dealing with the bones of the dead for many years. And I think that scar on your neck must have been left behind by a zombie’s claw. Furthermore, the scar has been lacquered black, which is the result from the residual corpse poison.”

“Did you deduce from from these?” Professor Hu asked.

“No.” Tang Xiu shook his head. “In fact, the first time I went to your shop, I’d already noticed that something was not right. Your place is painted black everywhere, which proves that you like to stay in gloomy and dark environments. I’m sure you were not like this before.”

Professor Hu’s face was solemn. “Indeed, I wasn’t like that before.”

“Do you wonder about it?” Tang Xiu said lightly.

“Why?” Professor Hu asked with a sank tone.

Tang Xiu pointed at his heart's position and lightly said, “Although I don’t know what method you used to eliminate part of that deadly corpse poison, however, some of it is still inside your body. At that time, although it didn’t claim your life, but it has given you a hidden danger deep inside your body. Give me your hand and I’ll check the condition of your body.”

"You know medical skills?" Professor Hu hurriedly asked.

“I know a little!” Tang Xiu said faintly.

Again?

At the side, Le Baiyi and Mu Wanying looked at each other in dismay. At this moment, they looked at Tang Xiu as if he was an omnipotent god!

Was this also only knowing a little?

His line of slightly knowing something was definitely a deep attainment on that subject.

Le Baiyi said deeply, “Old Hu, let him check you!”

Professor Hu gave him his wrist.

Tang Xiu’s finger checked Professor Hu’s pulse. First was his left hand, and then the right one. A minute later, he took his hand back. Shaking his head, he said, “It looks like it’s more serious than I thought. Are you having nightmares and waking up every night recently? Having poor sleep quality and constantly sweating, as well as spitting out black viscous sputum after coughing for a while whenever you wake up?”

Aghast, Professor Hu was overwhelmed with shock as his pupils contracted fiercely. “That’s exactly my condition!”

“The corpse poison has invaded the arteries in your heart and is corroding it, slowly. As short as six months and as long as a year, your death’s time is imminent!”

## Chapter 227: Like a Deity

---

Professor Hu's face instantly turned pale upon hearing it.

Worry was written all over Le Baiyi's face as he hastily asked, "Tang... Younger Brother Tang, since you can check Old Hu's condition, do you have any way to treat him? Please help cure him. No matter what the price is, we're willing to pay!"

Tang Xiu glanced at him and asked, "Are you willing to give me your Wintertide Fluorites and Star Fragment Stones?"

"I can't!" Le Baiyi shook his head.

Tang Xiu's face turned cold.

Le Baiyi paused for a moment before speaking again, "Brother Tang, before going to the first floor, I talked some nonsense with Old Hu, that if you can win against Zhu Xiang, I'm willing to give those two ores to you. So you don't need to request this condition at all."

"Give it to me?"

Tang Xiu looked at him with astonishment, as the cold expression on his face gradually receded. After a moment of silence, he slowly said, "Find the Golden Cicada Grass and the Night Lily. For the best treatment, you also need to find some Caterpillar Fungus of top quality as well as 500 years-old Chinese

Knotweed. Find me after you get those herbs.”

“Brother Tang, where do I find these herbs? I have heard about the Chinese Knotweed, but I never heard about this Golden Cicada Grass and this Night Lily.”

“Go to Star City and find Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical’s Chen Zhizhong. He sells Chinese herbal medicines, so he should be able to find them.” Tang Xiu didn’t speak for a moment, as he then slowly replied.

“You know Chen Zhizhong?” Professor Hu said.

“Yes, he’s my apprentice.” Tang Xiu said lightly.

"What?!!"

Professor Hu and Le Baiyi exclaimed at the same time. They looked at Tang Xiu with disbelief. It was as though they had auditory hallucinations and heard wrong.

Looking at the their inconceivable expressions, Mu Wanying was confused. “Who’s Chen Zhizhong? Is this Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical business very big?”

Nodding, Professor Hu pressed down the shock in his heart and replied, “Yes, Chen Zhizhong is the owner of this company, which mainly engages in Chinese herbal medicines. It’s a major company, and if I remember correctly, the total assets of his Endless Virtue

Pharmaceutical surpass 10 billion.”

Mu Wanying was surprised. “So to say, this means that Tang Xiu’s apprentice turns out to be a billionaire big boss?”

“He’s just an in-name disciple of mine. Wanting to be my direct disciple has harsh requirements. Alright, let’s us not discuss this matter. In short, you need to hurry. The longer you delay this, the more difficult your predicament will be. If you can’t find those herbs within two or three months, the poison will flow and spread all over your body. Even the Gods won’t be able to save you by then.” Tang Xiu said indifferently.

“I’ll go to Star City tomorrow morning.” Professor Hu quickly said.

Tang Xiu raised his brows. “Since you want to go to Star City tomorrow, then you might as well go together with me! I was in a hurry coming to Tianjin City, and since my business here has been taken care of, I also have to go back.”

Le Baiyi said with a low voice, “Younger Brother Tang, give me your address! I’ll send someone to deliver the Wintertide Fluorites and Star Fragment Stones to Star City tomorrow. Moreover, you haven’t mentioned about your condition for treating Old Hu!”

“You’re really a good old friend! Since you’re willing to stand up for your old friend, then please take care of me in Shanghai University.” Tang Xiu said.



“Huh?” Le Baiyi was puzzled. “Shanghai Uni? You want to be admitted into Shanghai Uni?”

“Yes.” Tang Xiu said. “I have filled my application form and also chose the Department of Archeology in Shanghai University. By September 1st, I’ll have to go there and register myself.”

“The CET’s results and admission grade have yet to be released, yes? Such confidence. Are you really sure that you’ll pass the passing grade for Shanghai Uni?” Mu Wanying asked curiously.

“Do you think I’d say this if I had no assurance?” Tang Xiu asked back.

"This..." Mu Wanying was at a loss for words.

Although today was her first time seeing Tang Xiu and had not much contact with him, she actually realized that Tang Xiu was very skillful. Most importantly, he was extremely low-key and modest. Looking at his self-confident appearance, she suddenly felt that she would be able to see him in Shanghai University this September.

After nearly an hour, the box’s doorbell was sounded, as a middle-aged woman then entered. Her eyes swept over everyone inside before landing on Tang Xiu. She then asked, “Are you Mr. Tang Xiu, Master Tang?”

“I am!” Tang Xiu calmly nodded.

The middle-aged woman handed a long box to Tang Xiu, saying, “Mr. Zhu send me to give this to you! Since I’ve done my errand, I’ll leave if you don’t have any other orders for me.”

Tang Xiu nodded. After the middle-aged woman left, he directly opened the box and took out the painting scroll from inside.

Le Baiyi, Professor Hu and Mu Wanying also approached to look.

After appraising it, Professor Hu exclaimed with a sigh, “This is indeed the authentic work of the famous painter Li Sixun of the Tang Dynasty era. It seems that even if Zhu Xiang has a poor disposition, but he still has some conscience.”

Tang Xiu himself didn’t much knowledge about domestic paintings. But he could see that it was a hundreds of years’ historical painting. After keeping it, he got up and said, “Alright, since I’ve received the painting, I should bid farewell to all of you.”

Professor Hu quickly asked, “Brother Tang, where are you going?”

“I need to find a hotel to spend the night. Then I’ll go back to Star City early in the morning tomorrow.” Tang Xiu said.

“Younger Brother Tang, I’ll arrange accommodations for you.” Professor Hu said.

Tang Xiu shook his head. “No need, thanks! Since you’re going to Star City with me tomorrow, you should also go back and pack up early! Let’s meet at the airport tomorrow morning.”

“Alright!” Professor Hu nodded.

Le Baiyi quickly said, “Younger Brother Tang, if you don’t mind, please just follow us! We’re also staying in a hotel nearby.”

Tang Xiu thought, and then nodded.

Tianjin City’s 5-Star Sheraton Hotel.

Tang Xiu followed Le Baiyi and Mu Wanying here, while Le Baiyi personally ordered the presidential suite for him.

Originally, Le Baiyi also wanted to talk more, however, Tang Xiu refused him and said that he needed to rest early. He wanted to take a good look at the Demon Stone coffin he purchased from Professor Hu’s shop. The Demon Stone coffin’s lid was closed, but it was able to be opened. But, since he had no time to study it before, he didn’t know what object that was stuffed inside.

However, just after he had a shower and was about to study the Demon Stone coffin, his room’s door was knocked.

“Le Baiyi?” A cold glint flashed from Tang Xiu’s eyes. He walked toward the door to open it. It was not Le Baiyi, but Mu Wanying, faintly smiling, as though a beautiful fairy that had descended to

Earth.

“Is there something you need?” Tang Xiu stood at the door and asked.

A certain expression flashed from Mu Wanying’s eyes. Tang Xiu didn’t even seem to have the intention to ask inside and sit. She smiled, “Won’t you ask me to come inside?”

“It’s late. It’s not good for a single man and woman to stay together inside the room. If you have something to say, do tell me now, since I must rest!”

"You..."

As dumbfounded as she was, Mu Wanying looked at Tang Xiu at without knowing whether to laugh or cry. If not because of the exceptionally limpid and clear expression in Tang Xiu’s eyes, she would’ve thought that Tang Xiu was acting on purpose. However, since she indeed had her reasons to see him this late, she said, “I’m a girl and I don’t have any fear, what are you afraid of? Anyway, I do have something to talk to you.”

Tang Xiu hesitated for a moment, only then did he give way. As Mu Wanying entered the room, he closed the door, pointing to the sofa at the corner. “Please have a sit!”

Mu Wanying herself had a noble young lady’s mannerism. She slowly sat down and looked at Tang Xiu who sat in front of her,

smiling. “Frankly speaking, a young man such as you, is really rare.”

“And a woman such as you, I’ve seen quite a lot, actually.” Tang Xiu replied.

Mu Wanying stared blankly for a moment, before she involuntarily laughed. “You’re really one of a kind. Actually, my purpose to see you is that I heard you don’t like painting and calligraphy, so I want to buy that ‘Sailboats and Pavilion’ in your hand. Say your price!”

Tang Xiu turned his head and looked at the said painting that he had put on the cabined. He then calmly said, “You quote the price. If I’m content with it, then I’ll sell it. If not, then you can leave.”

Mu Wanying seemed to have long thought the price she could afford. “I know that this painting is very precious, but I’m kinda limited on money. I can only give you 6 million yuan at the most!”

“Huh?” Tang Xiu was surprised. “Antique paintings are really that valuable?”

“You don’t know the value of antique calligraphies and paintings at all?” Mu Wanying was astonished.

“Nope.” Tang Xiu shook his head. “I rarely studied it, so I’m really clueless.”

With a strange expression, Mu Wanying looked at him and said, “It seems that I put the price way too high then. Alright, how is it? You want to sell it?”

Tang Xiu waved his hand and said, “Take it away! This thing is useless to me anyway. It’s better to exchange it for real money.”

“OK. I’ll transfer the money to you,” Mu Wanying said.

Shortly after, Tang Xiu received the six million transfer text message notification.

When he came to Tianjin City, he only had a few million yuan. He spent several hundred thousand to buy the Demon Stone coffin. Added with the Wintertide Fluorites and the Star Fragment Stone, he had to ask Kang Xia to transfer the money to him. After selling four calligraphies, he made 16 million. And counting money, he already had 19 million yuan now.

And now, his Sailboats and Pavilion painting was sold for six million, so he had a total of 25 million.

Tang Xiu directly transferred 20 million back to Kang Xia without hesitation and sent her a message. Then, he looked at Mu Wanying, saying, “You got what you wanted, right? So please leave.”

With an odd and strange expression and tone, Mu Wanying asked, “Do you really want me to leave, so quickly? Tang Xiu, you

have no problem with your sexual orientation, right? You don't even feel attracted to my beauty?"

Tang Xiu shook his head. "I'm a normal man. Even for me, you're indeed very attractive. If you want to warm my bed, I won't refuse. However, having a one-night stand with no feelings and sentiments attached, has no meaning and is actually very boring. Of course, there's also an exception."

Listening to Tang Xiu's argument, Mu Wanying was puzzled. "What exception?"

Tang Xiu said apathetically, "It's your kind, a virgin. You want your first time, but then annoying troubles would come afterwards. I'm a man who is not afraid of anything whatsoever, but I don't like to have annoying troubles."

## Chapter 228: Runic Fiend Bone

---

Mu Wanying was dumbstruck as she looked at Tang Xiu. Never did she expect that Tang Xiu would actually have such argument. Furthermore, as indifferent as she was, this was her first time hearing such words from a male.

It was novel! She was somewhat embarrassed and shy!

Her pure white oval face blushed. She quickly stood up and strode toward the door. She was afraid of Tang Xiu seeing her shy and embarrassed expression.

“You don’t want the painting?” Tang Xiu looked at her back, his mouth slightly tilted up.

Mu Wanying halted. She could feel that her face was a bit hot. She turned around almost instantly, rushing toward the cabinet and picking up the Sailboats and Pavilion. Then, she rushed to the door, opened it and ran away.

After returning back to her room, she closed the door and leaned on it, blushing ear to ear and covered her chest.

She didn’t know why, but her heart was beating fast. Perhaps it was because Tang Xiu said that she was a virgin. Maybe the subject was just beyond the scope of her ability to accept. In short, she was kind of flustered. After a long period of time, only then did she calm down.



“That guy is truly eccentric!”

Mu Wanying gently heaved a sigh and walked inside with a bit of a shy expression.

Inside Tang Xiu’s hotel room.

Tang Xiu gently opened the yellow bag and took out the Demon Stone coffin. After fiddling with it for a while, he found that the coffin lid was inseparably attached. If he didn’t use his perception to analyze it, he wouldn’t have been able to find the slit between the two. Furthermore, the Demon Stone itself had the characteristic to block spiritual sense. Thus, he couldn’t find out what was inside.

Finally, Tang Xiu stopped observing it, and silently released his star force.

"Click..."

The slit was cracked open. Just as Tang Xiu recovered his hand lightning fast, the lid gently floated up.

"This is..."

Tang Xiu’s pupils contracted. He could hardly believe what he saw. Despite his firm and tough personality, with few things that

could shock him anymore, but the object inside the coffin gave him a shock as huge as a tide. Accurately saying, it was not only shock, but much closer to horror.

What was placed inside the coffin, was a Runic Fiend Bone!

Tang Xiu knew clearly that this was the Runic Fiend Bone of the Great Fiend King. Moreover, it was none other but the Great Fiend King, Ha Silu, who pestered him for thousands of years.

And this Runic Fiend Bone was precisely the one that he had taken from the chest of that fiend's body.

"How is this possible? Ha Silu was originally the one who refined this Runic Fiend Bone. Given his lone wolf disposition and eccentric personality in his 20 thousand years of life, he didn't even have any disciples. How could this possibly appear on Earth? Could it be... that he died already? But, if he had died, who brought his Runic Fiend Bone to Earth. Could it be, Yan'er?"

Tang Xiu's face constantly changed. He forcefully suppressed the shock and horror in his heart, trying hard to calm his surging mood.

No matter what, this Runic Fiend Bone was not from the Ha Silu, this object was too important for him. Tang Xiu was even sure that, with this Runic Fiend Bone in hand, his cultivation base would be comparable to an Initial Stage Immortal within a few years.

“Unfortunately, I’m too weak and my cultivation base is not enough. I can’t withstand the energy contained within this Runic Fiend Bone, it’s impossible for me to refine it! Unless my cultivation on the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis technique has reached the great circle perfection of the first stage of Stars Tyrannical Body.”

Tang Xiu took a deep breath and firmly pressed the coffin’s lid with his finger to close it. While holding the Demon Stone coffin gently, he quietly absorbed the demon force contained within.

At present, he was neither able nor had the means to absorb the demon force contained in the Runic Fiend Bone into his body, more's the pity. But since he had the Demon Stone, he could siphon the demon force contained in the coffin to temper and strengthen his body while increasing his cultivation base realm.

Using the cultivation technique’s route in accordance with the Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis, Tang Xiu quietly circulated the star force inside his body. At the moment, the slightly bright heavenly circuit stars instantly dimmed as the star force flowed in all directions as though the surging tide. At the same time, the demon force contained inside the Demon Stone coffin flowed through his palm into his body.

The moment the demon force came in contact with the star force, it didn’t cause any conflict, instead it blended and fused with it like water. Then, it changed into a transparent liquid that surged into his body.

Tang Xiu keenly felt that his physical strength was rising at an

astonishing speed. The transparent liquid unceasingly rinsed his body, washing and quenching it. It was as though blacksmithing, forcing out the impurities of his body continuously and repeatedly tempered it.

Precisely because of this transparent liquid, it caused the star force to flow in all directions. The surging flow increased by dozens of times more than before as it instilled itself into his body, while part of it was converted into his cultivation base.

It was painful, yet also comfortable! Tang Xiu clearly felt the contrast. And gradually, his consciousness fell into darkness as he sat there, motionless.

Time went by.

Tang Xiu maintained the same posture until the first ray of sunshine shined in the early morning. As he opened his eyes, he felt that he was full of energy and couldn't hide his smile.

He could clearly feel the width of his skin. It had been pulled to the limit as a strong stream of star force surged between the layers of his skin. His star force had undergone essential change; it felt like it was part of his body now. At the moment, he had the feeling that even if someone were to shoot him, the bullets would probably be unable to pierce his skin.

“At last. I’ve finally reached the Great Circle Perfection in the Skin Strengthening Stage. I’m only a step away from breaking through this stage and entering the Flesh Strengthening Stage.

Furthermore, the strength of my physique has probably already surpassed the Flesh Strengthening Stage. I wonder, how powerful my constitution would be once I reach this stage?”

Inwardly, Tang Xiu was looking forward to it.

Suddenly his brows wrinkled, a foul body stench drifted into his nostrils. Looking at the thin layer of black-grayish material on his skin, he shook his body. There were surprisingly more impurities excreted out of his body than before.

He went to the bathroom and comfortably took a bath. Only after the stench of his body was completely cleansed was he contented and finished bathing. After putting clothing, he went out of his room spiritedly. Since he didn't know Le Baiyi and Mu Wanying's room numbers and didn't have their contact numbers, he decided not to greet them. He directly left the hotel and took a taxi to the airport.

Much to his surprise, he unexpectedly saw Professor Hu already at the airport ticket lounge, waiting for him.

“Ah, so early?” Tang Xiu approached him and asked.

Forcing out a smile, Professor Hu replied, “We only agreed to meet at the airport, but we didn't set the time. I did plan to go to the hotel to find you, but since I was afraid you'd leave early in the morning, I came earlier here and waited for you.”

“Alright, let’s walk. I haven’t bought a ticket, though. Let’s buy a ticket first and then find a place to eat something.”

“Alright!”

At Tianjin’s Sheraton Hotel.

Wearing a long skirt and elegant loose long hair, Mu Wanying came to Tang Xiu’s hotel room and knocked the door. After waiting for a long time and having no response, she then went to the hotel’s front lobby and discovered that Tang Xiu had checked out and left.

“What? He left?” Le Baiyi was surprised.

“Yes.” Mu Wanying nodded as she forced out a smile. “He just checked out an hour ago.”

“It’s normal though. We forgot to exchange contact numbers yesterday, and he also didn’t know where we were staying. Anyway, I’ll call Old Hu, they agreed to meet at the airport today, so I will ask him to send me Tang Xiu’s contact number.”

However, when he dialed the number and spoke a few words, he took back his phone and wryly smiled, “Youngsters nowadays are awfully lazy, but this Tang Xiu is quite an amazing youngster. He got up early and rushed to the airport. I’ve told Old Hu to ask Tang Xiu’s cell number. After returning back to Shanghai, I’ll send the Wintertide Fluorites and Star Fragment Stones to Star City.”

“Teacher, you seem to care about this Tang Xiu now, eh?” Mu Wanying chuckled.

Le Baiyi sighed, “I can’t help it. He piqued my curiosity. Although we just only met him last night, haven’t we also realized that he’s very mysterious? Are you not curious about him too?”

“Yeah, he’s indeed very mysterious. And I’m also curious about him,” Mu Wanying responded.

“It’s alright, we still have a lot of time to know him. Being able to draw a painting that can dazzle someone to the point of being lost in thought, writing valuable and noble calligraphies, good temperament, and a youngster that can be a professor easily. You said right that I’m really curious about him.” Le Baiyi smiled.

Mu Wanying replied with light smile, “You missed two things, Teacher.”

“Huh?” Le Baiyi was puzzled. “What did I miss?”

“He’s a proficient medic and also the Master of the Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical’s Big Boss, Chen Zhizhong.”

Le Baiyi patted his forehead and smiled, “Ah, I’m really old and forgetful... Yes. This young man is full of secrets. I really want to know him thoroughly. To be honest, my whole life I’ve been immersing myself in the world’s geography, and I’ve met

numerous outstanding geniuses while conducting archeological researches in Shanghai University. But only now did I realize that nobody is more outstanding than him.”

Mu Wanying lightly smiled, “He’s indeed very outstanding, but also quite... a marvel!”

“Huh?” Le Baiyi was confused. “What do you mean?”

Mu Wanying’s charming face blushed recalling Tang Xiu’s nonsensical argument last night. She shook her head and said, “Teacher, we’ve finished our work here in Tianjin City, are you going back to Shanghai? Or are you staying here with me in Beijing for a while? My Grandpa has been wanting to talk with you for a long time now.”

Le Baiyi hesitated for a moment before he replied, “I’ll go back to Shanghai first! I need to deliver the Wintertide Fluorites and the Star Fragment Stones to Tang Xiu. Then I’ll go to Beijing and see your Grandpa.”

“Alright, then I’ll be waiting for you in Beijing.” Mu Wanying replied in a soft voice.

Le Baiyi smiled, “Okay. Tell your Grandpa. He’d better prepare a good bottle of wine in advance for me. I’m going to get drunk with him.”

“No worries, Teacher. I’ll convey your message to Grandpa.” Mu



Wanying covered her mouth and lightly laughed.

# Chapter 229: A Very Busy Person

---

At Star City.

After Tang Xiu and Professor Hu arrived at the airport, Chen Zhizhong was personally waiting for them since Tang Xiu had notified him in advance.

“Master, you’re back!” Chen Zhizhong respectfully greeted Tang Xiu and then glanced at Professor Hu immediately afterward.

“Hmm! Since the matter has been handled, I rushed back to save time. By the way, about the following issues, Kang Xia has told me that you’re doing well. As soon as its concluded, quickly invest the capital on the upcoming project. I’m very short on money, I’ll be relying on the project’s conclusion to recover my funds.”

Chen Zhizhong forced out a smile and said, “I’ll bear your message in mind, Master. I’ll urge Long Hanwen and the others.”

Tang Xiu then introduced, “He’s called... ah, forget it. You can call him Professor Hu directly! I just went to Tianjin to see him, whereas he needs to see you to find medicinal herbs. Help him find them as fast as possible. After all, he doesn’t have much time.”

“After you called me last night, I’ve instructed my subordinates to search them. So the results should be coming out in these few days.” Chen Zhizhong replied.

“Alright, you manage this matter! I have to go back to South Gate Town first, so you arrange for his accommodation! If he wants to stay in Star City, find a place for him to stay. And buy him a ticket if he wants to go back.”

“Alright!” Chen Zhizhong respectfully nodded.

Professor Hu was shocked inwardly upon seeing Tang Xiu and Chen Zhizhong’s exchange.

He knew Chen Zhizhong’s identity and his lofty status in the country. When he came home last night, he carried an investigation on Chen Zhizhong and his Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical. From that, he found that his company’s assets were estimated to be at 10 billion yuan, two or three times more compared to him.

At present, he was truly filled with intense curiosity toward Tang Xiu’s identity!

At South Gate Town.

When Tang Xiu came back, he found his mother—Su Lingyun chatting with Gu Yin, whereas a middle-aged woman and a young girl in aprons did the cleaning in the hall.

“Hi, Mom. Has Sister Mu left already?” Tang Xiu put his luggage on the sofa and asked with a smile.

Su Lingyun smiled, “Son, I just knew last night that you were actually outside the town. So, I stayed here with Little Yin. Your Big Sis has already left. She said that she’ll be out of town with her four instructors for a week. Before she left, she also entrusted the staff of the Property Management Office to help us find two nannies.”

Tang Xiu nodded and saw that the two nannies had stopped working. Then he lightly said to them, “There are two places in the villa that don’t need to be cleaned up. One is my study room and the other one is the storehouse at the outside.”

“Understood!”

“Alright!”

The two nannies nodded and replied.

Tang Xiu turned to look at Gu Yin as he smiled, “And you? How come you’re not studying today?”

“The morning’s course has already ended. Teacher said that studying in the early morning is the time when we can grasp things very clearly. So now we have the courses very early every day. Anyways, Master, can you give me some money?”

“What do you want to do with the money?” Tang Xiu was surprised.

“I heard that the course’s Math teacher said that there’s a sick student in their class. And their sickness is very serious as well, whereas his family doesn’t have enough money. A lot of students in the class have donated. I... I also want to donate some money.” Gu Yin said.

“You didn’t tell your mother about it?” Tang Xiu asked.

“I did.” Gu Yin’s expression turned gloomy, saying with a low voice, “But Mom didn’t want to give me! She said that I need to handle my issues by myself. If I want to help others, then I must work hard to learn from Master. She said I can only help others after I have the ability in the future.”

Tang Xiu nodded. “Your Mom has said a lot of things, it seems. But goodness has to be trained from early age too. Anyways, it’s alright. I’ll give you some money.”

"Really?" Gu Yin’s eyes brightened up, surprised.

Tang Xiu lightly laughed, "When did Master cheat you?"

“Never.” Gu Yin immediately shook her head and said seriously, "Master has never fooled me!"

Tang Xiu pinched her pink little face with a contented expression. Then, he looked at Su Lingyun, saying, “Mom, please stay here! I still have a lot of things to take care of, perhaps I won’t return home until later.”

Su Lingyun smiled, “Alright. I’ll take care of Yinyin here.”

“You don’t have to stay here all the time, though. If you don’t feel relieved leaving the restaurant, you can go there any time. You can take your time taking Yinyin to play in the restaurant after she finished her morning course. Besides, it’s also no good if she feels bored staying at home all the time.” Tang Xiu said.

“I know. You can rest assured, Son!” Su Lingyun said with a smile.

Tang Xiu nodded. He then grabbed the things he brought to the study room on the second floor. There was a lot of precious objects in his study room. After hesitating for a moment, Tang Xiu decided to buy a large safe box.

The internet was very convenient. Tang Xiu also adapted to use the internet service more recently. After browsing the internet, he chose a half a man’s height large safe. After paying it through online transaction, he put away his mobile.

After lunch.

Tang Xiu left South Gate Town and drove to the abandoned winery he had bought. The site had changed greatly as a lot of broken machineries had been pushed out to the trucks that came and left unceasingly from the winery’s door.

“Given this scale, I might as well buy a newly built winery!”

Tang Xiu shook his head and smiled wryly before dialing Scarblade Qiang’s cell number.

"Hello, Boss?"

Scarblade Qiang’s voice came out.

“Yes, it’s me! I’m at the winery’s front entrance. Where are you?” Tang Xiu said.

“I’m inside! Wait a bit, Boss, I’ll go out immediately.” Scarblade Qiang said.

A few minutes later.

With dirt all over his body and drenched in sweat, Scarblade Qiang dashed from inside, whereas two men wearing safety helmets, of whom Tang Xiu wasn’t familiar with, followed behind Scarblade Qiang.

“Boss, you came to inspect the work?” Wiping the sweat on his face, Scarblade Qiang laughed.

“Yes, I want to have a look at the progress. By the way, who are they?” Tang Xiu said.

Scarblade Qiang quickly introduced them, “They’re the master technicians Chief Kang sent. This is Li Yang and the other one is Lu Wei. They’re really great! Without their help, I wouldn’t have been able to renovate the winery and would only get a headache!”

"Hi, Boss. It’s a pleasure to see you!"

Li Yang and Lu Wei greeted him at the same time.

A shocked expression could be seen on their faces. They had never thought that the Big Boss of the Magnificent Tang Corporation would be this young.

“Nice to see you, too! Anyway, how is the progress of the winery? Tell me when the winery will finish the renovations. Has the initial work been completed?” Tang Xiu nodded and asked.

Lu Yang said, “The initial stage will be completed in around two months at the most. After that we’ll test the machineries and the production line.”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment. He then slowly shook his head and said, “It’s too slow. Tell Kang Xia to add another engineering team. The winery’s renovation must be completed within half a month. And the first batch must be produced in a month. Tell her to not be afraid of spending money in this initial stage. Once the first batch has been produced, I can recover all the funds invested.”



Li Yang and Lu Wei looked at each other, doubting Tang Xiu's words.

Scarblade Qiang, on the other hand, trusted Tang Xiu a lot. Looking highly spirited, he seriously said, "Boss, I'll pass your message to Chief Kang and we'll also firmly obey your order to finish it at the scheduled time."

"Take me inside and show me around!" Tang Xiu patted his shoulder.

"Alright!"

For an hour, accompanied by Scarblade Qiang and the other workers, Tang Xiu inspected the winery. He was also fairly content with it. Most of the machineries in the winery had been demolished, with a few parts still usable. Even the office building and the staff quarters could also be utilized.

Finally, the four came to a stop at the unmodified plant.

"Boss, this one is the original machinery of the winery. Although it looks shabby from the outside, but the inside has been cleaned up, we'll have no problem using them for another eight years. As per your request, Chief Kang has also purchased a number of wine production machineries recently, while I have also practiced the winemaking technique you taught me, as well as experimented with the wine recipe dozens of times. That brewed wine is truly great." Scarblade Qiang explained.

“You still have samples?” Tang Xiu asked.

Scarblade Qiang said, “Yes. We still have two casks inside this plant!”

“Take me there. I want to test the flavor.” Tang Xiu said.

Scarblade Qiang complied and took the lead into the workshop. After that, he quickly took out a cask of wine and opened the sealing and cautiously poured him a bowl. He handed it over to Tang Xiu, saying, “This the result after dozens of tries, Boss. Please, taste it!”

Tang Xiu took the bowl and tasted it a sip. He shook his head and said, “The flavor is good, but it’s far from my expectations. Did you really follow the recipe I gave you?”

Scarblade Qiang nodded, “Exactly the same.”

Tang Xiu said with a strange tone, “It’s strange. If you followed the recipe exactly, the brewed wine’s flavor should be better than this, by many times. What could the problem be?”

Scarblade Qiang replied with a puzzled expression, “Boss, this liquor you said, how could it exist in this world? I think apart from the heavenly Jade Nectar Wine, there’s simply no other wine like that, no?”

Jade Nectar Wine?

Tang Xiu keenly caught the name from Scarblade Qiang as his eyes suddenly turned bright. He turned to around to send Li Yang and Lu Wei away. After they left, he said with a deep tone, “Replace the grain used to brew the wine and try experimenting with glutinous rice. Then, find some fresh bamboo leaves and soak them in the brewing water. Remember, the bamboo leaves must be fresh, be sure to wash it cleanly before you put them into the brewing water.”

Scarblade Qiang nodded, “Understood! I’ll do it later and try it a few times after I buy something.”

Tang Xiu nodded, saying seriously, “Scarblade Qiang, my other business will be very difficult to make a lot of money in a short term. This period is precisely when I need money the most, so you must be very meticulous. I promise you that I’ll definitely make you a millionaire if you follow me.”

## Chapter 230: Acting Like a Snob

---

“Don’t worry, Boss! This Scarblade is your follower; even if I die, I’ll become your ghost. Tell me what do, I’ll give my best.” Scarblade Qiang nodded.

Tang Xiu nodded contentedly. “I just found that nobody guards the storehouse in front of the door. Bear in mind that the recipe I gave you must be kept a secret. Also, the production process of the fermented wine must be done in a separate plant. The workers you hire must be responsible for only one process. Wait until you’ve rebuilt the winery. By that time, you’ll going to be producing wine on a large scale. Then I’ll order Kang Xia to hire a large number of security guards. Everything must be done in absolute secrecy.”

“I got it, Boss. I won’t let another soul aside from me know the winemaking process, as well as the recipe. I’ll arrange some people to stand guard here and absolutely won’t let anyone come in.” Scarblade Qiang said.

Tang Xiu patted his shoulder and said, “Good. I have said everything I should tell you. As for the rest, do your best to manage it.”

"I'll send you out!" Scarblade Qiang quickly said.

Tang Xiu didn’t refuse him, allowing Scarblade Qiang to escort him out. Only, he suddenly realized that there was no transportation in this block. But he didn’t let Scarblade Qiang give him a ride. After having walked for two kilometers, he happened

to see a taxi.

“Little Brother, where are you going?” The taxi driver asked.

“Go to Star City Chinese Medical Hospital.” Tang Xiu said.

“Okay!”

The taxi driver replied and started his car. Tang Xiu quickly arrived at Star City Chinese Medical Hospital’s entrance. After having paid the fare, he didn’t go to the hospital directly, instead going to a bank nearby.

He promised to give Gu Yin some money, but he didn’t have much cash on him, so Tang Xiu decided to make sure to stash some cash at home to prepare for a rainy day.

Inside the bank.

There were a lot of people inside, withdrawing and depositing money. After taking a number, Tang Xiu stood in a corner and waited quietly. It was a small bank, having only three counters.

After an hour, Tang Xiu frowned deeply. He realized that his number was big and there were still 23 people in front of him. However, the numbers were preceded by the A and V labels. There was only one counter for the A label, whereas for the V one, two counters were on service. Most of the time, there was nearly nobody handling the service for one of them.

“It’s almost 4 PM and there are only five people in front. I don’t know how long I should wait!”

Tang Xiu smiled wryly and shook his head. He felt that waiting here was a waste of time. He planned to come to the Star City Chinese Medical Hospital to see Li Hongji today, having a look at his office and treat a few cases. But who could have thought that he would be delayed in the bank for this long?

At this time, a young man with sunglasses came to the number machine. After taking the number, the number was immediately called, whereas the young man directly went to the V counter.

Tang Xiu frowned, puzzled. After hesitating for a moment, he quickly recognized someone with a manager badge in the lobby. Then, he went over and asked, “Hello. Might I ask something? That person has just arrived, why would he get the service directly? Whereas my turn hasn’t come even though I’ve been waiting for an hour?”

The lobby manager was a middle-aged woman. Upon hearing his inquiry, she said, “Show me your number, please!”

Tang Xiu handed it over.

The lobby manager looked at it. She then gave the number back to Tang Xiu, saying, “Your number is an ordinary one and that person is a VIP client, so he can go directly to the VIP counter. If you want to be the same as him and not have to line up, you can

upgrade your account and become our bank's VIP member."

"How can I become your bank's VIP member?" Tang Xiu was puzzled and asked.

"Your account should be no less than 100 thousand, with the deposit period being more than two months. May I ask about the recent transactions in your bank account in the last two months? Do you have more than 100 thousand yuan of deposit every day?" The lobby manager said.

Tang Xiu stared blankly for a moment. Then, he shook his head, saying, "No."

A bit of contempt was revealed in the lobby manager's eyes as she said indifferently, "If not, then please wait! The others are waiting, so you also have to do the same!"

Tang Xiu's face changed slightly, as he then spoke with a deep tone, "I think your bank also has more than one way to become a VIP client, yes?"

Impatience could be seen on the lobby manager's face. "Of course this is not the only way. But do you have 1 million in your account? Or a transaction of more than 1 million yuan? Well, if you do, you can also enjoy the VIP treatment."

Having said that, she didn't give any more chances for Tang Xiu to speak and strode to the other side.

Tang Xiu took a deep breath and strode over to catch up with her. Then, he said with a deep voice, “You just said that I can get a direct service if the transaction is more than 1 million.”

The lobby manager sized Tang Xiu up before replying, “Then take another number and replace it to a V label. But I might as well tell you that if your transaction is less than 1 million, the VIP counter won’t give you any services.”

The young man who just came had already finished his service. As he was passing by Tang Xiu and the lobby manager, he heard their conversation. A bit of disdain was revealed on his face as he berated, “Buddy, don’t act like you have money so brazenly. At your age, you are transacting more than 1 million? Bah, it’s a lame joke...”

Having said that, he shook his head and walked toward outside with contempt on his face.

Being despised?

Inwardly, Tang Xiu secretly smiled.

Shortly after, he went to the number machine and took the V label. After his number was announced, Tang Xiu immediately went to the VIP counter. Then, he spoke to the staff in front of him, “Hi, I want to withdraw some money.”



The staff took Tang Xiu's bank card and asked, "How much would you like to withdraw?"

"1 million, cash!" Tang Xiu said.

"I beg your pardon? How much?" The staff stared blankly for a moment, before immediately turning surprised.

"1 million!" Tang Xiu confirmed.

The staff turned his head to a middle-aged man, the top leader of the office, and spoke a few words. The latter then turned toward Tang Xiu and said, "I'm really sorry, Sir. The amount of money you want to withdraw is rather big; we haven't prepared that much in cash. Therefore, I'd have to trouble you to make an appointment in advance and wait until tomorrow."

"But your bank's lobby manager told me that this VIP counter only handles the transaction of more 1 million yuan for non-members of the bank. And now, I want to withdraw 1 million. But you tell me that I have to make an appointment first. Isn't this too ridiculous?"

The staff forced out a smile, "Sir, I hope you can forgive us. We only work here, while the rules and regulations of the bank are like this. So we have no choice on this either."

Tang Xiu knitted his brows and said, "Then you tell me, how much can you provide if I want to withdraw now?"

“If you’re going to withdraw at least 500 thousand, you should make an appointment in advance.” The staff hesitated before answering.

“Then I’ll take 500 thousand.” Tang Xiu said.

The staff spoke again with the middle-aged leader. Then, he got up and said, “Sir, I’d have to trouble you to enter the VIP private room next door. Since you want to withdraw a large amount of money, we’ll handle the business inside as to avoid any accidents.”

"So troublesome!"

Tang Xiu sighed. He now had the urge to establish a bank of his own. But although China gave permission to open private banks, there were many problems and numerous issues that were interlinked with the government. The relationship was inextricably linked, so he could only wish.

Carrying a black bag provided by the bank, Tang Xiu gave up on his plan to go to Star City Chinese Medical Hospital and directly rode back to South Gate Town. After returning back home, he called Li Hongji and told him that he would go to the hospital to give medical services tomorrow. Naturally, Li Hongji was overjoyed and repeatedly promised that he would be waiting for him in Chinese Medical Hospital early in the morning.

In the evening, after Gu Yin’s course tutor had finished teaching her, she and Tang Xiu chatted for awhile before he gave her 20

thousand yuan as Gu Yin's donation.

Star City's Baishi Hotel.

Yang Xianyu was holding a book, reading it quietly next to the room's window, whereas a frail, crooked old lady was asleep on the bed near him.

"Ring, ring, ring ..."

His mobile phone's ringtone interrupted his reading. He looked at the time and saw that it was already 8 PM. He didn't know who would call him at this time. Taking up his mobile and seeing the name ID on the screen, his face suddenly changed, as he immediately pressed the answer key.

"Hello, President Li, Yang Xianyu here."

"Hello, Mr. Yang. I didn't disturb your rest by calling this late, did I?" Li Hongji's laughter came out of the phone.

Yang Xianyu quickly said, "No, I wasn't sleeping. Ah, President Li, the reason for you call, could it be that Tang Xiu is prepared to give medical service in your hospital?"

"Yes. He just called me and said that he'll come tomorrow morning. If you're still in Star City, please come! Yang old foggy, Jiang Feng has mentioned me about it everyday recently." Li Hongji said.

Yang Xianyu laughed, “Haha, I know. And President Li, thanks. Despite you being so busy, you still remember my wife’s matter. I want to invite you to a drink after Tang Xiu treated her.”

"No problem!"

The phone was hung up.

An excited expression could be seen on Yang Xianyu’s face. These days were quite hard, bringing him suffering. He had visited a number of hospitals in Star City with his wife, but there was no hospital that could treat the strange disease his wife contracted. So now he placed all his hopes on Tang Xiu.

Immediately, he began to call his children, telling them to rush to Star City tonight no matter how busy they were. After that, he called Jiang Feng, thanking him unceasingly.

“Old Li, we’ve been friends for many years, so you don’t need to be that polite. Take a rest earlier. I’ll accompany you to Star City Hospital tomorrow.” Jiang Feng spoke on the phone.

“Old Jiang, are you going too?” Yang Xianyu stared blankly for a moment and hesitated as he asked.

Jiang Feng was also surprised. He immediately laughed bitterly, saying, “You don’t have to tell me, I won't forget about that. Besides, I also had some matters with him before. Well, forget it

then. I won't go tomorrow."

After hesitating for a moment, Yang Xianyu said, "That's not necessary. You must come! The matter between you and Tang Xiu had been written off. I can tell that he's not a petty and narrow-minded person, so he won't mind."

# Chapter 231: Being Doubted

---

Summertime, early in the morning. The heatwave still surged on in the entire world as if it was woken up along with the elapsing curtain of the night. After having breakfast, Tang Xiu rushed to Star City Chinese Medical Hospital.

“You finally came, Tang Xiu!”

With a bright expression on his face, Li Hongji stood outside the main building of Star City Chinese Medical Hospital. At his side were several important leaders of the hospital as he took the lead to greet Tang Xiu.

“It’s not 8 AM yet, I think. I didn’t come late, did I?” Tang Xiu smiled.

Li Hongji shook his head, “No, you’re not late. It’s just me who is impatient. Let’s walk. I’ll take you to your consultation room for you to take a look. If there’s something not to your satisfaction, I’ll order someone to change it.”

“Alright!” Tang Xiu replied. “President Li, I came to give medical service in the clinic, not to inspect the work. So you can let these leaders take care of their own work.”

Li Hongji had met Tang Xiu a few times, and he knew that Tang Xiu didn’t like to show off and being in the limelight. With a smile, he then told the other leaders to leave and took Tang Xiu by himself to the consultation room to have a look.

“It’s a good place. But I need your help to arrange a medical staff to directly assist me if there’s something I need.” After seeing the consultation room, Tang Xiu nodded and said.

“I’ll personally help you. So I can learn while convenient by following you.” Li Hongji said with a smile.

“No can do. You’re the distinguished President of the Chinese Medical Hospital. If you become the saddle horse for me and the news spreads out, it would create a disturbance, wouldn’t it? Please quickly arrange it!” Tang Xiu said humorlessly.

Hesitating, Li Hongji nodded and said, “Then you wait here for a while. The service in the hospital will begin at 8:30. I’ll go to arrange someone over here now.”

"Thank you!"

Tang Xiu went to the examination table and sat down beside it. He looked at the stethoscope and the other medical instruments placed above, putting everything directly into the drawer. He didn’t use Western medical devices and had no need of them. Traditional Chinese medical practitioners paid particular attention to close observation from the words and appearance of the patients and diagnosed the sickness through pulse-checking to trace their conditions.

A few minutes later.

Li Hongji came to the consultation room with a middle-aged woman that still looked a little attractive. The middle-aged woman wore a white coat with both hands placed in the pockets. The appearance of a well-known doctor.

“Tang Xiu, I have found someone to help you. She’s called Sun Wenjing, an extraordinarily skilled doctor in our Chinese Medical Hospital. She’s also very good in medicinal ingredients as well as medical skills. I’ve ordered her to assist you when you give consultation to the patients. If you have anything you need, tell her, she’ll definitely do it right away,” said Li Hongji with a smile.

Tang Xiu nodded,, “That’s great. Alright, you can take care of your work now.”

Sun Wenjing frowned. After she saw Tang Xiu’s appearance, she felt that it was quite absurd. And now, upon hearing Tang Xiu speaking to the President with such manner, she suddenly couldn’t help but ask, “President, don’t go first, please. Are you joking with me? You want me to stop my work to do miscellaneous jobs for this boy?”

Li Hongji’s expression slightly changed as he sternly replied with a low voice, “Shut up! Tang Xiu is a Chinese Medical doctor with outstanding skills that I hired myself. Your job is to follow the tasks assigned to you by the hospital. If you can’t do it, do tell me now and I’ll take it back.”

Sun Wenjing reluctantly said, “President, I can comply with your



order resolutely. But, you want me to do miscellaneous jobs here for this a young man; isn't this the same as wasting my time? He's very young, even if he learned from a famous teacher and has been taught by an extremely skilled Grandmaster Chinese Medical doctor, he couldn't have learned many things within such a short time period, right? Don't stare at me like that, you know that I'm speaking the truth!"

Li Hongji stared at Sun Wenjing with an unsightly expression. He then immediately looked at Tang Xiu with an embarrassed smile. "Tang Xiu, I know that you're big-hearted, so you mustn't take her remark into account. This woman only knows how to judge a person by their appearance. Forget it. I'll take her back and give you another excellent doctor."

Tang Xiu himself was quite unsatisfied with Sun Wenjing. This woman ought to have some abilities as well, or else she definitely wouldn't dare to contradict the president. However, he only needed someone to do miscellaneous jobs, someone who would execute his command unconditionally. So he nodded and said, "Then replace her with someone else! This person is shortsighted, she wouldn't be able to be entrusted with a job with heavy responsibilities either. I'm here to give medical service, not to make trouble."

Sun Wenjing's face changed greatly. She angrily glared at Tang Xiu and scolded, "What did you say? You're the one who's shortsighted and can't take jobs with huge responsibilities! You're still young, but is actually so arrogant and domineering! Our president is very polite with you because... because our President is gentle and friendly."

Li Hongji looked at Sun Wenjing with a foolish expression. Never had he ever dreamed that Sun Wenjing, who was usually enthusiastic and well-versed in social interaction, could turn out to be possessed today. Every line she spoke made him a bit more angry. He himself treated Tang Xiu politely, but she couldn't even tell what was the problem therein.

“Sun Wenjing, if you don't want to be suspended, just shut up! Hmph... no matter what you do today, if you dare to offend Tang Xiu, it's equal of offending me! I remember clearly that I've told you that I've spent great effort to invite Tang Xiu, only then this Chinese Medical Grandmaster doctor agreed to come here. And I forgot to tell you one thing. Even my medical skills are far inferior to his.”

"What? Impossible!"

Sun Wenjing was shocked. She looked at Li Hongji and Tang Xiu with disbelief. But even so, she sneered as she glanced at Tang Xiu with disdain, before she turned around and left the consultation room.

She was in an extremely bad mood today. Her good hearted mother-in-law was suddenly found to have a medium-stage hepatic cancer; the cancer cells had even spread. It was impossible to completely eliminate it. Her colleague who checked her mother-in-law told her that she perhaps only had six months to a year time left.

Therefore, she was really hating herself for having poor medical skills, helpless to deal with her mother-in-law's liver cancer. She

also hated those doctors who weren't really well-learned and talented but actually wore a white coat attire. Tang Xiu's age, was likely only in his early 20s. And she didn't believe that Tang Xiu was a very skillful Chinese Medical doctor, let alone that he was much more skilled than the President. In her view, the reason why the President tried to flatter him was definitely for another reason.

She was only a doctor, but there was no need for her to curry favor from a young man who had no real talent and knowledge.

Looking at Sun Wenjing's back, Li Hongji could only smile wryly inwardly. After giving Tang Xiu an apologetic look, he strode out of the consultation room.

As he came outside, he quickly caught up with Sun Wenjing. He called out to her and scolded, "What's the matter with you today? As I usually favor you, I was hoping that you could help Tang Xiu and learn a number of powerful medical techniques from him. But you ruined such a good thing!"

Sun Wenjing didn't dare to contradict him, but still, she replied, "President, please don't joke with me. If that young man is really skillful, why would he need my help in the first place?"

Li Hongji was fuming with anger as he shouted, "SHUT UP! Do you think with my character I would have to spend great efforts to prepare a consultation room for him to give medical services in our hospital if he didn't have deep knowledge and skill? If his medical skill wasn't that good, would I even try to be polite to him and do my best to make arrangements for him? I used to think that you were clever and well-versed in social interactions, but what's going

on with you today?”

“So, you’re not joking with me? He...” Sun Wenjing was confused.

Li Hongji replied with a deep tone, “Do you remember a woman surnamed Mu who once came to our hospital to treat her daughter’s strange disease?”

Sun Wenjing nodded, “I heard about her! Not even you managed treat that little girl’s disease. That surnamed Mu woman took her daughter along, running all over the country, and no one could cure her daughter’s strange illness. President, why did you suddenly mention this issue?”

Li Hongji sneered, “That’s right. That woman surnamed Mu had visited hundreds of thousands of doctors from all the major hospitals, even the Chinese Medical and the Western Medical hospital. No one could cure her daughter’s strange illness, but Tang Xiu did. She’s healed now!”

“For real? You’re not faking it?”

Sun Wenjing’s first response was that Li Hongji was lying.

“Do you think I’m lying?” Li Hongji sneered.

Sun Wenjing quickly shook her head. She knew clearly well about the President’s character. Her abrupt reaction was driven by

the contempt she had toward Tang Xiu. She didn't think the President would joke about such issues.

Li Hongji continued with a cold expression, "Moreover, you also know about the six or seven doctor experts in orthopedic and cardiology that were carrying out a surgery in a wounded patient. The patient had a steel nail lodged near the heart. You also have heard about this matter, no?"

"I wasn't on duty that night, but I also heard about it. Don't tell me... that the person who rushed to our hospital that night and removed the nail from the patient... was him?" asked Sun Wenjing.

Li Hongji sneered, "Aside from him, who has such great abilities? You... ah... I really don't know what to say anymore! Such a great opportunity and you wasted it for nothing. Forget it. The matter has gotten to this point, there's no use even if I lecture you anyway. You go back!"

Having said that, Li Hongji crossed his hands behind his back and lamented. Heaving a sigh, he walked toward the side corridor.

Sun Wenjing was stunned and tongue-tied as she looked at the back of the leaving Li Hongji. Suddenly, regret sprouted up inside her heart.

In the case... if President Li didn't lie, that Tang Xiu was really a very powerful Chinese Medical Grandmaster. Didn't she just missed an opportunity in vain? But even so, he was very young.

Even if he began studying Chinese Medical skills ever since he was in his mother's womb, that would mean that he spent only 20 years studying, wouldn't it? Even if his medical skill was powerful, could it be powerful to that extent?

Thinking up to here, Sun Wenjing stopped thinking and curled her lips. She didn't go back to her office directly, but came to the Inpatient Department, looking at her mother-in-law who was receiving an intravenous infusion. At present, her mother-in-law's cancer cells were spreading, worsening her condition. If she didn't have prompt medication, let alone being able to live for a year or a half year, her time would be limited to three to five months.

# Chapter 232: Giving Medical Treatment

---

Half past eight in the morning.

Putting on the white coat Li Hongji personally gave him, Tang Xiu sat calmly at the consultation table, waiting for the first patient to come. At his side, a young girl in her early twenties was constantly looking at him with a curious look on her face. Dai Xinyue was a newcomer in the hospital pharmacy, a college graduate who was hired just a few months ago.

However, she also had a Traditional Chinese Medical practitioner background. Her grandfather was a Traditional Chinese Medical senior doctor, while her parents also engaged in medical work. Therefore, she also had some skills due to the influence of her family.

Dai Xinyue was very curious about Tang Xiu and even worshipped him a bit because he was of a similar age with her. But he was unexpectedly able to become an on-duty doctor; which was definitely an amazing feat.

"Knock, knock..."

The consultation room's door was knocked, revealing several family members pushing a patient inside. Tang Xiu frowned. He knew the person who took the lead; he was originally the old man he saw when he kicked the plaque of the Rising Dragon Martial School, Yang Xianyu.

“Hello, Dr. Tang.”

Yang Xianyu bowed very low with a smile hung on his face.

Nodding lightly, Tang Xiu got up and looked at the eyes of the old lady who was on the stretcher. His brows suddenly wrinkled. He walked forward and took the old lady's wrist to check on her pulse. After checking it quietly for half a minute, only then did he turn to look at Yang Xianyu, saying, “Have you checked her before? What did the other doctors tell you?”

Yang Xianyu replied truthfully, “They said that she suffered a stroke. But I don't believe it.”

“Why did you say that?” Tang Xiu asked.

“Although my wife's symptoms are similar with a stroke's, she can speak clearly, and the contents of her speech are about gods, buddhas, and ghosts; very odd. I think she didn't suffered a stroke, more like she was bewitched,” said Yang Xianyu.

Tang Xiu nodded, “You're right, she's being possessed!”

Yang Xianyu was surprised for a moment, his complexion then immediately changing. He quickly said, “Dr. Tang, since you can see that my wife is being possessed, I believe that you must have a cure for it? I offended you in Raising Dragon Martial School before, I hope you can forgive me with your big heart.”



“Let bygones be bygones! Your wife’s Dangyang point on her forehead is being invaded by Evil Qi. But fortunately, she has a strong fire essence on her body that is keeping the Evil Qi unable to invade her sea of consciousness. Otherwise, she would have turned into an idiot already,” saying Tang Xiu faintly.

“Hey! How can you say that?” Yang Zhenting, who stood behind Yang Xianyu, spoke in anger.

"Shut up!" Yang Xianyu’s face changed, rebuking him in a deep tone.

“Father, this kid is talking irresponsibly. How come he says that Mother is being possessed? The hospital has diagnosed a stroke! So we only need to follow the treatment and slowly nurture Mother back to health. I believe she’ll be alright!”

“Pa...”

Yang Xianyu slapped Yang Zhenting’s face and snapped sternly, “If you dare to say one more word, you’re not my son anymore! You won’t see me again later.”

Upon hearing it, Yang Zhenting turned timid. He lowered his head and no longer spoke.

Tang Xiu shook his head and said lightly, “All of you, go out!”

Misunderstanding Tang Xiu’s meaning, Yang Xianyu hurriedly

said, “Dr. Tang, please don’t take my son’s remark to heart. It’s because of my improper teaching. In any case, you must save my wife. Please!”

Tang Xiu said, “What I meant was for you and the other family members to leave. I will treat her now.”

“Ah, alright!” Yang Xianyu was overjoyed, and immediately left with all of his children.

Tang Xiu looked at Dai Xinyue and said serenely, “Take the silver needles you brought a moment ago and disinfect all of them with cotton and ethyl alcohol.”

"Alright!"

Dai Xinyue obediently took a box of silver needles and sterilized them, and then put them back to the box.

Tang Xiu propped up the old lady and said, “Untie her coat and take off the rest except her underwear.”

Dai Xinyue hesitated before doing it right away, according to what Tang Xiu had ordered. Soon, the old woman was undressed. Tang Xiu then turned her around with her back facing him. He then took out a few silver needles and quickly pierced the acupuncture points on her back.

Tang Xiu’s fingers gently pressed the location of the silver

needles as his fingers constantly moved along the body's meridian channel's line.

Two minutes later.

“Cough, cough...”

The old lady woke up from her deep slumber. She coughed for a awhile before opening her eyes.

Tang Xiu's eyes flashed. He pulled out the silver needles lightning fast and quickly pierced the Dangyang point on her forehead. His needle piercing technique was extremely strange. He pierced on three points and pulled out one point; punctured another point and pulled it out again and punctured another three points.

Twisting, pulling, and piercing.

After having repeated this nine times, Tang Xiu quickly pulled out all the silver needles.

“Uh, what a stench!”

Dai Xinyue, who had been standing beside the old lady, suddenly smelt a foul stench when Tang Xiu pulled out the silver needle from the old lady's Dangyang point. She could even clearly see a trace of gray-black gas drifting from the acupuncture point.

Tang Xiu put down the silver needles and then gently held the old lady's face. With his five fingers, he exerted some effort to massage it, as the old lady's mouth askance and crooked appearance then began to change. Certainly, nobody knew that he was using star force to massage the old lady's facial muscles to fix her face.

From the beginning of the treatment to the end, Tang Xiu only spent a total of ten minutes. When Tang Xiu took back his hands, the old lady's appearance was almost the same as a normal person's. After taking out the silver needles on her back, Tang Xiu commanded, "Help her dress up! Then tell the patient's family to enter."

At this moment, Dai Xinyue looked at the old lady's face with a blank expression and was startled upon hearing Tang Xiu's words. After that, she hurriedly asked, "Tang... Dr. Tang, what did you just say? I'm really sorry, I was just distracted."

Tang Xiu repeated what he had just said and then walked to the washbasin. He washed his hands before sitting behind the examination table.

Shortly after, Yang Xianyu and some of his children came inside. When they saw the appearance of the old lady, each and every one of them exposed a look of disbelief.

"Dr. Tang, my wife, she..."

Tang Xiu said, “I have treated her. This is just a minor problem, so I will give you a few auxiliary Chinese medicine prescriptions. After you boiled the medicines, give them to her. She’ll fully recover after resting for a few days. However, I think that you should check the objects around her. She must have a few objects with Yin and Evil Qi. If you don’t pay attention to it, if later the Evil Qi invade her body again, treating her won’t be this easy.”

Yang Xianyu was shocked, “She’s alright already?”

“What? You don’t believe me?” Asked Tang Xiu.

Yang Xianyu immediately shook his head and said seriously, “I believe you, Divine Doctor Tang. I have been with my wife in Star City for a long time, waiting for you to give medical service in this Chinese Medical Hospital. Thank you, thank you very much.”

Tang Xiu was surprised, “Then, the last time I saw you in Rising Dragon Martial School was because...”

Forcing out a smile, Yang Xianyu said, “Last time, I came to Star City was to find you. I heard the news that you treated a little girl’s strange illness on Jingmen Island, so I know that you are an amazing Divine Doctor. Afterward, I’ve been asking around everywhere, only then did I know that you live in Star City. Jiang Feng, the Schoolmaster of Rising Dragon Martial School, is my long-time friend. I happened to see him that day, and then I met you by chance...”

Tang Xiu suddenly realized as he nodded and said, “If you see

Jiang Feng again, please tell him that opening a martial school is a good deed for people to train a strong and healthy body, as well as defend the homeland. But if it's to be used to bully the common people, he should simply close his martial school earlier!"

Yang Xianyu said, "Divine Doctor Tang. You actually didn't know. My old friend is an upright and just person. He hates people who uses martial arts and force to bully others; he'll even severely teach them a lesson. He was also furious that some crooks emerged in his martial school. He already disciplined and expelled them. He also has increased the supervision of the school."

Tang Xiu said, "I got it."

Having said that, he quickly wrote a prescription and handed it over to Yang Xianyu, saying, "Now, go buy the items in this prescription! I've already written the ingredients that are needed to make the medicine. Do remember it well."

"Thank you, thank you, Divine Doctor Tang," said Yang Xianyu gratefully.

Tang Xiu shook his head as he watched them leave. He then looked at Dai Xinyue and asked lightly, "And you, what kind of impression do you have?"

The shock on Dai Xinyue's face hadn't yet subsided. Upon hearing his inquiry, a bit of admiration revealed on her face. "Dr. Tang, you're really amazing! But, the evil qi you said before, I didn't get it."

Tang Xiu replied faintly, "If you want to be an excellent Chinese medical doctor, not only do you need to understand the patient's condition and, to some extent, understand about their injuries and feelings, you also must understand that some ordinary people might be in difficult situations. Such as the patient I just treated who was possessed! This world has spiritual qi, life qi, death qi, corpse qi, as well as baleful qi. If you encounter similar patients in the future, don't just analyze the symptoms of the patients, you also have to consider some unscientific issues; those things really exist."

"I'll remember your teachings, Dr. Tang." Dai Xinyue nodded repeatedly.

Tang Xiu was quite content with Dai Xinyue's performance. Compared to Sun Wenjing who judged a person by their appearance, he thought that replacing her was really a good choice. Therefore, he decided to teach her as much as possible in his consultation time.

"Knock, knock..."

The door was knocked again as a young man that was covering his stomach entered the ward. After he sat down on the chair in front of the consultation table, he said with a pained expression, "Hi, Doctor, I... I have a very painful stomachache."

Tang Xiu said, "Give me your wrist!"

As the young man extended his wrist, Tang Xiu checked it. As a slight smile appeared on his mouth, he got up and walked behind the young man, grabbing his shoulder with one hand while the other patted his back.

"Pa, pa, pa..."

A series of beatings made several patients and their families who were waiting in front of the door look at each other in dismay. Even Dai Xinyue also showed a puzzled expression.

Tang Xiu glanced at her, "Can you pulse-check to diagnose the state of a disease?"

Dai Xinyue quickly said, "A little. I learned from my grandfather. I can diagnose the general state of an illness through observation."



## Chapter 233: Reputation Spread Out Far

---

“Since you can do that, then bear in mind that if you come across patients with blood and qi deficiency and shortness of breath, check them in accordance with their pulse beating to determine whether the qi in their meridian channels are clogged up. This will result in convulsions in their appendixes, causing severe abdominal pain. Pay attention to my hands’ movements and remember the locations and the frequency of my beatings.” Said Tang Xiu.

Upon hearing it, Dai Xinyue instantly realized that Tang Xiu was directing her in the medical techniques. She was immediately overjoyed and repeatedly nodded while attentively watching Tang Xiu’s beating technique.

Two minutes later, the young man coughed a few more times before releasing a big, smelly fart, while the pained expression on his face disappeared.

Tang Xiu loosened the young man and returned back to his examination table as he smiled, “Being young is a good thing. But you should also pay attention to your body. After all, a healthy body is your capital to a good life. In this way, you will only empty your body prematurely, very likely suffering in your sex life.”

The young man instantly understood Tang Xiu’s meaning. An awkward expression was cast on his face as he said, “Thank you, doctor. I’ll remember it. You’re really a divine doctor. My stomachache was really bad just now, but after your beating, it unexpectedly doesn’t hurt anymore. I can even feel that my body

became comfortable and warm.”

Tang Xiu smiled, “You’re welcome. This is what I should do! You should go now, there are other patients behind you!”

“Yes, yes...”

The young man came covering his stomach but now he left with a straight waist and back.

Several patients and their family members who were at the door looked at each other. They were just in front of the consultation room’s door, a bit disappointed. But they didn’t expect that Tang Xiu would be this skillful; he was even able to cure a patient with such a bad stomachache quickly and easily.

“Awesome! We really can’t judge a person solely by looking at their appearance, just as you can’t measure the sea with a pint pot! This young doctor unexpectedly has such amazing medical skill. He might become a world-renowned divine doctor in the future!”

“It’s really amazing! I’ve heard of quite a few skillful doctors, but none of them are so young. Coming for medical treatment in this Chinese Medical Hospital, it seems that this was the right choice.”

“It’s my turn...”

As a middle-aged woman walked into the consultation room, she handed over the registration form to Tang Xiu, saying, “Hi, Doc.

I've been in a dizzy state lately. Sometimes I feel nauseous and often suffer from insomnia at night. Could you examine me and tell me what kind of problem I have?"

Tang Xiu sized her up, noting that she looked pale with lips that a bit purple. Moreover, her forehead was also sweating, so he immediately replied, "I'll check your pulse first before talking about your condition."

The middle-aged woman quickly extended her wrist.

After checking her pulse, Tang Xiu found that her problem was not small. Not only there were problems with her kidney's function, but also some symptoms of kidney failure. She also had severe anemia, and if it continued unattended, her body would collapse in two months at the most.

After a moment of silence, Tang Xiu loosened the middle-aged woman's wrist and said, "Take off your shoes and socks. Move the chair over and sit in front of me."

The middle-aged woman looked confused, but she still followed Tang Xiu's instructions. She sat in front of Tang Xiu and took off her shoes and socks.

Tang Xiu took the middle-aged woman's bare feet and put them on his leg. Then, he rubbed and pinched several important acupuncture points on her feet as well as massaged them. The middle-aged woman exposed a pained expression as he then asked her lightly, "Does it hurt?"

With a pained expression, the middle-aged woman nodded heavily, “It’s very painful!”

Tang Xiu sighed, “You neglected your body too much. You have severe anemia and the beating of your pulse is very weak. In addition, your kidney’s function is the most serious one, there are even some symptoms of its failure. If you don’t treat it immediately, the consequences will be very serious. I’ll give you some massage on your acupuncture points to relieve the uncomfortable feeling you have in your body. But if you want to be fully cured, you need to recover slowly. I’ll give you some Chinese herbal prescriptions. After you buy them, boil the medicinal herbs and take it in the morning and evening every day for a month.”

The middle-aged woman asked, “Can I get well after taking the medicine for a month?”

“You will. And you should become stronger.” Said Tang Xiu.

The middle-aged woman was overjoyed. But she then hesitated, “But Doc, are the prescribed medicines... expensive? I... my family is quite poor, if it’s too expensive, I can’t afford to buy them.”

“It’s not expensive, you’ll only spend tens of yuan for the medicinal herbs.” Said Tang Xiu.

Upon hearing it, the middle-aged woman was finally relieved and gratefully said, “Thanks a lot, Doc.”

Tang Xiu shook his head and gave her a massage for a few minutes. After that, he let her put on her socks and shoes. He then washed his hands and wrote a prescription to her. "Do remember to be sure to take the medication every day. Otherwise, your body will collapse."

"I'll remember it!" The middle-aged woman seriously nodded.

Standing at the side, Dai Xinyue's eyes flashed. She had never thought that Tang Xiu's medical treatment would be this amazing. Three patients came for treatment. Two were consecutively cured on the spot, while he gave massage to the third one. But, a trace of a rosy color appeared on her pale face, as even her expression as well as the tone of her speech were stronger than before.

"Next patient!"

As the middle-aged woman left, Tang Xiu called out.

This morning, Tang Xiu examined a total of dozens of patients. A small part of them was cured on the spot, while the remaining patients were treated with simple prescriptions to ease their illness' condition.

At this time, the entire Star City Medical Hospital's leadership, doctors, nurses, including a lot of patients who came to the hospital heard that a divine doctor had appeared.

Inside the hospital's conference room.

Li Hongji and dozens of specialists and doctors of the hospital were all sitting on the conference table. They looked at a big LCD screen on the back of the room. On the screen, there was a video showing Tang Xiu's consultation room. For three and a half hours, no one left the table for even half a step nor there were too many words spoken. All of their attention was focused on the screen wearing shocked expression on their faces time and time again.

"Huff..."

After seeing Tang Xiu's successful treatment of a patient through the screen, Li Hongji finally took a deep sigh. He turned to the dozens of doctors and specialists in the conference room and asked, "What do you think? He's the doctor that I personally hired. His level is surely able to enter your eyes, right?"

Dozens of doctors and specialists looked at each other with bitter expressions on their faces.

An old Chinese medical doctor forced out a smile and said, "President, you're joking with us. How can this young doctor be unable to enter our eyes? His medical skill is simply magical. I have been in the medical field for 40-50 years now and there are so many patients and so many illnesses I have treated and seen... I have also met a lot of skillful Chinese medical practitioners, but I've never seen such skillful Chinese medical doctor such as him."

"He's simply a divine doctor. His attainments in medical skills

are beyond doubt. Even now, I'm suspecting that there are no illnesses he can't cure in this world." Another old Chinese medical doctor sighed deeply.

The corner of Li Hongji's mouth outlined a smile on his face. Looking content, his eyes swept everyone who was nodding and said with a smile, "As the saying goes, there will come out talented people on behalf of the country with each more excellent in leading for several decades. All of us are old timers, and the world will belong to the young in the future. It's just a pity that Tang Xiu doesn't have any ambition in the medical field. Otherwise, I genuinely wanted to make the masses feel happy with this."

The old Chinese medical doctor who was the first to speak a moment ago replied, "President, we must keep such a powerful young Chinese medical doctor like him! Let him say his conditions freely. As long as he can stay in our hospital, I believe that our hospital will be very famous."

Li Hongji replied helplessly, "Do you think that I don't want him to stay in our hospital? I tried with the best of my abilities. When his mother was hospitalized here, I sent people to take good care of her with the best possible treatment in exchange for his consent to give medical services in our hospital. But he only agreed to do it in this summer vacation. After this summer vacation is over, he'll go to university. It would be difficult to make him come and give medical service in our hospital later!"

The dozens of doctors and specialists went silent.

Li Hongji sighed, "Just forget it for now. If something is not

meant to be, it's no use trying to force it to happen. I'll do everything I can to make him come to our hospital and give medical service here later. Furthermore, once the time is determined that he would give medical service here, we'll announce the news to the public at once. Tang Xiu's medical expertise is brilliant, so in the afternoon, you go to the Inpatient Department to select a few patients who are seriously ill or nearly incurable and have their relatives send them to Tang Xiu's consultation room. If he can solve it, we will immediately announce that we have a divine doctor on duty in our hospital."

"Understood!" Everyone nodded.

Shortly before noon.

Tang Xiu was at the hospital at lunch hour. Li Hongji personally invited him with Tang Xiu's assistant, Dai Xinyue, following them to lunch. However, for Dai Xinyue, being able to have a meal with the President gave her quite an awe feeling and trepidation.

After lunch, Tang Xiu returned to the consultation room. He knew that there was a surveillance camera inside, but he didn't care about it. Even when the patients consulted with him as well as when he was treating them, he deliberately let the camera focus on them.

In the afternoon, Tang Xiu diagnosed a lot of patients with serious illnesses. Although he couldn't cure them immediately, but he gave them treatment to alleviate their condition. As long as they followed his follow-up instructions, he believed that these patients would be completely healed quickly.



Tang Xiu had decided to give medical service at this hospital until tomorrow. After all, he had promised Li Hongji, but it was delayed for many days. And now, after giving medical services for a few days, he would also be quite busy later and perhaps would have no time to come here anymore.

In the afternoon of the next day.

Tang Xiu was in his consultation room giving medical service and teaching Dai Xinyue a lot of medical knowledge. He himself had a deep knowledge of various symptoms of illnesses of the human body. After he returned back to Earth, he had read a large amount of Chinese medical books, so the knowledge of a large number of illnesses and medical conditions gave him a base to his practical level and medical expertise.

"Knock, knock..."

The door was knocked as a young man along with a middle-aged woman came into the consultation room.

When Tang Xiu saw the young man's face, his brows slightly wrinkled, because he had seen him before outside the Chinese Medical Hospital two days ago. The young man was ridiculing him back then.

"Why are you here?"

As the young man saw Tang Xiu, he blankly stared for a moment before saying with astonishment.

Tang Xiu replied indifferently, “Why can’t I? Rich people also get sick and also need a doctor! What? Do you think I have no money and there’s no way for me to work as a doctor?”

## Chapter 234: Regrets

---

The youth's expression changed, looking awkward. He was secretly regretting inwardly, knowing that his mouth ran cheaply yesterday, offending a Chinese Medical Hospital's doctor. Furthermore, based on rumors, the said doctor was even an amazing divine doctor.

He smiled obsequiously saying, "Doctor, I'm really sorry for being arrogant before. A great person such as you, please don't mind and ignore the offense of a lowly person like me. Yesterday, I heard that an amazing divine doctor came to this Chinese Medical Hospital who often gives good consultations and cures illnesses quickly."

Tang Xiu was not a narrow-minded person. Hearing the young man's apology, he slightly nodded and looked at the middle-aged woman sitting in front of the consultation table. "Which part of your body feels uncomfortable?"

The middle-aged woman answered, "It's my back!"

Tang Xiu checked her pulse. Her pulse indicated that her body was in good condition, only, there was a symptom clogging up blood in her waist. Therefore, he got up and said, "Get down on the sickbed over there. I'll give you a Tuina massage once. You should have strained the muscles in your lower back."

"Alright!"

The middle-aged woman followed Tang Xiu's instructions and lied down on the sickbed.

After Tang Xiu traced the middle-aged woman's waist, he shook his head and said, "It looks like your condition is not as simple straining your lumbar discs muscles. It's much more serious, the lumbar disc in your waist is dislocated. If you want to fix the bones' position, I'm afraid that it will be very painful. Can you withstand the pain?"

The middle-aged woman quickly asked, "Can it be cured completely?"

Tang Xiu nodded, "No problem. But it will take a few days to complete the treatment. You have to come twice a day, in the morning and evening, at the same hour! Three days should be enough."

The middle-aged woman nodded earnestly, saying, "I can bear it. I'd have to trouble you for it, Doc!"

Tang Xiu nodded and started the Tuina massage on the middle-aged woman. As he began to increase his strength, his fingers massaged across the middle-aged woman's waist bones therefrom.

Once and twice, each and every time was stronger than the last!

A painful expression was written on the middle-aged woman's face. The more strength Tang Xiu exerted, the thicker the pained

expression on her face. And even afterward, she repeatedly screaming again and again.

Ten minutes later, when the middle-aged woman was almost at her limit, only then did Tang Xiu stop. “Lie on the bed for now. Wait until the pain in your waist subsides.”

Immediately after, Tang Xiu called another patient in. After the patient was treated, only then did the middle-aged woman get up from the sickbed. After getting up, a surprised expression appeared on her face as she said, “It really doesn’t hurt anymore! Even my waist feels warm and comfortable.”

Tang Xiu said, “Do remember what I told you. Come back in these three days. If nothing happens, I’ll be here for three days.”

“Alright! Thank you, doctor!” The middle-aged woman said gratefully.

Seeing such an amazing ability from Tang Xiu, the young man sincerely admired him. He faced Tang Xiu and said, “I really have to thank you, Doc! My mother’s lumbar disc has been disturbing her for a few years, often feeling pain while she’s sleeping. If you can completely cure her, no matter how much money you request from us, we’ll pay you!”

“Tang Xiu was surprised, “Is your family very rich?”

The young man hesitated for a moment, “We’re not too rich. But

I can say with certainty that our financial state is much better compared to the average family.”

“If so, then you can give them to charity! That can be considered as thanking me!” said Tang Xiu.

Giving it to charity?

The young man was surprised for a moment. He originally intended to donate the money via the red envelope to Tang Xiu, yet he was refused. He could feel that Tang Xiu was definitely saying it from his heart. For a moment, he was quietly ashamed inwardly for his superficiality and his previous arrogance.

Inside the Inpatient Department.

Accompanied by the Inpatient Department’s head, Li Hongji came to a VIP ward. When he saw that a hospital doctor, Sun Wenjing, was in the ward next to the patient’s bed, he immediately asked, “Why are you here?”

Seeing the President’s arrival along with the Inpatient Department’s head, Sun Wenjing quickly replied, “President, my work is done for the day, so I come here to take a look at my mother.”

“This patient is your mother?” Li Hongji was surprised.

Sun Wenjing nodded, "Yes!"

“What’s her illness?” asked Li Hongji.

With a bitter expression, Sun Wenjing answered, “She has a medium stage liver cancer, and is undergoing the hospital treatment.”

Medium stage liver cancer?

Li Hongji secretly sighed. If it was an early stage cancer, it'd be possible to cure it. But after the cancer cells had spread, it'd be simply as difficult as reaching the blue sky! He wanted to say a few words to console Sun Wenjing, but didn't know what to say. After secretly shaking his head, he said, “Take good care of your mother! If you're too busy with your work in the hospital, I'll give you a holiday.”

“Thanks, President. I have many relatives, so my job won't be affected!” shaking her head, Sun Wenjing replied.

Li Hongji nodded. When he was about to leave, he suddenly recalled something. With a strange expression on his face, he said, “Your mother's illness is very difficult to cure. How about you take her to Tang Xiu and let him examine her?”

"Tang Xiu?"

Sun Wenjing stared blankly for a moment before her expression immediately changed.

In the last two days, a divine doctor was widely rumored to be giving medical consultation and treatment in the hospital. After she asked around, she knew that the widely rumored divine doctor turned out to be Tang Xiu. Now, she was deeply regretting her judgement of him solely based on his appearance, even refusing to become Tang Xiu's assistant.

However, even if Li Hongji said it, she was nevertheless somewhat unable to believe it. Because she didn't believe that Tang Xiu could treat her mother's medium stage cancer. Furthermore, she didn't give Tang Xiu face before, and now, if she asked for Tang Xiu's help, she would die due to embarrassment!

Looking at Sun Wenjing's expression, Li Hongji could tell her thoughts. He then faintly said, "Go and try! Tang Xiu's medical expertise is very powerful. Also, remember what I told you before. His medical expertise is better than mine. A lot of strange illnesses I can't tell heads or tails, but he's able to cure them. Perhaps he really has a way to treat a medium stage liver cancer patient. If you think you can't lose your face, ask your relatives to take your mother to him."

"President, is he really that powerful just like in the rumors?" Hesitating, Sun Wenjing asked.

"He's amazing! The reason why I asked you to take your mother and find him, is actually that of my own selfishness. I expect him to create a miracle in the medical field." Said Li Hongji.



Sun Wenjing's face constantly changed. Finally, a firm expression could be seen on her face as she said with all seriousness, "President, I'll take my mother to see him!"

Li Hongji nodded, "Go! He has a very good character. When facing patients, he won't even care about your actions toward him before."

An awkward expression was revealed on Sun Wenjing's face once again as she lowered her head and didn't utter another word.

Time flew by quickly.

Tang Xiu got quite a headache. It was almost lunch break, but the queue outside was still quite long. He didn't expect that today's patients would unexpectedly increase. This morning, he already treated 40-50 people, whereas the rest who were waiting in line outside was perhaps double that.

After hesitating, he turned to Dai Xinyue and said, "Go outside and ask whose illness is rather urgent. I will only treat three more patients before taking a rest. The consultations will resume again at 2 o'clock."

Dai Xinyue complied quickly and walked outside.

Shortly after, three emergency patients were taken to the consultation room. After Tang Xiu treated them, one was cured on the spot, whereas the other two's illness had turned for the better.

"Give way please!"

When Tang Xiu was about to take his white coat off and go to the cafeteria for lunch, noises came from outside. As the crowd made way, 4-5 people with patient pennants, whom were possibly the patients' relatives, came to the consultation room. Someone who was at the forefront was the family of Tang Xiu's first patient, Yang Xianyu.

"What are you people doing here?" Looking at their pennants as well the five people, astonishment was drawn on Tang Xiu's face.

Yang Xianyu smiled, "Divine Doctor Tang, you're a highly respected divine doctor. We know that you don't care about money, so we're too much embarrassed to give you red envelopes. Therefore, a family member of the patient who knows that you also have cured my wife contacted me. Each one of us wants to give you this pennant to express our respect and gratitude."

Tang Xiu was at a loss whether he had to laugh or cry, "My current status is a doctor. It is my duty to save people from impending death and help the patients. Your actions... Ah, forget it. I accept these pennants. And thank you for your good intentions."

Yang Xianyu and the others immediately revealed smiles, saying deeply grateful word of praises and then leaving.

"Collect them and put them away!" said Tang Xiu to Dai Xinyue.

“Ah?” Dai Xinyue was astonished. “We won’t hang them on the wall?”

Tang Xiu shook his head, saying, “No need. The patients and their families sent the pennants to express their gratitude. We’ve received them, so we don’t need to care about these external objects.”

Awe and respect were written all over Dai Xinyue’s face as she nodded heavily. It was only a short one to two days ever since following Tang Xiu, but her medical expertise had been rapidly improving and she had learned too many things. She even hoped that it would keep going.

She had an idol, who was her grandfather. A quite famous Chinese medical senior doctor who dedicated his life to save the dying and heal the injured and had done good deeds for the entirety of his life.

But in all fairness, she thought that her grandfather’s medical expertise wasn’t as good as Tang Xiu’s, even much inferior. Therefore, her new idol now was Tang Xiu. Even in her heart, she already considered Tang Xiu as her teacher.

Half an hour later, at the Chinese Medical Hospital’s cafeteria.

Tang Xiu and Dai Xinyue were having lunch whilst chatting about topics regarding medical treatment. Tang Xiu thought that she was really good. And in particular, he really liked her diligent,

studious and modest attitude. Therefore, he was also willing to teach her as much as he could.

In these two days, he saw a lot of patients in the hospital as well as their relatives. Looking at their distressed expressions when they arrived and their overjoyed expressions leaving, it caused his heart to be full of satisfaction. Ever since he returned to Earth, he found himself having a distinct mentality that was completely different than when he was in the Immortal World.

At present, he was a full passion for life, with fighting spirit filling his being. Whether it was making money, taking care of family or practicing cultivation, he felt that this kind of life was also another kind of happiness in itself.

"Excuse me!" A female voice was heard.

Tang Xiu stopped. As he turned his head, his expression suddenly became cold, because the person coming was Sun Wenjing.

## Chapter 235: Spirited

---

Sun Wenjing looked a bit awkward. But for her mother, she braved herself forward even if she had to disgrace herself. She smiled, “Dr. Tang, I’m really sorry for what I did before. I’m too shortsighted and judged you by your appearance. In these two days, I’ve heard that your medical expertise and ethics are equally good, so please don’t stoop yourself down to my level.”

A surprised expression was revealed in Tang Xiu’s eyes when he heard it. He originally thought that Sun Wenjing came to pick a quarrel, but she unexpectedly came to apologize. Since she sincerely apologized, it was not good for him to give a cold face. As the saying goes, hit not the people who are smiling at you, instead reach out your hand to them. Therefore, he waved and said, “Let the bygones be bygones. But pay attention to it later.”

Sun Wenjing was secretly relieved. “I must keep this lesson in mind, to not judge people by their appearances, and strive to face everything with an amiable and modest attitude.”

“I’ve received your words of apology. Take a seat and have lunch with us!”

“Dr. Tang, actually, there’s one matter that I want to ask you,” said Sun Wenjing.

“What?” knitting his brows, Tang Xiu asked.

Sun Wenjing said, “well, recently I’m in a bad mood because my

mother is ill and hospitalized in our hospital.”

Tang Xiu asked with a puzzled expression, “What’s her illness?”

Sun Wenjing looked pained, “Liver cancer, medium stage. The cancer cells already spread out.”

Tang Xiu raised his brows, “And your meaning is, you want me to treat her?”

Nodding, Sun Wenjing answered, “Rumors have it that you’re a divine doctor. Even President Li admits that he’s inferior to you. He said to me that if anyone in this world can save my mother, that person must be you. Also, President Li told me out of his own selfishness, since he wants to witness a miracle occur in the medical field.”

For a moment, Tang Xiu fell into silence. He then slowly shook his head, saying, “I’m not as good as people say in the rumors. I’m afraid that I can’t do anything for your mother’s illness. I’m really sorry to disappoint you and President Li.”

Sun Wenjing begged, “Would you please give it a try, Dr. Tang? Please! No matter what requests you put forward, I’ll try my best to fulfill them. Rather, we—brothers and sisters, will fully cooperate to meet your requests. My mother has brought us up, the four siblings, by herself until we grew up. She spent her whole life taking care of us and our children. You can say that she has yet to enjoy her life, and now, she has cancer. I really don’t want to see her leaving us in pain and suffering from illness. So please, I beg

you, try it!”

Looking at Sun Wenjing’s desperate begging as well as taking a glance at Tang Xiu, as kindhearted as she was, Dai Xinyue hesitated for a moment before speaking in a low voice, “Dr. Tang, would you give it a try? The elderly are quite pitiful. Even if you can’t cure her, the doctor won’t blame you either.”

Tang Xiu sighed inwardly. He didn’t like Sun Wenjing, but her filial affection touched his heart. After staying silent for a moment, he slowly said, “I have three requirements.”

“Please tell me!” Sun Wenjing’s eyes brightened up and quickly replied.

“Firstly, no matter what it is, the matter of me treating your mother must not be disclosed to anyone, not even Li Hongji. You must keep it confidential.” Said Tang Xiu.

"I can do that!" Sun Wenjing nodded heavily.

Tang Xiu said, “Secondly, prepare 100 thousand yuan and donate it to the hospital for poor patients. As for the people you want to donate to, find them yourself!”

“No problem,” said Sun Wenjing without hesitation.

Tang Xiu continued, “Thirdly, discharge your mother from the hospital and return home. I’ll come to your house every night

afterward. If there are any medical instruments needed, you must buy them.”

Sun Wenjing hesitated a moment, asking, “Dr. Tang, how long will you need for the treatment?”

“My time is limited. If I can’t cure her within 10 days, continuing the treatment is no longer necessary.” Said Tang Xiu.

After thinking for a few seconds, Sun Wenjing said, “I’ll prepare the discharge procedure for my mother this afternoon and we’ll be waiting for you at home in the evening. As for my home address, I’ll text it to your mobile phone!”

"Alright!" Tang Xiu told her his phone number and sent her away.

Dai Xinyue looked at Tang Xiu curiously and whispered, “Dr. Tang, I know you for only a short time, but I can tell that you’re a very confident person. Since you asked that doctor to take her mother back home, could it be that you have the confidence to cure her mother’s cancer?”

Smiling mildly, Tang Xiu replied, “You’re thinking too much!”

“No. I’m not thinking too much. I really admire your medical expertise. I can even say that you’re simply omnipotent in the medical science area. From yesterday until today, I’ve been counting. There were a total of 168 patients that came to see you



for consultation and treatment. 57 of whom had been cured on the scene, whereas the rest had their condition turned for the better. I myself believe that it wouldn't take long for their condition to be fully restored." Dai Xinyue shook her head and replied.

"You remember that clearly?" Tang Xiu was surprised.

With a light smile, Dai Xinyue said, "The subject I'm actually most interested in is numbers, to begin with. I was applying for a math-related major in college when I was taking my CET. But my grandfather didn't want me to take it. Instead, he wanted me to take the medical school. So, I took math as a hobby and I'm very good at remembering numbers."

"I got you. But since you're that confident in me, I'm afraid that I'll let you down if I fail to cure her mother's illness. But be at ease! I'll try my best to treat her mother for you to keep your amazement toward me." Tang Xiu said with a laugh.

A splendor flashed from Dai Xinyue's eyes. At the same time, a cunning light also flashed from her eyes as she smiled, "If you can cure that doctor's mother, I'll worship you as a teacher and I'll study medical skills from you with all seriousness."

Wanting to be an apprentice to study medical skills?

A strange expression was cast on Tang Xiu's face. He did take some disciples, but those apprentices of his were learning cultivation from him. It was the first time someone asked him to be his apprentice just to learn medical skills!

Suddenly, his interest was piqued. He suddenly imagined his apprentice eventually becoming a prominent great figure in the medical field. The thought was really interesting.

Looking at Dai Xinyue's elegant face, Tang Xiu nodded, "To be honest, I have never had any thoughts on receiving a disciple in this field. Alright. If I can cure Sun Wenjing's mother, that will prove that my medical expertise is good. By that time, I'll take you as a disciple and teach you my medical skills."

Dai Xinyue, who was originally probing, was suddenly pleasantly surprised upon hearing his reply. "Thanks, teacher. I believe you'll be able to do it."

Waving his hand, Tang Xiu said, "No need to be that anxious to call me teacher. You still have to wait until I cure the patient before you address me like that. Also, the address should change."

Changing the address?

"How should I address you as then?" Dai Xinyue asked curiously.

Tang Xiu said, "Master!"

Dai Xinyue's eyes turned bright. She was so excited she almost jumped. As intelligent as she was, how could she have never heard the profound meaning of the word 'Master'?

A person, especially from the modern era, might have many particular teachers; however, the number of Masters was but very few. To be a genuinely formal disciple to a Master, that meant that one would become a direct, successor disciple.

“Hurry up and finish your meal! We still have to give medical services in the afternoon.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

In the evening.

Tang Xiu had just finished the consultation of the last patient. He hurriedly left the hospital, with Dai Xinyue tagged along like his shadow behind his back, rushing toward South Gate Town.

“Master, your family lives here?” Dai Zinyue’s face was full of shock as she visited the villa.

“You came inside with me. If this place wasn’t my home, someone would have already reported to the cops. Anyway, take a sit. I’ll get something first.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

As he came to the second floor, Tang Xiu took the Body Refining Liquid he concocted before. He had learned about the conditions of the various cancers and the Body Refining Liquid definitely had a magical effect on the illness. While this liquid could strengthen the patient's body, on the other hand, it could also exterminate the cancer cells inside the patient's body.

However, the efficacy of Body Refining Liquid was rather too

strong and not something ordinary people could withstand. Due to this reason, he needed to dilute the liquid, only then would he bring it to Sun Wenjing's house. The silver needle he brought from the hospital would also be of great use as complementing silver needles with Body Refining Liquid would be more effective.

Back to the first floor, Tang Xiu then saw Gu Yin standing in front of Dai Xinyue with curiosity drawn on her face.

“Yinyin!” Tang Xiu called her.

Gu Yin turned around. As she saw Tang Xiu, she immediately ran over. Grabbing his hand, she said, “Master, she said that she's also your disciple. Is it true?”

“She's going to be! She hasn't yet formally become a disciple, though. But I'm preparing to accept her as my disciple.” Said Tang Xiu.

“Are you going to teach her a cultivation technique too?” asked Gu Yin.

Tang Xiu shook his head, “No, she's going to learn something different from you. She wants to learn medical knowledge, to become a great expert in traditional Chinese medicine in the future.”

“Master, the people I like the most are people who learn medicine. Being ill is very uncomfortable. And it's a good deed

being able to cure patients.” Gu Yi suddenly understood and said with a smile.

Having said that, she followed Tang Xiu in front of Dai Xinyue. Raising her small face, she said, “Big Sis, my name is Gu Yin. You can call me Yinyin later. Since we’re apprentice sisters and you’re my Junior Sister, you can tell me if someone bullies you. I’ll help you to vent back at them. Ah, right. I haven’t given you any gifts yet!”

"What?"

As surprised as she was, Dai Xinyue was dumbfounded, looking Gu Yin ran off. Her mouth twitched fiercely a few times. Why would she have to call that little girl call Senior Sister? What was this? A joke?

Tang Xiu serenely said, “What she said is right. You’ll be studying under me later than her, so it’s right that you’re only a Junior Sister. But since you have yet to officially acknowledge me as your Master, you still have a chance to withdraw.”

Dai Xinyue replied with a peculiar tone, “Master, just now she... Senior Sister said something about cultivation technique. What does it mean? Are you teaching different subjects to the both of us?”

“Yes. It’s different. You don’t need to ask what I teach your Senior Sister. If you perform well in the future, I’ll tell you, and perhaps I’ll teach you that subject as well. But if you don’t, then

you can only learn medical skills from me.” With a calm expression, Tang Xiu replied.

Supressing her curiosity, Dai Xinyue nodded, “I’ll bear it in mind, Master.”

Amidst the chatter, Gu Yin returned to the living room, holding a picture scroll in her hand and handing it over to Dai Xinyue, saying, “Junior Sister, I have nothing good to give you for now. But I’ll give you my own painting! Please don’t refuse it!”

## Chapter 236: Treating Cancer

---

Dai Xinyue shook her head and smiled, “How could I do that? Little Senior Sister’s gift is surely something I like.”

Having said it, she gently untied the rope. As her eyes landed on the painting, her expression turned slightly surprised, with amazement immediately following.

Initially, with Gu Yin’s age, even if she painted something, how good could it be? However, the painting was really good. The painting theme was a landscape of a green hill and a stream with a very familiar villa at the foothill. After carefully analyzing it, she realized that the villa on the painting was this exactly same villa she was in.

“It’s a great painting!” Dai Xinyue sincerely exclaimed.

Tang Xiu was also startled upon seeing the painting. With astonishment in his eyes, he asked with a smile, “Yinyin, you copied the background from our villa, right?”

Gu Yin laughed, “Master, usually, when I don’t have any classes, I get bored and try to find things to pass the time. Then I realized that painting is kinda exciting.”

Tang Xiu laughed, “Alright, I’ll teach you how to paint when I have free time later.”

“Okay!” Gu Yin nodded, smiling.

“Where’s Mom? Why isn’t she at home?” asked Tang Xiu.

“Grandma went to the restaurant, she said she will come back quite late.” Answered Gu Yin.

Tang Xiu said, “By the way, a few days later, I’m going out of town, and I’m gonna take you with me.”

Gu Yin was pleasantly surprised, “Really? Where are we going?”

“I’ll take you to see your Senior Sister.” Said Tang Xiu.

“Huh?” Gu Yin was curious. “Master, I have a Senior Sister? Why didn’t I hear you speak of her before?”

Tang Xiu didn’t answer her question, instead went to the kitchen and saw that the nanny was making dinner. Then, he decided to go to Sun Wenjing’s house after having supper.

Star City’s upscale residential area, the Amethyst Gold Garden.

Inside of a more than 160 square meters’ house with exquisite decoration, with high-end furniture placed in an orderly manner. At the moment, Sun Wenjing was sitting on the sofa, facing her two big brothers and younger sister’s questioning. In particular, the expression on their faces was gloomy.



“I’m telling you, Tang Xiu is the most skillful doctor in my Chinese Medical Hospital. He’s even hailed as a Divine Doctor. Even the hospital’s president has admitted that his medical skill is far inferior to his. If he can’t cure our mother’s illness, nobody in this world could do it. So you don’t need to say anything anymore, just let him try to cure Mom.” Said Sun Wenjing with all seriousness.

Sun Jianhai was the deputy director of Star City Finance Bureau and was the eldest son of the family. At this time, he deeply looked at his sister, Sun Wenjing, and said, “Did Li Hongji really say that even his medical skill is not as good as Tang Xiu’s?”

“Yes. Initially, President Li arranged me to be his assistant. But I judged him solely by his appearance then. I thought that even if his medical expertise is very good, but how powerful could he be at such a young age? But only later did I know how outrageous my thought was. He’s very skillful. Three out of four patients that came to our hospital for treatment were healed on the scene by him. As for the other patients, their condition also eased greatly after his treatment. As far as I know, ever since yesterday when he began to give medical service in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, he has received more than 20 pennants sent by the family members of the patients.”

"More than 20?"

Sun Jianhai was shocked, even Sun Jianjun and Sun Wenmin were also astonished. They all knew that when the patients’ family members gave pennants to doctors, that meant they were showing

their wholehearted gratitude.

Sun Wenjing continued, "There's also another thing that you don't know. There was a mother with her sick six or seven-year-old daughter. They traveled to each major hospital across the country and even visited Chinese and Western medical doctors. But no doctor was able to cure her. Finally, Tang Xiu, who came across them by chance, cured that child's strange illness! Therefore, when Dr. Tang comes, do not treat him with contempt. I myself am unable to cure Mom, so our last chance is on him."

Sun Jianhai spoke deeply, "If he can really cure Mom, I'll do anything he wants. Second Sister, arrange 200 thousand yuan. If he can cure Mom, give him the money as a thank you gift."

"No! We can't give him money!" Sun Wenjing angrily said.

Sun Jianhai was surprised, asking with a puzzled expression, "What do you mean?"

"Tang Xiu agreed to treat Mom under three conditions. One of which, is that he wants us to come up with 100 thousand yuan to be donated to the hospital's patients who come from destitute families. He himself doesn't want money."

"This..."

Sun Jianhai and the others were stupefied. This era they lived in, money seemed to have become a yardstick for measuring

everything. Nowadays, would even there be someone of noble character and unquestionable integrity, let alone a kindhearted youngster?

Sun Wenmin asked, “Big Sis, what are the other two conditions Dr. Tang stated?”

At the moment, Sun Jianhai and Sun Jianjun were also curious.

Sun Wenjing said, “One of the conditions is that I have to take Mom out of the hospital and bring her back home, while he’ll come to our home and treat Mom here. The other one is, that no matter if he cured Mom or not, our family must never disclose this matter. And we’re not in any way to talk about it to anyone.”

Sun Jianhai slowly said, “I understand his concern. There’s no medical service all over the world that can cure medium stage liver cancer. So he doesn’t want to cause a sensation. I didn’t expect that so young a doctor with such superb medical expertise would be this low-profile. To be honest, I’m really anticipating him now.”

Sun Wenmin said, “Eldest Brother, I’ll provide the 100 thousand yuan! Regardless of whether he can cure Mom or not, I’m willing to provide the money and donate it to the Chinese Medical Hospital’s patients with destitute family conditions.”

A trace of smile was revealed on Sun Jianhai’s face as he nodded silently.

Half an hour later, the bell rang. Sun Wenjing dashed to the door and opened it, seeing Tang Xiu and Dai Xinyue standing outside.

“Dr. Tang, Dr. Dai, sorry for troubling you.” Sun Wenjing said politely.

Tang Xiu shook his head and entered the hall. Then, he saw Sun Wenjing’s brothers and sister. After a brief introduction, he exchanged a few pleasantries with the others and finally said, “Where’s the patient? Take me to her to have a look at her condition.”

Sun Wenjing said, "Come with me!"

In a spacious and bright room, Sun Wenjing’s mother leaned on the bed, watching TV. As she saw her children coming with Tang Xiu and Dai Xinyue, she immediately sat up and smiled, “Child, is this the Dr. Tang that you and President Li have talked about?”

“Yes, Mom. He’s Dr. Tang.” Answered Sun Wenjing.

Tang Xiu let out a faint smile. While looking at the elderly woman’s slightly pale face, he said with a gentle expression, “Elderly lady, I’ll have to check the condition of your body first. And when I begin to treat you, perhaps you’ll have to endure very painful aches. Would you be able to endure it?”

The old lady smiled, “Don't worry, doctor! What painful things have this old woman not taken in life anyway? There are a lot of

knife marks on my body, however much it hurts, I can endure it all.”

“You have a lot of knife marks?” Tang Xiu was puzzled.

The old lady laughed, saying, “Before I got sick, I undergone several surgeries. Also, I’m a woman with children, shouldn’t giving birth be the most painful? Whatever the pain is, you can rest assured that I can bear it, Dr. Tang!”

Tang Xiu suddenly understood. He smiled as he nodded and said, “In this world, mothers are truly the greatest existences. The saying is really justified. That’s why filial affection is the most important of all virtues. Your children are truly good, elderly lady!”

Having said that, he took the old lady’s wrist. Through sensing her pulse, he immediately discovered that there were indeed many noxious existences inside her body. This kind of toxin should be called “cancer cells” by the medical community. Moreover, most of the toxin was in her bloodstream!

“Doctor Tang, what have you found from your examination?” Sun Wenjing quickly asked nervously after seeing Tang Xiu take back his hand.

“I don’t have 100% assurance to cure her, but there’s hope. Help me prepare a basin of warm water and a few clean towels. The two of you, come and help the elderly lady take her clothes off, leaving only her underwear.” Said Tang Xiu.

Warm water! Towels!

Sun Wenjing and the others prepared them quickly. After the old lady's coat had been taken off, she laid on the bed.

Tang Xiu said, "Go and pour another half a cup of warm water again. Do remember that it's best to keep the temperature between 30 to 40 degrees."

"Understood!" Sun Wenjing quickly poured another cup of warm water and handed it to Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu took the bottle of diluted Body Refining Liquid from his pocket. He dropped three drops of it into the cup and handed it to Sun Wenjing to let the old lady take it.

The Sun siblings didn't ask Tang Xiu about what he put into the water. They stood with a fully trusting attitude and quietly watched from the side!

Tang Xiu said, "You'd better hold the elderly lady's arms and legs, and immediately put the towel in her mouth to let her bite it. Or else, she'll move her body due to the acute pain when I begin using the silver needles."

"Understood!"

The Sun brothers acted accordingly to Tang Xiu's instructions.

A few minutes after the old lady had taken half of the cup of warm water mixed with Body Refining Liquid, her body began to slightly shiver. Furthermore, with the passing time, the pain became more intense. If it weren't for her four children holding her arms and legs, perhaps she'd have already curled up and convulsed.

Whilst watching sweat overflow from the pores all over the old lady's body, her color gradually becoming red, Tang Xiu immediately took the silver needles and quickly pierced nine big acupuncture points on her body.

After having finished everything, Tang Xiu stood still at the side, waiting for the old lady's response.

The shivering body of the old lady turned more intense. The pain made her faint and sober up repeatedly, founding herself still alive. Sun Jianhai and Sun Jianjun complexions turned unsightly to the extreme, yet an extremely loving and distressed expression was also there, whereas Sun Wenjing and Sun Wenmin had tears flowing down their faces unceasingly.

Looking at their appearances, Tang Xiu secretly appreciated them inwardly. To have such filial children, this old lady's whole life truly was worth it.

"Ah? What smell is this?" Sun Jianjun suddenly frowned as he covered his nose and asked.

“It’s foul stink!” said Tang Xiu.

Sun Jianjun was puzzled, “Foul stink? From where is this foul stink coming? Mom’s body...”

Tang Xiu explained, “In my opinion, the cancer cells inside her body are toxins that are harmful and detrimental to her body. It mixed with her sweat, emanating the foul stench. You must endure it and make sure she lies flat. Or else, if the silver needles on her body are moved, it will be very dangerous.”



## Chapter 237: Remarkable Effect

---

The Sun siblings were pleasantly surprised upon hearing it. If the discharged substances were really cancer cells, it meant that their mother's condition was highly likely to be cured

Half an hour later, the twitching of the old lady's body had greatly reduced, but the stench coming out of her body was disgusting. Black viscous substances were discharged o all over her body's surface, her face and hair being no exception.

"Let go of her! Wait for a few minutes and then clean her body."

Having spoken, Tang Xiu pulled out the nine silver needles from the old lady's body. After disinfecting them with alcohol cotton, he then turned around to leave the room.

Following him out of the room, Dai Xinyue asked curiously, "Master, what method of treatment did you use? You dropped a few drops of medicinal liquid and pierced nine silver needles. That's it?"

"The medicinal liquid I gave her is very special. Only very few people in this world aside from me can make it. As for the nine silver needles, I just sealed the vital acupuncture points in her whole body to prevent the spreading of the toxins as well as reducing the amount of the discharged substances." Answered Tang Xiu.

"What will the effect be?" asked Dai Xinyue.

“I haven’t diagnosed her, so how would I know! Just wait until her children wash and clean her body, then I’ll examine her condition again.” Said Tang Xiu.

Shortly after, Sun Jianhai and Sun Jianjun came out of the room. Looking at Tang Xiu who was sitting on the living room’s sofa, Sun Jianhai hesitated for a moment before asking, “Dr. Tang, my mother, she...”

Tang Xiu interrupted him, shaking his head, “I don’t know yet. Wait until I check her, only then will we know about the effects of the medicine. Don’t worry, though. Just sit down and wait for a while.”

"Alright!" Sun Jianhai nodded.

After sitting in front of Tang Xiu, he asked curiously, “Dr. Tang, have we met before? It’s just that I somehow feel that you’re familiar. Please don’t misunderstand. It’s not like I’m intentionally doing this to become friends with you. It’s just that I have a particular skill that allows me to memorize people’s face well. I’m definitely sure that I’ve seen you somewhere before.”

Tang Xiu laughed, “Well, I’m also good at remembering people, but I don’t recall having met you before.”

Involuntarily laughing, Sun Jianhai said, “Perhaps it’s my memory failing me! But, as young as you’re, yet you can become an on-duty medical expert in our Star City’s Chinese Medical

Hospital. Truly, heroes come out of the young!”

“I just hung my name there and rarely give medical services, neither am I an official doctor.” Said Tang Xiu.

“What?” As surprised as he was, Sun Jianhai said, “Didn’t you start working yesterday? How would...”

“I’m a student. And I just finished my CET and happened to have some time on this summer vacation. Back then, it was difficult to turn down Li Hongji’s passionate offer, so I agreed to give medical service in Chinese Medical Hospital until I begin university in September. Perhaps, I’ll have to go to Shanghai University by then,” said Tang Xiu.

Sun Jianhai looked at Tang Xiu with disbelief. Even in his dreams, he didn’t expect that such a superb medical expert would unexpectedly be a student who just finished his CET. Hesitating for a moment, he then asked curiously, “Dr. Tang, with such superb medical expertise, why didn’t you apply to any medical colleges or universities?”

Tang Xiu shook his head and replied, “No. I have never thought of becoming a doctor in my whole life. I have a lot of things to do. Whether it is my academic life, running my small business, all of them makes me busy.”

Amazed, Sun Jianhai asked, “You also run a business? Could you tell me what business it is?”

Silent for a moment, Tang Xiu shook his head, saying, “It’s just some cosmetics and health products. The company has just recently set up, it’s inconvenient to tell you the name.”

Sun Jianhai nodded. Suddenly, his expression changed greatly, exclaiming involuntarily, “AH! I remember! No wonder! It’s no wonder that you seemed familiar before. Yes, your name is Tang Xiu, the legal owner of the Magnificent Tang Corporation as well as the big boss, am I right?”

“How do you know?” Tang Xiu was surprised.

Shocked, Sun Jianhai asked back, “You’re really the big boss of the Magnificent Tang Corporation?”

"I am!" Tang Xiu concealed it no longer as he saw that Sun Jianhai could guess it.

Forcing out a smile, Sun Jianhai said, “Young and promising, truly! Anyways, I work in the Finance Bureau as a Deputy Director. A while ago the Bureau of Industry and Commerce’s director—my old classmate, had a drink with me and mentioned you. Out of curiosity, I asked information about your company and saw your name and photo on the documents. But, I really have never thought that the divine doctor of Star City Chinese Medical Hospital is unexpectedly the big boss of the Magnificent Tang Corporation.”

Dao Xinyue at the side was looking at Tang Xiu, dumbfounded. Although she knew that Tang Xiu’s family was rich to be able to

live in South Gate Town, which was the most upscale villa complex in Star City, she had never thought that Tang Xiu would be the big boss of the recently greatly famed Magnificent Tang Corporation.

Heaven! In the end, did she just come under a powerful Master?

At this moment, Dai Xinyue inwardly rejoiced. Feeling fortunate of becoming Tang Xiu's assistant as well as rejoicing that she put forward a plea to worship him as a teacher. Having such an amazing Master, a lot of people probably would wake up from their dreams laughing!

Vaguely smiling, Tang Xiu said, "Well, the director of your Bureau of Industry and Commerce leaked my information, shouldn't I sue him?"

Sun Jianhai stared blankly, an embarrassed expression donned on his face. He quickly said, "Doc,... Dr. Tang, please don't! He can tell me because we're bros. We grew up together and were classmates from our childhood until becoming adults. Afterward, as we entered the bureaucracy, we advanced and retreated together. He will never tell anything if it were other people."

Smiling, Tang Xiu said, "It's alright, I'm just joking. However, please tell your classmate to not disclose my situation to anyone. Although I'm the boss of the Magnificent Tang Corporation, I don't like to be in the limelight. I also have given full authority of managing the company to General Manager Kang Xia, so I usually don't meddle with the management."

“I’ll make sure to convey your message,” Sun Jianhai nodded and said.

Very quickly, Sun Wenjing and Sun Wenmin had helped their mother shower and put on clean clothes. Sun Wenjing then came to the living room with a peculiar expression, saying, “Dr. Tang, would you come inside and have a look? My mom, she...”

“How is she?” Standing up, Tang Xiu asked.

Sun Wenjing replied, “She said that her body is very comfortable; like she became tens of years younger. Although her limbs are still weak, the pain caused by her cancer cells has completely disappeared.”

Tang Xiu nodded and walked into the room as he saw the old lady leaning on the bed with a rosy complexion.

“Elderly lady, I’m going to check your pulse to examine the condition of your body.”

The old lady replied gratefully, “Thank you, Dr. Tang. I feel much better now.”

Tang Xiu smiled faintly and checked her pulse. Using his spiritual sense to observe her, he found that two-thirds of the cancer cells inside the old lady’s body had been eliminated, with one-third still remaining inside. Furthermore, her physical fitness at this time was no less vigorous than a young person.

“It’s quite unexpected. The effect of the Body Refining Liquid turned out to be so big for ordinary people! If I were to sell this liquid, wouldn’t even a drop be sold for a huge sum of money?”

Tang Xiu secretly shook his head. But his action caused the Sun siblings to turn anxious and tensed up.

Sun Jianhai quickly asked, “Dr. Tang, how is she?”

Tang Xiu said with a smile, “Two-thirds of her cancer cells have been killed and excreted. As for the other one-third, I think they need to be eliminated slowly. Hence, I’ll give a bottle of this medicinal liquid to you. Follow my instructions from before, taking three drops and mixing them with water for her to drink. After the medicinal liquid in this bottle runs out, I think the cancer cells inside her body will be completely eliminated, but...”

The Sun siblings were immediately overjoyed.

“But what, Dr. Tang?” asked Sun Wenjing.

“But, you have to be mentally prepared. Once the cancer cells inside her body have been completely removed and she returns to a normal condition, I’m afraid she’ll be able to live for 20 years more at least. So the four of you should do your best to be filial to the elderly lady.” Tang Xiu said with a smile.

“T-T... twenty years?”

Sun Wenjing stutteringly asked. She knew that her mother was nearly 80 years old. If she could live for more 20 years, wouldn't she be able to live to 100 years?

Tang Xiu laughed, "Yes. At least 20 years more."

Sun Wenjing swallowed her saliva. Looking at the bottle handed by Tang Xiu, she hesitated for a moment and asked, "Dr. Tang, might I ask you about this medicine..."

Tang Xiu said, "This is my secret medicinal liquid which will be very hard for outsiders to get it. Making this secret medicinal liquid in itself is a very daunting task. So I don't want your mother's treatment be disclosed to anyone. Otherwise, it will only bring about great troubles for me!"

"We won't do that, absolutely!" The Sun siblings quickly promised.

Sun Wenjing spoke again, "Dr. Tang, about your visiting fee..."

Tang Xiu waved his hand, saying, "About the money, just keep in mind my conditions. Alright. If there's nothing else, I'll go back now. Do remember to wait for a few days. If you don't feel relieved about the old lady's condition, you can take her to another hospital for an examination."

Another hospital?



The Sun siblings instantly understood Tang Xiu's meaning as they nodded and replied in unison.

After leaving the Sun's residence.

Tang Xiu, along with the not yet recovered from shock Dai Xinyue, just left the complex's entrance. They stood on the roadside, waiting for a taxi. Tang Xiu then said, "Well, you've seen the treatment today. As for the effect, you should also pay attention to it closely. Also, you must never tell about the old lady's cancer to anyone. I want you to promise me."

Dai Xinyue finally sobered up and promised with all seriousness, "Don't worry, Master! This matter will absolutely never come out of my mouth."

Tang Xiu nodded, "I'm afraid that I can only give medical services in Chinese medical hospital for three days more at the most. Afterward, I won't go there again. As for teaching you medical skills, you must use the next three days to seriously study. Later, after I have free time, I'll teach you again."

A bit of disappointment showed on Dai Xinyue's face upon hearing it. But she nodded and said, "Master, I know that you're a busy man. Don't worry, though. I'll definitely seriously learn from you."

## Chapter 238: Other Relatives

---

In the following days, Tang Xiu still gave medical services in the hospital. The number of patients he treated also increased. His fame spread rapidly, and it was not only limited to Star City. Even throughout the country, his fame attracted a lot of patients.

Furthermore, as he gave medical services in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital these days and was able to cure a lot of very difficult and incurable illnesses, his reputation greatly spread in the medical community, even Presidents from several major hospitals in Beijing and Shanghai contacted Li Hongji, inquiring about Tang Xiu.

At dusk.

As Tang Xiu left the hospital's consultation building, he saw Long Zhengyu leaning on his car and smiling at him.

"Why did you come?" Curious, Tang Xiu asked.

Long Zhengyu patted the car's door, saying, "CET's results will come out tomorrow. But I'm not here to congratulate you in advance, though. Anyways, I heard that you've been giving medical services in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital these days and have received hundreds of pennants?"

Tang Xiu laughed, "Yeah. But forget about those pennants. Those things are not useful, just the grateful regards of the patients' relatives that matters, so I gave them to Li Hongji. It's up to him

what to do with them.”

Long Zhengyu gave a thumb up and exclaimed, “To be honest, I really have to thank my good-for-nothing little brother. He did the rightest thing in his life for taking you to me. Let’s go, I’ve booked an anteroom in Long’s Dining Hall. The two boys—Bai Tao and Chu Yi just got there. Let’s have a drink tonight, not going home until we’re drunk.”

Tang Xiu was about to sit on co-pilot seat, but Long Zhengyu stopped him and took a document folder out of the driver’s seat. He handed it over to Tang Xiu, saying, “You drive. Let me test your driving skills.”

Puzzled, Tang Xiu replied, “But I haven’t gotten the driver’s license yet, and you want me to drive?”

“Open the document folder and have a look!” Long Zhengyu laughed.

Opening the document folder, Tang Xiu found his driving license inside, along with two keys. Taking the keys, he then asked, “What are these?”

“Well, I gave you the house, so you can consider it as me supporting you, no? Gifting you the house without a car, it won’t do. I don’t know what kind of car you like, however. So I just bought the same car as Lulu’s. Well, you can consider it as lover’s model anyway.”

“Land Rover’s Range Rover type?” Tang Xiu was surprised.

“It seems you really know Lulu’s disposition well. Yup. The color is exactly the same as hers, white! And it looks great too. The car is parked in the Long’s Dining Hall’s underground parking garage.” Long Zhengyu said with a smile.

Tang Xiu was at a loss whether he had to be happy or cry, saying, “You’re really taking us as a couple, aren’t you? I tell you, my relationship with Lulu is pure. But, I do like that car a lot. Thanks a bunch for gifting and sending it to me! Anyway, let’s go, tonight’s drinks are on me.”

“Well, since the famous Young Master Tang wants to bleed, then I’ll be sure to be blunt.” Long Zhengyu said with a laugh.

Tang Xiu sat in the driver’s seat. He took the time to feel and familiarize himself with the features of the car before he started it, and then started driving. At first, he wasn’t skilled roadwise, but after a few minutes of attunement, he gradually grasped it.

He didn’t violate any traffic regulations even though it was his first time and drove to the Long’s Dining Hall’s underground parking lot. Satisfied, he patted the steering wheel, nodding, “A good car is a good car indeed. This one is a lot cooler than the car for driver training!”

“Do you like my Maserati? How about I give it to you?” Long Zhengyu.

“Nope. Forget it! You got a strange smell inside your car.” Tang Xiu shook his head and said.

“Strange smell?” Long Zhengyu was puzzled. “No way! My car’s cologne is the best in the world. It’s priced at several hundred thousand per bottle! Except for its fragrance, where would have any strange smell?”

Tang Xiu teased him, “Who knows how many women have you played with in this car? It’d be damn strange if there’s no strange smell at all! Let’s go, take me to see my car!”

“Damn you, buddy!”

Long Zhengyu didn’t know whether he had to laugh or be angry as he then got off from the co-pilot seat.

Quickly, he took Tang Xiu to a brand new white Land Rover SUV, saying, “Well, you wanna try it and have a lap since you didn’t drink anything yet?”

“Forget it! But, isn’t it way too good a license plate you got here? Three sixes is kinda showing off, isn’t it?” Tang Xiu shook his head and lightly laughed.

Smiling, Long Zhengyu said, “The car was purchased with your ID card, and the car’s license plate was also done with your ID card. Six six six, go go go. I think it looks good, no big deal.”

Tang Xiu shook his head, “Let’s go upstairs and drink. Anyways, for those two guys to come to Star City, that matter is over, right?”

“Yeah, completely. 90% of the Zhangs’ assets have been divided by us, whereas the leftover 10% went to some unimportant chaps of the Zhangs and to the banks. This time, all of our parties have eaten to the full. Bai Tao and Chu Yi joined late, so they only got a little, but they had gotten down their capitals as well. They also have added several billion in investment into the big project’s preparation. A few days later, every group leader of our clique will gather to divide the shares.” Whilst walking, Long Zhengyu spoke.

Tang Xiu, “Bai Tao and Chu Yi are scions from respected families, but they don’t give off the vibes of hedonistic scions from rich families whatsoever. That’s why I like them. Especially Chu Yi, he’s very smart and reliable. Damn! If you didn’t mention it, I would have forgotten it. I still owe him some money!”

“You owe him money? For what?” Long Zhengyu was puzzled.

Tang Xiu smiled, “Chu Yi sent me a box of precious medicinal herbs and I haven’t paid him for it yet. Well, forget it. I won’t mention this matter for now since I’ll pay it back a while later after I got some money. Besides, he’s a rich boss, he’s not short of money.”

Long Zhengyu laughed, “That’s true. But, are you short of money recently? I bumped into Kang Xia a few days ago when you called her to transfer you some money.”

A few days ago?

Tang Xiu understood in a flash, asking, “You mean that 20 million?”

“Yea!” Long Zhengyu nodded.

“I was going to buy something and needed 20 million. I only had a few million so I called Kang Xia to send more! Actually, it’s real. I’m really poor, having no money and can only become a freeloader. But you’re the famous Young Master Long, young and rich, would you please give me some pocket money? You don’t have to give much, thought. If you have the nerve to give me 1.8 billion yuan, I’m sure I won’t refuse it.” said Tang Xiu. [1]

"Go to hell!" Long Zhengyu laughed and cursed.

The two laughed merrily and finally arrived at the presidential suite of Long’s Dining Hall. Seeing Bai Tao and Chu Yi, the four young men gathered and begun drinking.

“Ring, ring, ring...”

Just as Tang Xiu was about to double up the foreign wine into his stomach, the mobile in his pocket rang. He took out the phone and saw the caller ID. It turned out to be his mother. He immediately made an excuse to the others. Whilst walking outside, he answered the phone and said with a smile, “Hi Mom, something up?”

Su Lingyun's slightly crying voice came out of the phone, "Xiu'er, can... can you come back now? Your grandma... your grandma is injured. I want you to accompany me back home to see her!"

Grandmother?

An honest, genial face appeared in Tang Xiu's memory. Although 10,000 years had lapsed, he still clearly remembered his grandmother's face. He also remembered how she deeply cared for him in his childhood, more than she cared about the Su siblings.

"Mom, no need to worry. Can you tell me what's going on exactly? Grandma is in the countryside, how was she hurt?" asked Tang Xiu.

Su Lingyun answered, "I don't know the details. But it looks like some people bullied your grandma and beat her. It's your second Aunt next door who called me. Your grandma has been sent to the county hospital by them, but I don't know anything else."

Tang Xiu replied with a deep tone, "Don't worry, Mom! I'll go back to South Gate Town immediately to pick you up. We'll go to ancestral home tonight! Trust me. As long as I'm there, grandma won't have any troubles!"

"Alright!" Su Lingyun replied.

Tang Xiu hung up the phone and went back into the room. He



then spoke with a heavy tone, “Something happened in my ancestral home, so I have to leave now. Please continue your fun and put the bill on me since the Long’s Dining Hall’s membership seems to provide this service.”

“Tang Xiu, what happened? Do you want our help?” Long Zhengyu was confused and asked.

Tang Xiu shook his head, “No need for now. I’ll contact you if it’s necessary later! Well, I gotta go now!”

Having said that, he picked up the document folder and quickly left the presidential suite.

Coming down to the underground parking lot, ignoring that he had just drunk a lot, he drove the SUV and quickly returned to South Gate Town.

At this time, with worry all over her face, Su Lingyun was standing in front of the villa’s courtyard entrance, waiting. Upon seeing a car stopping in front of her and Tang Xiu getting out from it, she was astonished and immediately asked, “Sonny, where did you get this car from? Also, when did you learn to drive?”

“I went to a driving school to take the driver’s license test some time ago, and I just got it today. The car was gifted by my friend! Mom, take your things. We’ll go to our ancestral home tonight.”

“You... you’ll drive us there? Are you sure you can do it?” Su

Lingyun said.

“Mom, I have a driver’s license, so naturally it won’t be a problem,” said Tang Xiu.

Su Lingyun nodded, “My luggage is already packed up. Pack your stuff first, perhaps we’ll have to stay there for some time.”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment. Then, he dialed Kang Xia’s cell number. After she picked it up, he said, “Can you do me a favor? It’s private!”

“What happened?” asked Kang Xia.

“My mother and I need to go to our ancestral home. Although there are nannies here to look after Yinyin, I don’t feel relieved. Can you stay in my house in South Gate Town while I’m away to take care of her?” said Tang Xiu.

Kang Xia said, “No problem.”

Tang Xiu thanked her and then entered the villa to pack his things. A few minutes later, he casually grabbed several sets of clothes. Then, along with his mother—Su Lingyun, he drove the car toward his ancestral home’s direction. Since he only got his driver’s license, he didn’t drive too fast and could only use the navigation system to find the road there.

# Chapter 239: The Causes of the Matter

---

Qinghe County was the most remote county in Star City. Its economic development was also the most backward with a population of hundreds of thousands of people and nearly a hundred kilometers from Star City.

A Land Rover SUV was traversing on the bumpy roads with dim street lights, driving fast toward the county's hospital.

12 o'clock, midnight.

The SUV went to county's hospital's entrance. The two lazy security guards at the entrance were shocked, even modestly saluting.

"Mom, we've arrived."

Tang Xiu was weary as he called out to the drowsy Su Lingyun with a low voice.

Su Lingyun sobered up. She looked at the scene under the dim light outside and was surprised, "We arrived so quick?"

Tang Xiu said, "Qinghe County isn't far from Star City, and I had driven for more than two hours. If the road was good, perhaps it wouldn't take one and half an hours. Mom, call the neighbor—Second Aunt to ask which ward grandma is in."

Su Lingyun was as though waking up from a dream. She took out her mobile phone, dialed a number and spoke with the other side for a while. Her expression turned very ugly as she looked at Tang Xiu and said, “Your grandma, she... she’s still waiting for the doctor in the ward for surgery! It seems that her leg is broken.”

"What?"

Tang Xiu looked at Su Lingyun with disbelief. It was already three to four hours that his grandma got injured, and it takes only half an hour from the village to the county. Why hadn’t she had the surgery until now?

Tang Xiu’s expression was grim. He said with a heavy tone, “Mom, let’s go in now.”

Su Lingyun nodded heavily. She opened the door and got off the car, hurriedly running toward the treatment building. A few minutes later, the mother and son then arrived in front of the operating room’s door on the fourth floor of the treatment building. In the corridor outside the operating room’s door, he saw his grandmother lying on a wheeled stretcher, along with her neighbor Second Aunt and her son, Su Ben.

“Sis Lingyun, you finally came. Auntie, she’s heavily injured but now there’s no queue for the surgery!” Upon seeing Su Lingyun, Chen Huiying was pleasantly surprised and greeted immediately her.

Su Lingyun quickly asked, “Huiying, what happened? Are there a

lot of people having surgery today?”

Forcing out a smile, Chen Huiying said, “I dare say that except for the few doctors in this operating room, there’s no patient undergoing surgery. They’re just intentionally delaying. There’s a total of six people wounded from our village. The others have been taken away by their families, saying that we must change hospitals. But Little Ben had just called them and found that the other hospitals are also deliberately delaying. So they sent them to Star City under desperation.

“Why? Isn’t it the hospital’s duty to help the dying and heal the wounded? Is it because it’s too late...”

Chen Huiying interrupted her, wryly smiling, “Someone brought trouble to our village. He’s also the one who injured the villagers, at the same time also injuring two others more. I heard he’s from a rich and powerful family. No matter if it’s the Public Security Bureau or the Health Bureau, they’re their people. So they must be the ones pulling the strings.”

Tang Xiu interrupted, “Second Aunt, what’s the reason for the conflict?”

Looking at Tang Xiu, Chen Huiying squeezed out a smile, saying, “The government wants to levy our village’s land, saying that they will build a industrial site. It was a good thing initially, but... but it turns out that each household and family’s land, it’s only priced 20 thousand yuan per Mu. Tang Xiu, you’re educated and can think clearly. You tell me, would 20 thousand yuan be enough for anything nowadays? We’re just ordinary people relying on farming

to eat. With that amount of money, once we've spent them, we can only drink and eat the wind later!"

Tang Xiu took a deep breath with anger suffusing in his eyes.

He knew his aunt was right. People in rural areas depended on their lands. If they didn't have their lands, how would they live in the future?

20 thousand yuan?

Houses in Qinghe County were already priced two to three thousand per square foot. Would 20 thousand yuan even be sufficient to buy a house? It wouldn't be enough! Furthermore, the price for the expropriated land and indemnity was definitely a dozen times or even a hundred times more than 20 thousand yuan.

Looking at his grandmother on the stretcher with a tight frown, his murderous intent raised upon seeing her pained expression.

Taking a deep breath and repressing the hatred inside of him, he lifted the thin quilt covering his grandmother. Gently holding and placing her on the chair, he then looked at Su Ben, saying, "Brother Ben, help me hold grandma. I'll examine her injury."

Chen Huiying anxiously said, "Tang Xiu, don't do unnecessary things. Your grandma not only has a broken leg, that bunch of bastards also kicked her a few times. We don't know whether her bones are dislocated."

Tang Xiu looked at her and shook his head. As Su Ben propped up his grandmother, he gently ripped her trouser leg. After it was torn up to the leg bend, the swelling looked to have subsided, and it was obvious that the bone was fractured, causing Tang Xiu turn a bit distressed.

"Ah, it's... you, Xiu'er!"

Zhang Shi woke up in pain. When she saw that the one squatting in front of her was her grandson, Tang Xiu, a smile was squeezed out on her wrinkled face. As she spoke, she also stroked Tang Xiu's head with her skinny palm.

Tang Xiu began to act supinely as he looked up and smiled, "Grandma, please endure the pain while I examine your injuries. Mom knows that I learned a medical skill recently and am also a skilled doctor at Star City Chinese Medical Hospital."

Su Lingyun came to Zhang Shi's side and said with worry all over her face, "Xiu'er, can you do it? Don't let your grandma's injuries worsen."

"Don't worry, Mom!" said Tang Xiu.

Having said that, his palms gently pressed Zhang Shi's swelling leg and found that her leg bone was fractured. If other doctors were to treat it, perhaps it would be very troublesome. After all, grandma was old and it would be very difficult for her bone to be healed. But, this state of injury was not a problem for him.

“Auntie, how did you come here?” Tang Xiu looked up and asked.

Chen Huiying said, “Su Quan brought us here with his car. He drove the others to Star City.”

Tang Xiu nodded and looked at the operating room. He knew clearly well that a few doctors in white coats were inside. As Chen Huiying said, there were no patients in the operating room, only three doctors playing Dou Dizhu.

"Let's go!" Tang Xiu propped Zhang Shi up and spoke with a heavy tone.

Su Lingyun hurriedly asked, “Xiu’er, where are we going? Aren’t we going to wait for your Grandma’s surgery?”

Tang Xiu sneered, "Don’t you see it, Mom? Someone bought the people in this hospital, they won’t perform the surgery on grandma. I’ll settle the account with them later. We’ll take Grandma and go home first. I have a way to cure her injury.”

"You really have a way?"

Although Su Lingyun knew that the President of Star City Chinese Medical Hospital personally hired Tang Xiu, but she had never seen her son treat patients, so she was a bit apprehensive.



Tang Xiu said, “I can it, Mom, don’t worry! I won’t joke with Grandma’s injuries.”

Su Lingyun nodded. She looked at Chen Huiying and said, “Huiying, let’s go! Since Xiu’er can cure Mom’s injuries, then we’ll leave.”

Chen Huiying hesitated for a moment. She looked at Tang Xiu and then at Su Lingyun, only then did she nod with a wry smile. She was actually a bit annoyed toward Tang Xiu because he knew the situation. He was obviously only a high schooler, where would he have any medical skills? Even if he had studied it from others, wouldn’t it better to stay and wait for treatment in the hospital?

However, since Su Lingyun said to go, she also couldn’t say anything.

Tang Xiu held Zhang Shi, leaving the hospital and going straight toward the parking lot.

Su Ben quickly said, “Tang Xiu, we’re going the wrong way. That way is the parking lot. Let’s go back and head outside to get a car.”

Tang Xiu shook his head and went straight to the parking lot. He told Su Lingyun to take out the car key from his pocket and taught her how to unlock it. Then, after the door was opened, he carefully put Zhang Shi in the back seat, saying, “Mom, you and Second Aunt seat at grandma’s sides. Brother Ben, you take the co-pilot seat.”

Upon seeing Su Lingyun taking the car key from Tang Xiu's pocket, Chen Huiying and Su Ben were dumbfounded as the car's lights flashed. The car in front of them was really too luxurious. Su Ben, in particular. He was 23 years old now. Although he usually tagged along with the construction team to build houses everywhere, he still knew that this car, the Land Rover Range Rover.

“Tang... Tang Xiu, is this car... yours?”

Upon hearing Tang Xiu's words, only then did Su Ben awake from his dazed state and asked stutteringly.

“Yes. It's mine!” said Tang Xiu.

Su Ben swallowed his saliva and said with shivering lips, “This Land Rover... is from the Range Rover series, isn't it? I saw a big boss driving this kind of car and he's very rich, with tens of millions in assets. This car, at the cheapest, costs more than 1 million, right?”

Tang Xiu said indifferently, “Let's not talk about the car, we'll go back first.”

Su Ben hesitated for a moment and clenched his teeth as he opened the co-pilot's door and quickly drilled into it. Feeling the spacious space and cozy seat, he felt like he was dreaming; he had never taken a ride in such a good car. He didn't even know where to put his hands and feet.

Tang Xiu started the car, driving out of the hospital skillfully and heading toward the Songlou small town, to the Su family village. The Su family village was not far from the center of the county, taking only a dozen minutes to get there. However, due to the bad road, Tang Xiu drove slowly in order to prevent his grandmother receiving too many tremors.

A dilapidated house with a shabby courtyard.

Zhang Shi lived here. Even the Su Family had lived here for generations. All the villagers of the Su Village, aside from the wives they married, were all surnamed Su. Almost every family was related in kinship and was regarded as their own family.

“We’ll get grandmother inside first. I need to prepare something,” Said Tang Xiu.

Puzzled, Su Lingyun said, “Xiu’er, what needs to be prepared? Tell me, I’ll go find it.”

## Chapter 240: Back Home

---

Tang Xiu rejected Su Lingyun's proposition. What he needed to find was medicinal herbs and silver needles. Because he came in a hurry and didn't know what exactly happened to his grandmother, he didn't bring anything to treat her injuries.

"Big Brother Ben, are you sleepy?" asked Tang Xiu.

Su Ben shook his head, "I'm not."

"Alright, then come with me! I need to find some things as fast as possible and then come back to treat grandma's injuries."

"Alright!" Su Ben nodded.

Tang Xiu knew Su Ben very well. He was simple and honest ever since he was small until he grew up. Usually, he rarely spoke. But no matter which family faced hardships in the village, he would lend them a hand. This trait was inherited from his father, the honest and considerate Second Uncle who died young. A typical peasant who was resigned to his plot of land and toiled over it with his back to the sky.

In fact, even though Tang Xiu lived his childhood in Su family village for ten years, [he didn't have the same family name](#). It was reasonable to say that he should address Chen Huiying as maternal Second Aunt and address the elders in the village as maternal uncles and aunts. Yet, in order to prevent Tang Xiu feel he didn't belong, Su Lingyun made him address them in accordance with the

Su family members' names, and address everyone as paternal uncles and aunts, or paternal grandfather or grandmother.

Apart from this, all of his relatives had the same surname as his maternal grandparents and maternal uncles.

Tang Xiu led Su Ben back to the car and quickly drove out of the village. To the north of the Su family village were the Yuzhou Ridge and a tens of meters wide large river. The land was considered to be located on a mountain on one side and water on the other. A typical fertile land.

Seeing Tang Xiu not going into the town nor taking the county road, instead moving toward the mountain north of the village, Su Ben was confused and suddenly asked, "Tang Xiu, why are we going there?"

Tang Xiu smiled, "Do you remember when you took us to the mountains to pick wild fruits when we were small? I saw a lot of wild medicinal herbs in the mountains before. But at that time, I didn't know about them and thought they were weeds. Now, since I have studied medicine, I can accurately pick them out. So we'll go the mountains to get some herbs and then come back."

Su Ben understood in a flash. He raised his thumb and said, "You're really good, Tang Xiu. Haven't you gone to study in Star City for just six years? But not only did you come back driving a Land Rover SUV, you have also learned medical skills. If I knew, I would have gone to Star City earlier."

Tang Xiu smiled faintly and no longer spoke. It was a fact that he studied in Star City. But his abilities, if not for the car accident and great fortuitous events, he'd perhaps still be an ignorant student now, studying step by step every day and waiting for his CET's results.

Fate was truly mysterious sometimes.

After Tang Xiu became a Supreme in the Immortal World, he never believed in fate again, because he thought that he could control his destiny and the heavenly law. But fate and heavenly law did have supreme influence and power over ordinary people.

The night was pitch black.

Feeling the cool breeze of the late summer night, Tang Xiu felt that his foul mood had faded lot. He would investigate the beating of his grandmother. No matter what background the other party had, he would never forgive them, for they had hurt the people he cared about.

“I'll park the car, and then we'll go uphill!”

At the foot of the hill, after calming down, Tang Xiu opened the car's door and calmly said.

Su Ben hesitated, “Tang Xiu, you're not afraid of someone stealing the car?”

With a pale smile, Tang Xiu said, "It's the middle of the night. Who in their right mind would run up to the mountain at this time? Besides, who would have the ability to steal it anyway! Alright, finding medicinal herbs is more important, we don't need to think about other things."

Su Ben nodded. It was, after all, Tang Xiu's car. Only, he was now very curious about him, about from where had come the money to buy such a luxurious car as well as curious about how good his medical skills were.

The winding, rugged mountain pathways were as though flat land to Tang Xiu and Su Ben as they shuttled back and forth in the wooded mountain. After 20 minutes, they had already hiked halfway up the mountain.

"Tang Xiu, careful now! You too know about this wooded mountain. There are a lot of wild animals appearing, especially at night. If we bump into wolves and bears, it will be troublesome." Sun Ben was simple and honest, but he was also a meticulous and cautious person.

"Don't worry!" Tang Xiu nodded casually. If it was before, he would be more cautious than Su Ben. But the present him was no longer weak. He could easily get rid of ordinary wild animals with his fists and legs.

"Tang Xiu, I know that you're smart since you were small. But now, is different from the past. A few days ago a very ferocious leopard appeared on this mountain. Genzi's father came to this mountain to hunt game, but he died here. At that time, the

villagers organized tens of people to go looking for him in the mountain and only found his clothes and his remnant gnawed bones. Furthermore, we also bumped into that cow-sized leopard. If not for me carrying a gun, perhaps dozens of our people would have died.”

Tang Xiu was astonished, “The leopard is cow-sized? Are you kidding me? If there’s really such a big leopard, wouldn’t it have successfully become a spirit?”

Su Ben forced a smile, “I suppose so. That leopard might have really become a spirit. It was at least two times faster than that tiger we saw when we were young. Furthermore, Genzi and I sneaked back in the mountain and saw that leopard easily killing a few wolves. And you must know, there were dozens of wolves besieging it!”

Tang Xiu’s eyes turned bright. Through Su Ben’s description, he was certain that the leopard was surely a fierce beast that had spiritual wisdom. Although he had no shortage of fierce beasts’ bones materials, hunting and killing it was a good thing. All in all, the more of them the better!

“Tang Xiu, we have to quickly find them. My cell phone is almost out of power, the phone’s light won’t last long.” Seeing the thoughtful expression on Tang Xiu’s face, Su Ben urged in a low voice.

Tang Xiu nodded. He actually didn’t need the cell phone’s light. His eyes could see everything in the surrounding, even in this darkness. Moreover, he didn’t rely on his eyes in finding the



medicinal herbs, but his spiritual sense.

He released his perception and covered the plant and trees within the radius of 200 meters. Only in this way would he be able to find the medicinal herbs in the shortest possible time.

"Found it."

Ten minutes later, Tang Xiu's eyes turned bright. He quickly found the needed herb in a cliff crevice. It was the Silver Dragon Grass.

"Tang Xiu, what are you looking for exactly?" Su Ben's expression was a bit strange. He stared at the herb in Tang Xiu's hand and observed it for a while before he asked curiously.

Tang Xiu said, "This one is a Silver Dragon Grass. Aside from eliminating silt blood, it can also nourish the bones. This herb is not easy to find. The reason I came looking for it is that I remember having seen it when we hiked up this mountain when we were small."

Su Ben touched his nose and said with a wry smile, "If I knew that you needed this herb earlier, we wouldn't have tired ourselves running here. A few days ago when I was cutting grass to feed the sheep, I cut a lot of these... medicinal herbs. Some of them are still in the shed now!"

"What?"

Tang Xiu looked at him with disbelief. One must know that if these medicinal herbs were to be sold in the medicinal herbs market in the city, the Silver Dragon Grass could fetch a price of 1000 yuan each. But Su Ben turned out to be feeding them to the sheep?

This... was way too extravagant and wasteful, wasn't it?

Tang Xiu secretly shook his head and said with a dry smile, "Big Brother Ben, when we go back, quickly pick out those Silver Dragon Grasses. Bear in mind, this medicinal herb is very valuable. If you can find a lot of them, I'm willing to buy them for 1000 yuan each."

"What?"

Su Ben stared. He was almost scared to death.

1000 yuan?

The livestock he raised at home and the wage he got from the construction team, how much money would he get for the whole year? It was only a mere 20,000 yuan! This Silver Dragon Grass is worth 1,000 yuan. With those 23 strains left, it was equal to his hard-earned annual income!

"Tang Xiu, are not you kidding me?" Sun Ben asked seriously.

“No, I’m not.” Tang Xiu said. “If you can find more Silver Dragon Grasses, I will buy them for 1,000 yuan each. However, this mountain has wild animals. If you come pick them, you would likely enter their territories and court danger.”

Su Ben said, “Don’t worry. I know a good deal about it. So after I go back, I’ll search and see how many Silver Dragon Grass are left there.”

"Alright!" Tang Xiu nodded.

The two no longer stayed on the mountain. Tang Xiu was a bit regretful since he didn’t encounter any fierce beasts, but grandma’s injuries were more important, he couldn’t delay here for too long.

Back to the place where he parked the car, Tang Xiu drove back to the Su family village and dropped Su Ben in front of his house. Su Ben told him that the village chief had silver needles, so Tang Xiu didn’t need to go elsewhere to find it.

“Xiu’er, have you found what you needed?” Seeing that Tang Xiu had come back, Su Lingyun asked.

“Yes, Mom.” Tang Xiu said. “Big Brother Ben also had some with him, so I can treat Grandmother’s injuries.”

Although Chen Huiying was very sleepy, she didn’t go home to sleep. She was concerned about Zhang Shi’s injury and her son had

left with Tang Xiu, so she waited. As she heard Tang Xiu's words, she curiously asked, "Didn't Ben go out with you? Where's he?"

"He went to the village chief's. He said that the chief has silver needles." Said Tang Xiu.

"Ah, right." Chen Huiying nodded, "The village chief used to be a barefoot doctor. If it wasn't because that accident several years ago, with some people dying, our village would have a senior doctor now!"

At this moment, Zhang Shi finally awaked. She also just talked to her daughter a lot. Upon seeing Tang Xiu had come back, she waved and called him, saying, "Xiu'er, grandmother is useless. That man just gently beat me twice, but my leg broke."

Tang Xiu shook his head, "Grandma, you're old. But in my heart, you're actually a capable person. When I was small, what I liked the most was eating your sweet-scented Osmanthus cake."

Although Zhang Shi was feeling pain, she still smiled, "If grandma's leg gets better, I'll make Osmanthus cake for you."

Tang Xiu said laughed, "Thanks, grandma. I know that aside from Mom, you're also very good to me."

It's matrilineal line from Su Lingyun, while Tang Xiu should belong to the Tang family, according to the patrilineal line. The addresses for relatives for Chinese are different depending on their maternal or paternal line. In this paragraph, Tang Xiu addressed the elders of the Su family with Shushu 叔叔 (father's younger

brother) and Bobo 伯伯 (father's elder brother). As for the aunts as Shenshen 婶婶 (wife of father's younger brother), Dainiang 大娘 (father's older brother's wife). But I include both of them as paternal uncles and aunts to shorten the line.

## Chapter 241: Moving Problems

---

Zhang Shi smiled, “Xiu’er, your mother has told me the about affair between you and your uncle. Grandma doesn’t blame you. Shangwen, he... he indeed has changed. Do you know what your grandpa hoped the most before dying?”

“What?” Tang Xiu’s smile slowly disappeared as he asked in a low voice.

“He hoped for Shangwen to go bankrupt,” said Zhang Shi as she sighed.

Puzzled, Tang Xiu’s brows raised, “Why?”

“His disposition was good, he was gentle and polite to anyone when he had no money back then. But after he got rich, he offended the young and the elderly in the village. Furthermore, he hasn’t visited the village for three years. Your mother and you must have endured a lot of pain all these years in Star City. But he... Ohh!”

Upon hearing it, Tang Xiu’s heart warmed. However, he keenly felt his grandmother’s bitter feelings. After all, Su Shangwen was her biological son, how would she not want her son to be good?

After pondering for a short moment, Tang Xiu slowly said, “Grandma, let him stay in prison for a few years! When he’s been whetted sufficiently, able to turn a new leaf and become more humane, I’ll think of ways to get him out.”

Zhang Shi's eyes suffused with excitement and silently nodded.

Tang Xiu spoke again, "Grandma, after I heal your legs, how about you come to Star City to live with us? Our family's living conditions have gotten a lot better. Mom opened a restaurant and her business is very good. Although I just graduated and finished my CET, I also run some businesses and make a lot of money. You should come with us to enjoy your life in the future."

Zhang Shi laughed, "Xiu'er, Grandma thanks you for your filial piety. But grandma has to decline. My body is already halfway buried in the grave. If I were to go, wouldn't I become more trouble for you? Let's forget it! I've lived here for a lifetime, I'll live here till the end of my days. Why should I toss myself blindly?"

Tang Xiu said, "Grandma, you still have me and you can still live quite long. Relax! Just come with us to Star City. You won't trouble us. I myself have to go to study in Shanghai soon, so Mom will live alone there. If you go with us, you can also accompany her."

"This..." with a bit of hesitation, Zhang Shi looked at Su Lingyun who was full of anticipation all over her face.

Su Lingyun quickly said, "Mom, I really don't feel relieved leaving you here alone. Please listen to Xiu'er! Come with us to Star City. We mother and daughter can live together. Our conditions weren't good in the past, but now it's better. We also

have a big villa and a big restaurant. Xiu'er also has a big company there."

Zhang Shi took a deep breath. She shook her head, "Little Yun, Xiu'er. Don't urge me. I've been living here for years. I won't get used to it if I changed the environment all of a sudden. Our village's neighbors are good to me and they usually take care of the things when I got them. You take care of your life, you don't need to worry about me."

Su Lingyun's expression turned grim. She knew her mother's disposition very well. Once she made a decision, she probably wouldn't change her mind even if her argument was solid.

Tang Xiu thought for a moment and said, "Grandma, since you really don't want to go to Star City, you can stay here, but we should repair this house. I'll take some money to rebuild the house. Furthermore, I'll hire two nannies in Star City to stay here to accompany and look after of you."

Zhang Shi waved her hand, "No. I live here, there's no need to rebuild the house. It will take a lot of money! Besides, I'm just a poor old lady, why would I need nannies to serve me? Although I'm old, my legs are still fast. I don't need people to take care of me!"

Standing on the side, an astonished expression suffused in Chen Huiying's eyes as she asked, "Lingyun, was what you said just now true? Your restaurant is flourishing, you live in a big villa and Tang Xiu also has a company?"



Nodding, Su Lingyun said, "I'm telling the truth. The business has been good for the last two months. As for the villa and the company, it's Xiu'er's hard work."

Chen Huiying's expression when she looked at Tang Xiu was suddenly different. She recalled the car Tang Xiu used and felt that Su Lingyun didn't lie to her.

Suddenly, Tang Xiu's eyes turned bright. He looked at Chen Huiying and asked, "Second Aunt, can we have a chat outside?"

Chen Huiying replied with a confused expression, "Chat outside? Why do want to chat outside? If you want to tell me something, you can speak it here!"

"No." Tang Xiu shook his head. "I need to tell you something private. I also told Big Brother Ben that I want to buy the herbs he collected. A special kind of grass was mixed with the grasses your family feed the sheep; this kind of grass is actually a very good medicinal herb."

Chen Huiying hesitated for a moment. She then nodded and said, "Alright, then let's talk outside."

The two went to the courtyard. Then, Tang Xiu spoke, "Second Aunt, about that medicinal herb, I have already told Big Brother Ben. The grass is called Silver Dragon Grass. It's 1,000 yuan each. I'll buy them from you for any amount you sell me. But the reason I want to talk to you here outside is something else."

Chen Huiying knew nothing about medicinal herbs, so she didn't ask. Then, she replied, "OK. Tell me!"

"Second Aunt, you too know about grandma's disposition. Since she doesn't want to come with us to Star City, would you please look after her later?" said Tang Xiu.

Chen Huiying involuntary laughed, saying, "What are you talking about, kid? If we didn't care about her, would we even take her to the county hospital? Don't worry, kiddo! With us here, your grandma won't have any trouble."

Tang Xiu shook his head, "I didn't mean it like that, Second Aunt. So to speak, how much money do you make from farming annually?"

"Huh?" Chen Huiying was puzzled, "Why are you asking about this?"

Tang Xiu said, "You'll know it later, please answer me first."

Chen Huiying hesitated for a moment. She silently calculated it. Then, she stretched out a finger and said, "Should be around 10,000 yuan? I have a lot of sheep and my family also have some fruit trees."

Tang Xiu laughed, "What if I hire you to take care of grandma and give you 20,000 yuan annually? Are you willing?"

Chen Huiying knitted her brows, “Tang Xiu, why are you speaking such nonsense? Even if you don’t give me a dime, I’ll still take care of Auntie! Alright. I know what you meant. I assure you that as long as I can walk and stay healthy, I won’t let your grandma suffer hardships.”

Tang Xiu raised his thumb up, saying, “Auntie, you’re a good person. If you don’t want to ask for money, I won’t insist. But firstly, I’ll still have to thank you.”

Chen Huiying patted Tang Xiu’s underarm as she smiled and cursed, “Little bastard, you’re like seeing me as an outsider.”

“Second Aunt, could you give me your bank account number?” asked Tang Xiu.

Chen Huiying stared blankly. Then, her face immediately turned cold and angrily said, “Tang Xiu, what’s the matter with you? Do you see your Second Aunt as someone greedy for money? If you do this again, I won’t care about your grandmother later.”

Tang Xiu quickly said, “Second Aunt, that’s not what I meant. Asking your bank account number, is indeed that I want to send you money. But it’s not for you, it’s for grandma. Please think! Wouldn’t you have to spend money for either her clothes, food and some other matters when you take care of her? I want to transfer 100,000 yuan to you to buy more clothes for grandma and for the food she wants to eat. When the money has been spent, you can call me and I’ll send more money.”

100,000 yuan?

Chen Huiying's heartbeat accelerated. But after several seconds, she shook her head and said, "Tang Xiu, I really don't want this money. Otherwise, everyone in our village will point at my back and scold me. As for her welfare, you don't need to worry. Our family won't let your grandma suffer hunger and cold. I give you my word, your Second Aunt will take care of your grandma's welfare."

Tang Xiu forced out a smile. After hesitating for a moment, he then said with a helpless expression, "Since Second Aunt really doesn't want the money, then let's forget it. But you have to let Big Brother Ben go with me!"

"Go with you? Didn't you say you'll go study in Shanghai soon? Little Ben only knows how to farm and build houses. What would he do there?" Puzzled, Chen Huiying asked.

Tang Xiu said, "I'll arrange a decent work and good salary for him. If he works diligently and earnestly, I assure you that he will have the money to buy a house in Star City within several years. I think you also hope for Big Brother Ben to be successful and get out of our small village, don't you?"

Chen Huiying's eyes turned bright.

Tang Xiu's words truly represented what was inside her heart. Her family didn't have much money and her son was unskilled. It

was the reason for him not marrying, since they couldn't afford to build a new house. When she saw the other youngsters of the same age, they all live in new houses, are married, and even had children several years old. This was also the cause of her unceasing worries.

“Tang Xiu, you really... can you really arrange a job for Little Ben that has decent income?” asked Chen Huiying. She was somewhat unconvinced.

“Don't worry, Second Auntie! As long as he works hard, he will certainly make a lot of money in the future. But I'll take him to work in my company. It won't be a problem to give him a wage of nearly 10,000 yuan a month.”

Chen Huiying clapped and said with excitement, “Alright then. I'll have to thank you for it. And I... I'll certainly take a good care of your grandmother. I'll regard her as my mother-in-law and take care of her.”

Tang Xiu finally felt relieved upon hearing Chen Huiying's promise. He then said with a smile, “Second Aunt, you must never tell others about our conversation, including Big Brother Ben.”

Chen Huiying nodded heavily, “Don't worry about it. I'll keep it rotten in my stomach.”

“Tang Xiu, I got them!”

As they finished chatting, Su Ben rushed in a hurry toward them.

He also raised a small box in his hand as he shouted. Behind him, the village chief, carrying his over 70 years old body, Su Changhe slightly ran to follow him.

## Chapter 242: Mysterious Medical Skill

---

Su Changhe had high prestige in Su Village. These years, he led the locals in planting fruit trees, growing grains and was the first to help any families that had problems or difficulties. He always lent a hand without complaining or regrets. Even his son, the current chief of the Su Village, admired him endlessly and was very filial.

“Xiu’er, do you remember me?”

Su Changhe was a gentle person. The wrinkles on his face immediately stretched upon seeing Tang Xiu, a thick smile blossoming on his old face.

Tang Xiu laughed, “The old village chief grandpa.”

Heartily laughing, Su Changhe replied, “Mmm. Not bad, you’ve grown up into an adult. Hasn’t it been two years since you last came back? And you look taller now.”

“Indeed. I haven’t come back for nearly two years. If not for the accident I had before, perhaps I would have come back earlier,” said Tang Xiu.

Su Changhe nodded, “Even though you’re not surnamed Su, but you’re the child of our Su family village. I just heard from Little Ben that you brought your grandma back to treat her wounds yourself. Tang Xiu, treating an old person’s broken leg isn’t a minor matter. It would be fatal if your treatment isn’t good. Do

you have confidence?”

Tang Xiu assertively said, “I’m confident, old village chief grandpa. I’ve been acting as an on-duty doctor at Star City Chinese Medical Hospital recently, and I can also be considered as a doctor now.”

Su Change was shocked, “You’re working at Star City Chinese Medical Hospital? That’s not right! You should only be a high schooler now... and just attend CET this year! How would...”

Tang Xiu smiled, “Old village chief grandpa, your memory is pretty good. It’s true that I really just finished my CET, and you can check my CET’s scores by dawn. As for the why I’m giving medical services at Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, the hospital’s President was the one who invited me.”

At the side, Su Ben suddenly spoke, “Tang Xiu, you know someone with authority in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital? The other wounded from our village were sent to Star City. Just when I got to the old village chief grandpa’s house, Genzi called me saying that they had just arrived at Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, but...”

Tang Xiu knitted his brows, “But what?”

Su Ben forced out a smile, “They heard that a divine doctor emerged there recently, and caused a large number of patients across the province to flock to Star City Chinese Medical Hospital. There are indeed doctors on-duty now, but no wards available.”



Tang Xiu took his mobile and dialed a number.

"Hello, Master?"

Dai Xinyue's voice came out of the phone. It seemed very chaotic there, as it was pretty noisy.

"Are you in the hospital?" asked Tang Xiu.

"Yes, Master. There are too many patients tonight, it's quite busy. Is there something you need, Master?" said Dai Xinyue.

"I need you to check if there are five injured people surnamed Su from Qinghe County that are waiting for treatment. After you find them, arrange several wards for them."

"Master, I... I don't have that authority," Dai Xinyue hesitated.

Tang Xiu smiled, "It's alright. If you can't, go to Sun Wenjing. And if she also can't do it, go directly to Li Hongji. In any case, help me arrange it tonight."

"Understood!" Dai Xinyue put down her mobile with a distressed expression.

Tang Xiu glanced at Su Ben and Su Changhe, saying, "Please don't worry! I called someone to arrange it, so it should be done

quickly. Big Brother Ben, keep contact with them for the updated situation over there. Let's go inside now! I'll treat grandma."

"Let's go inside!" Su Change waved and quickly said.

The dim light was swaying inside the dilapidated roof of the house. The rope-tied light bulb kept swinging by the wind as light and shadow repeatedly changed. Squatting at Zhang Shi's side, Tang Xiu gently lifted her leg, saying, "Grandma, it will be slightly painful when I treat you, so please bear it for a while. I'll be able to treat your injury soon.

Zhang Shi smiled, "Go on! I can bear it."

Tang Xiu nodded. He took the silver needles from the box and quickly sealed the acupoints nearby the broken bone. His fingers rubbed in-between the silver needles in a constant rhythm. Soon, the purplish-red swollen area on Zhang Shi's leg turned into purplish-black, the swollen area turning bigger.

About half a minute later, Tang Xiu's finger slowly took one silver needle. In a split second, black blood spurted out. After all the silver needles were removed, black blood also spurted out from the areas not pierced by silver needles.

"Xiu'er... this..."

Su Lingyun's pupils contracted, fear gushing from her eyes.

Tang Xiu serenely said, “Her bone is fractured, and the broken pieces pierced the capillaries, resulting in internal congestion. So we must clear up the congestion first.”

Su Lingyun suddenly understood, her anxiousness a bit relieved.

Tang Xiu pinched a silver needle. By the time the black blood stopped flowing, his hands held the broken bone area as he exerted strength on both of his hands, adjusting back to the bone’s positions. Controlling his Star Force, he restored the fractured bones to its previous positions. Tang Xiu also adjusted the two granule sized bone sediments into its original location accurately.

“It’s painful...”

Thick sweat overflowed from Zhang Shi’s forehead, falling down on her wrinkled face.

Tang Xiu’s hands were entirely covered with Star Force. Even though he knew his grandmother had to endure great pain at the moment, Tang Xiu grew a bit uncomfortable. But he repressed it since he had to treat her leg injury. He reduced his strength slowly and used Star Force to seep into his grandmother’s leg injury. Star force could nourish and repair bones and muscles, taking the role of accelerating the healing.

A few minutes later, some of the pained expression on Zhang Shi’s face disappeared as her tightened brows eased a lot.

After ten minutes, Zhang Shi looked at Tang Xiu with astonishment. She could only feel a weak pain from her leg now; she couldn't even feel it if she didn't pay attention.

Half an hour later, the pained expression on Zhang Shi's face completely disappeared and was replaced with a thick sense of comfort. All the pain in her leg completely disappeared. Instead, it felt cool afterward, along with a feeling of warm. It was as if her insides were being warmly roasted.

After an hour, Tang Xiu loosened his hands and looked at his grandmother. She was sleeping soundly now. Motioning the others into the room to keep silent, he then pulled the quilt over, covering her and hinting at everyone to leave the room.

At the courtyard.

Su Lingyun asked hastily, "Xiu'er, how' your grandma's injury now?"

Tang Xiu smiled faintly, "I've handled it. Grandma will be able to recover in a week. But she probably can't walk around much within this time. Ah, right. We also have to find two planks and tie them to her broken leg, lest a secondary fracture happens."

Su Lingyun immediately replied, "I'll go get it now!"

Tang Xiu nodded with a smile. He looked to the old village chief, Su Changhe, Chen Huiying and Su Ben as he said, "It's late. All of

you should take a rest now! We'll chat after dawn."

Su Changhe, Chen Huiying and Su Ben didn't move. They stared straight at Tang Xiu with a somewhat disappointed feeling inside. Yet... they were also curious.

Chen Huiying, who was someone who couldn't keep the matter in heart, spoke, "Tang Xiu, you aren't joke with us, are you? Even for children that grow their bones the fastest, it's impossible to recover from a broken leg in a week, no? It takes at least 100 days for one to recover from serious injuries, but you..."

Tang Xiu interrupted her and said with a smile, "Second Aunt, I won't explain how, neither can I change your old ideas. Let's see a week later. I assure you you'll be surprised."

Su Changhe's lower lip twitched, but he eventually didn't speak. He only shook his head and sighed before turning around and leaving. Chen Huiying also shook her head and turned away.

Su Ben was silent for a few seconds. His fist gently punched Tang Xiu's chest as he smiled and said, "Tang Xiu, I believe in you. You're smart since childhood, and you almost never lie. Since you said you can make your grandma can recover as before, then it will surely happen."

The feeling of being trusted... was really good!

Tang Xiu smiled and patted his shoulder, saying, "Are you sleepy

now? If not, care to have a chat with me?”

Su Ben looked at the back of his mother. He then pulled out a pack of cigarettes from his pocket and asked, “Do you want one?”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment before taking it. The years when he was muddle-headed, he also experienced drinking and smoking. He lit it up, taking deep puff as he then said slowly, “Big Brother Ben, how about you come with me to Star City?”

Staring blankly, Su Ben replied with a confused expression, “What will I do there?”

“Help and work for me,” said Tang Xiu smiling.

Pondering for a moment, Su Ben then shook his head and said, “Tang Xiu, I know that you’re a skilled person, setting up your own company. But I know nothing except farming and building houses. I won’t be of any use to you, so forget it. I won’t go with you!”

Tang Xiu smiled, “It’s not like you can’t learn, right? If you’re willing to work hard, I promise you that you’ll have a very good progress. Big Brother Ben, our ancestors are typical peasants who are resigned to their plot of lands, toiling over it with their backs to the sky. They get up early in the morning, living a life from nine to five for every sunrise and sunset for generations. Don’t you want to change this predicament?”

Su Ben hesitated, “Then what are you going to arrange for me to work on?”

“You’ll become a security guard!” said Tang Xiu.

A disappointed expression was written on Su Ben’s face. He forced out a smile, “How much money can a security guard earn? A few villagers, who left the village to work as security guards in Shanghai, only get 5,000 to 6,000 yuan a month. But after subtracting their food expenses, they don’t even have 2,000 yuan left for a monthly salary.”

“They are they, you are you. If you work hard and can bear hardships, let alone 5 to 6 thousand yuan a month, you can earn 50 to 60 thousand.”

Su Ben asked with a foolish expression, “Where and how would a security guard earn so much money?”

Tang Xiu smiled, “That depends on for who you work for. So let’s decide! You come with me to Star City and work as an ordinary security guard. You’ll earn five thousand yuan a month with accommodation and meals included. If your performance after three months is good, I’ll promote you as security captain. By that time, you’ll be paid ten thousand yuan. How is it?”

“I’ll do it!” Su Ben’s eyes lit up as he replied without hesitation.

Tang Xiu laughed, “Alright. We grew up together. Although

you're a few years older than me, you and I know each other deeply, so I can feel at ease if you learn some important business secrets."

"Just leave it to me, I'll do it well." Su Ben laughed.



# Chapter 243: The Fast Change in Attitude

---

Star City Chinese Medical Hospital.

Feeling uneasy inside, Dai Xinyue found the five patients from Su Village. After grasping their conditions, she then rushed to the Inpatient Department Director's resting room.

"Knock, knock..."

"Come in!"

The Inpatient Department Director's voice came out from the room.

Pushing the door, Dai Xinyue entered the room and saw the director seating on a single bed, fixing his coat.

"You are?"

The Inpatient Department's Director didn't pay much attention to Dai Xinyue. He just felt that she was somewhat familiar and curiously asked.

"Director, I'm Dai Xinyue, an intern. There's a little matter that I need to speak to you about," she said.

The director was a bit annoyed. He had been busy for a day and

night. He had only slept for 2-3 hours before being woken up. But he didn't reveal it on his face, nodding, "Tell me!"

"Director, five patients have just arrived. Although they received medical treatment, they haven't been admitted to their wards. For now, they are staying on the corridor's floor. Might you help arrange them a few wards?"

Upon hearing it, the Inpatient Department's Director angrily replied, "Our hospital is simply too crowded. We don't have enough wards and you still want me to arrange wards for them?"

Dai Xinyue replied with a low voice, "Yes, I want to speak to you about this."

"Nonsense!"

The director angrily said, "You're also a doctor in our hospital, don't you also know the current situation the hospital is in? You directly looked for your superior, have you learned the hospital's regulations? Everything must be done orderly according to normal procedures. Tell me, from which department are you?"

Dai Xinyue hesitated, replying in a low voice, "I do miscellaneous jobs and assistant work for the outpatient service."

"Outpatient Clinic Building?"

The director's brows raised. He then snorted coldly, saying,

“Then do your miscellaneous job properly. Don’t come looking for me for this kind of matter in the future. Also, tell your superior..., ah right, who’s your superior?”

Dai Xinyue said bitterly, “Tang Xiu!”

“Huh?” The Inpatient Department’s Director cried out, “Then tell to this Tang Xiu to manage his subordinates well, not bothering me with unimportant matters...”

His voice came to a halt. As though recalling someone, the anger on his face froze. He then looked at Dai Xinyue and asked, “... You... who did you just say is your superior?”

Dai Xinyue said, “Tang Xiu. He gives medical services in the Outpatient Clinic Building. He came to our hospital recently.”

Various expressions passed on the Inpatient Department’s Director’s face. Finally, a trace of a smile was revealed on his face as he said, “You’re Tang Xiu’s assistant, yes? What’s your name? Dai...”

“Dai Xinyue!”

The director nodded repeatedly, the smile on his face becoming thicker. “Ah right. You’re Dai Xinyue. I heard that Tang Xiu received an apprentice a few days ago and her name is Dai Xinyue. I never thought that it would be you! So you looked for me because of Tang Xiu’s order?”

Dai Xinyue truthfully said, “Yes, he ordered me. Those patients seem to be from his hometown.”

The Inpatient Department’s Director immediately stood. He then said with a deep tone, “Come with me! I just remembered that our hospital still has two other wards that are reserved for acute patients. Since those patients are Tang Xiu’s distant relatives, then I’ll arrange it for them.”

He wasn’t stupid!

The present Star City Chinese Medical Hospital’s standing couldn’t be compared with the past! Either the hospital’s or Tang Xiu’s reputation, it spread out far and wide. Not to mention the large number of patients that came from across the province, even the patients throughout the country also had heard the news about them.

Moreover, a few days ago, journalists from the TV station wanted to do an interview. The President knew that Tang Xiu was reluctant to be in the limelight so he declined. Although he was the Inpatient Department’s Director and seemed to be getting promotions quickly, he also had his own self-awareness. He was not someone to be compared with Tang Xiu at all. Even the President must be polite toward that young ancestor. He didn’t have to recall that Tang Xiu just came to the hospital for less than a week, but the President himself accompanied him on meals for a few times already.

Ten minutes later, the patients from Su Village were placed in two spacious wards. Temporary wards were added with three sickbeds each! Even so, the room was still spacious even though there were seven or eight villagers from the Su Village plus the patients already inside.

“All of you stay here. The hospital’s leaders have told me that you’re exempted from fees and your medical expenses will also be reimbursed. Since you have family members, I won’t send nurses to look after you. In short, you can contact me if there’s anything you need. I’m the director of this Inpatient Department, so I’ll definitely complete the service.” The Inpatient Department’s director spoke, all smiling.

The patients and their relatives in the wards showed grateful expressions. But they were also deeply confused and puzzled inwardly. In particular, Su Quan. He was usually the typical smart person who was adept at discerning people’s thoughts from their body language. Recalling the attitude and manners they displayed before and comparing it with the present, he immediately understood the problem.

After hesitating, his eyes landed on Dai Xinyue. Although she was a beauty and her attitude very amiable, she was unlikely to be someone of great standing. So he went to her and asked in a low voice, “Pretty doctor, might I ask what’s happening here? We, the patients’ relatives, are also aware that the hospital is in a shortage of wards. But how could we suddenly be given such good wards? Even all five patients were completely admitted here?”

Dai Xinyue lightly smiled, “My Master asked me to look for the

Inpatient Department's Director."

"Who's your Master? Does he know us?" Su Quan's got more confused and asked again.

"My Master is Tang Xiu. He's also a doctor in this hospital," said Dai Xinyue.

Tang Xiu?

Su Quan was surprised and stared blankly. A disbelieving expression immediately appeared on his face as he asked, "Your Master wouldn't be the same Tang Xiu who's schooling in Star City First High School, would it?"

"Haha, that's right!" Dai Xinyue laughed, "My Master was indeed schooling in Star City First High School before. Also, he just attended this year's CET."

Su Quan's lips twitched a few times. He suddenly realized that the small boy in his childhood memories seemed to be different now. Not only did he become a doctor in this Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, he even had a beautiful apprentice now. Much to his surprise, even the director of this Inpatient Department personally arranged wards for everyone.

Looking at the shocked Su Quan, Dai Xinyue chuckled and said softly, "Actually, the reason as to why you can't find wards here is mainly my Master's fault. If it wasn't for him, you would have

directly been admitted to the wards when you come to our Star City Chinese Medical Hospital.”

“Huh?” Su Quan was surprised again, asking with a confused expression, “What does it mean?”

Dai Xinyue laughed, “Do you know why our hospital is in a shortage of wards now?”

Su Quan nodded, “I asked around. I heard that an extraordinarily skillful Divine Doctor appeared here. No matter what illnesses the patients contracted, that Divine Doctor is able to treat them within a short period of time. So a large number of patients across the country also heard about him. Then, what you mean... you mean...”

“You’re smart! That’s right. The person who created the current situation is my Master, Tang Xiu!” Dai Xinyue laughed.

Su Quan’s lips twitched a few times, unable to utter any words. Yet, the warmth and gratitude that filled his heart didn’t diminish. He knew that if it wasn’t for Tang Xiu, perhaps his fellow villagers would still be lying in the corridor.

“Where’s your Master? Can I see him?”

“I don’t know where Master is right now!” replied Dai Xinyue.

Su Quan was disappointed. Suddenly, his face flickered. He

recalled that Tang Xiu's grandmother was also injured because of this incident. Since he knew about the matter with the villagers of the Su Village, he must have made a trip to Qinghe County. Quickly, he took out his mobile and dialed Su Ben's number.

“Hey, Big Brother Ben. Have you seen Tang Xiu?”

At the Su Village.

Su Ben was chatting with Tang Xiu when he received Su Quan's call. Upon hearing his question, he said, “Yup. We're chatting right now.”

Su Quan immediately said, “Quickly give him your cell phone! I want to talk to him!”

Su Ben 'okayed' him and then handed the mobile to Tang Xiu, laughing, “Well, the one in the phone is looking for you.”

Tang Xiu smiled faintly. He and Su Ben had a good relationship because his grandmother's and Su Ben's houses were only separated by a wall, so Tang Xiu usually liked to follow Su Ben playing when he was a child. He also had a good relationship with Su Quan because they were of similar age and hang out together when they were children. Catching fishes in the river, climbing trees to scoop birds' nests.... They were very close childhood friends.

“Quan, you're looking for me?” Tang Xiu said with a smile.



“Tang Xiu, it’s really you? You also arranged the matter with Star City Chinese Medical Hospital?”

“Haha.” Tang Xiu laughed, “Have you settled down? I called them before.”

Su Quan said with astonishment, "Damn, amazing. You kid is so amazing now! With a call from you, even the Inpatient Department’s Director was alarmed, personally arranging two wards for us. What is most unbelievable is that you’re the mysterious Divine Doctor of the Star City Chinese Medical Hospital.”

Tang Xiu teased him, “Okay, okay. You, kiddo, don’t cry alright? When will you come back from Star City?”

“I’ll be back tonight! The five wounded folks have their families to look after, I was only responsible to escort them. Wait for me there! It’s been two years since I have seen you, we gotta drink a few bottles!” said Su Quan.

“Alright. I’ll be waiting for you!” Having said that, Tang Xiu gave the phone back to Su Ben.

Su Ben put away his mobile and laughed, “Well, you two were inseparable back then, playing and growing up together. You and Quan are the smart ones, and the two of you are the most kindred spirited children in our village as well as best buddies.”

“Big Brother Ben, you’re wrong. Didn’t I also play with you?! I still remember, we always followed behind your ass all over the place back then,” said Tang Xiu.

Su Ben involuntary laughed.

Being together with Tang Xiu, he smiled and laughed a lot more than he used to.

Taking out the cigarette from his mouth, Tang Xiu then changed the topic, “Big Brother Ben, tell me. What has happened to the village? Who’s the culprit behind the troubles in our village? They are so rampant and arrogant, yet they can also get the government’s approval. They seem to have a very powerful background?”

## Chapter 244: Devastating Oppression

---

“He’s Hong Changyin, the boss of Imperial Water Royal View City Real Estate in our county. A few days ago he and the businessmen from Blue City wanted to build an industrial city in our place. I don’t know how he got the government’s approval as well as dragged the government’s participation in this, but government issued a land requisition.” Su Ben forced a smile and said.

“What’s this Hong Changyin’s background?” asked Tang Xiu.

Su Ben said, “He’s Mr. Hong’s nephew, the head of the county’s commissioner court.”

Tang Xiu suddenly realized. He finally understood that Hong Chanying’s big influence, to even be able to buy the the county hospital’s doctors. But no matter the other party’s background, he didn’t care. Since they dared hurt his grandmother, he would definitely make them pay a bitter and painful price. Not only just Hong Changyin, even that Commissioner Head, Mr. Hong, as well as the county hospital’s leadership would have to pay a painful price.

Tang Xiu took his mobile and opened a webpage using 3Gnet, searching information about this Imperial Water Royal View City Real Estate in Qinghe County. And soon, he quickly found Hong Changyin’s personal data.

“Big Brother Ben, go rest! Remember to give me the Silver

Dragon Grasses tomorrow.”

Su Ben nodded and left.

Tang Xiu took a blanket from the car and went back to his grandmother’s room. He found his mother, Su Lingyun, sitting in a daze on the bed, whereas his grandmother was still asleep.

“Mom, please go sleep!” Tang Xiu said softly.

Su Lingyun looked up. A smile emerged on her face as she gently shook her head, “I just tidied up the room next door for you and made up the bed. It’s very late now, so you have to rest. I’ll call you again later at breakfast.”

“Mom, I’m not sleepy now. But you obviously look tired, why would you still force yourself? I promise you that grandma’s injuries will really be okay,” said Tang Xiu.

Su Lingyun hesitated before nodding, “OK. I’ll sleep for a few hours.”

A few minutes later, after seeing his mother sleeping on the sofa, snoring, Tang Xiu quietly walked out of the house and got into his car. He drove directly to the Qinghe County’s center. Since he had already found Hong Changyin’s information and also had identified his face from his photo, he decided to collect the interest tonight.

## At Qinghe County Hospital!

Due to Hong Changyin's background, he could make the doctors in the hospital refuse to treat the wounded villagers of the Su Village. He was also injured in the conflict and was hospitalized here.

However, Tang Xiu didn't directly drive to Qinghe County Hospital but parked his car before the shopfront nearby the hospital. He then slipped into the nearby alley quietly, a few minutes later silently sneaking into the hospital.

Tang Xiu slipped into a dark corner under the hospital building. Using his perception to scan the surroundings, he easily found the sleeping Hong Changyin in the Inpatient Department's ward on the third floor. In another bed lied a young girl.

Tang Xiu didn't take the stairs since the hospital's stairs and elevators had surveillance cameras. He moved vigorously to climb the pipeline outside the building up toward Hong Changyin's window. He quietly opened the unlatched window and entered the ward.

"Plop..."

Tang Xiu quickly moved to pinch the sleeping girl's acupuncture point on her head. Then, he punched Hong Changyin as he immediately fainted. As though carrying a dead dog, he shouldered him out of the window and left the hospital in the same way. When he returned to the car, he directly stuffed Hong Changyin

into the trunk and drove away toward the village's foothill.

"Dump—"

As he arrived on an uncultivated land, Tang Xiu parked his car and took Hong Changyin out of the trunk, throwing him directly on the ground.

"Hiss..."

The unconscious Hong Changyin woke up due to the acute pain. When he found himself in the countryside and felt pain after being thrown to the ground, he thought that it was a dream. He rubbed the pain away, cursing and muttering, "What the hell? How would this Father have this ridiculous dream? Who were the fucking idiots that said people don't feel pain in their dreams? Fuck... why aren't there several top beauties to accompany me playing..."

Tang Xiu grabbed his shoulder from behind, turned him around and fiercely slapped him. After directly pumping him about five to six meters away and having blood and two teeth spurted out, he smashed him to the ground.

"Do you still think you're dreaming now? There's no way in hell you'll find top beauties here. Rather, you'll have a lot of wild animals like wild boars and jackals. Or, you want me to find some of them for you to release your excessive hormones?" Tang Xiu walked to him, as he held his shoulder and sneered.

The fierce slap, the burning pain and the thick smell of blood made Hong Changyin suddenly awaken. He was not dreaming. He was sleeping in the hospital ward before, and someone had gotten him out of there.

In a split second, Hong Changyin felt cold all over his body. It was as if an iceberg had fallen to his heart. Struggling to get up, he glared at Tang Xiu and snapped, “Who the fuck are you? Why am I here? Do you know who I am?”

Tang Xiu sneered, “Hong Changyin, since I kidnapped you, it means that I know who you are. But I don’t give a fuck. Of course, I didn’t take you for a drink, but to kill you. Good will be rewarded, and evil will be put to justice. You also know this line. You have done a lot of evil, and it’s time for the retribution. Now, do you have anything to say before dying?”

Fear was cast on Hong Changyin’s face. He paced backward a few steps and stared vigilantly as he asked Tang Xiu, “Little Brother, do I know you?”

Tang Xiu replied with a dull tone, “No. We haven’t met before!”

Hong Changyin suddenly recalled something as he hastily asked, “What’s your surname? Is your family name Su, from the Su Village?”

Tang Xiu smiled, “Hong Changyin, since you have correctly guessed who I am, then your chance to live is nil. What I fear the most are annoying troubles, fearing someone else would be

inflicted later. So you can go to hell!”

Having said that, Tang Xiu dashed toward Hong Changyin lightning fast. Hong Changyin had just started running when Tang Xiu’s fist hit his back, causing him to spurt out a mouthful of blood and fall to the ground. Tang Xiu’s punch didn’t claim his life.

Because he felt that there were a lot of ways to vent his hate in exchange for his life.

“Get up! It’s fucking lame if you play dead. You gotta resist, struggle and howl in sorrow! Only in this way killing you will make me happy. If I’m happy, I will make you die slowly, to taste the feeling and pleasure of being alive, which is better than dying again and again.”

Tang Xiu kicked his waist and shouted.

In this open country field, the echo of his shout was as though a death incantation, causing Hong Changyin to despair. He suddenly regretted provoking the Su Village, provoking this madman.

That’s right. In his eyes, Tang Xiu was a madman! Because only a lunatic would kill using brutal and cruel methods, enjoying the struggling, mirthless and sorrowful screams of his prey.

“B-B-B... B-Brother, why don’t we make a deal?”

Hong Changyin struggled to stand up. Seeing that Tang Xiu



didn't continue to hit him, he quickly shouted in panic.

Tang Xiu deliberately made a menacing gesture, but after hearing his words, he pretended to be interested as he smiled and said, "Ehh, you want to make a deal? You're a dead man. What can you offer me? Do you want to use money to buy your life? Hahaha... that's so fucking impossible. Today's next year will be your death anniversary. Even if the Heavenly Emperor comes, I'll still kill you!"

Hong Changyin's expression collapsed. But still, he cried out, "No no no, if you don't want money, I can give you other benefits. H-How about you come with me? If this Changyin is successful, you'll be the same, enjoying wealth and glory with me. I can let you have everything you want in Qinghe County."

"Pa pa pa..."

Tang Xiu flashed and fiercely slapped him several times, causing his mouth to be full of blood. Then, he stopped and sneered, "Do you think I'm a lunatic? A fucking idiot? Hehe... if I let you go today, I probably won't have the time to enjoy those pleasures, wealth and glory. You'll probably be killed, no?"

Hong Changyin did have this thought just now. But when he heard Tang Xiu's reply, he instantly despaired. Due to the fear, pained waist and acute pain all over his body, he almost cried as he replied, "B-Brother... t-then, what do you want? Tell me, I'll give it you."

Tang Xiu punched him again and smashed him on the ground. He walked toward him, stepped on his head and sneered, “Tell me, who’s your accomplice in the county hospital who refused to treat the Su villagers?”

Hong Changyin instantly realized that the man in front of him was really someone from the Su Village. However, he had no choice but to bow under the eaves. He was really scared, fearing that Tang Xiu would kill him in this wilderness, throwing his body to feed the wild animals.

“It’s Zhong Tao, the County Hospital’s Vice President. He became the Vice President due to my uncle’s help. I-If there’s anything you want to know, I-I... I’ll tell you.”

Zhong Tao?

Tang Xiu memorized the name. He lifted his foot from Hong Changyin’s head and snorted coldly, “Hmph. I won’t kill today, but I have to find a way to make you remember today for the rest of your life! That’s right. You said that you love women eh? I’ll just have to cut your fucking dick, so you’ll be a eunuch.”

Hong Changyin’s pupils contracted. Without him realizing, he curled up and begged, “B-Brother, please don’t! I’m only 32 years old. I don’t even have a child. Brother, please spare me and don’t punish me too severely. If I become a eunuch, my family line will be cut and over!”

Tang Xiu sneered, “Don’t you still have that county’s Head

Commissioner, your uncle? He must have a son!"

"No, he only has a daughter!" Hong Changyin quickly replied.

## Chapter 245: Resolving the Problems with Violence

---

Tang Xiu trampled Hong Changyin's body again and again, causing him to scream out repeatedly. Then he made him sit on the floor, sitting in front of him and saying with a beaming smile, "I don't think the Hong Family line will be cut off. Do you know why?"

At the moment, Hong Changyin was thoroughly terrified of Tang Xiu. Never once had he ever seen such a ruthless and lunatic person like him. He was extremely worried about his own life. However, he didn't dare to resist nor struggle. He could only squeeze out a stiff smile, "Why?"

"Because you still have your father! If I'm not wrong, your father and uncle are still alive, yes? Even if you're no longer a man, they can still find a woman to give birth to their children at their age. If there's no child conceived, then that will be your Hong Family's bad luck."

The more anxious Hong Changyin was, the more tears were revealed. He desperately shook his head and cried, "B-Brother, your hands are too noble, please spare me! Please tell me what you want, I'll do it without batting an eye."

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment, then suddenly asked, "How's your acting level?"

Hong Changyin stared blankly. Then he immediately nodded

happily, “Good. I’ll definitely be able to make you satisfied. What do you want me to perform?”

“Call the County Hospital’s Vice President, Zhong Tao. Tell him to come here. Do remember to tell him he must come alone. If there’s anyone else, I’ll immediately kill you and go to a faraway place,” said Tang Xiu.

Hong Changyin was stupefied. Then he nodded his head.

At Qinghe County’s Water Cube upscale residential area.

Zhong Tao was awakened by his mobile’s ringtone. He looked at the time as anger was revealed on his face. He picked up the phone and saw a strange number. He hesitated a moment before answering it. He then asked with a heavy tone, “Zhong Tao speaking, who’s this?”

"It's me, Hong Changyin." Hong Changyin’s voice came from the mobile.

Zhong Tao replied with a puzzled expression, “Boss Hong, it’s very late now. Is there something you need?”

“Boss Zhong, do you remember about the matter I asked your help with today? It caused big trouble. I can’t go to Qinghe County now, so you have to prepare yourself. Don’t ask too many questions. In short, I’ve offended a great figure. And... I also want to apologize to you. Perhaps, you might be implicated by me.”

"What do you mean?" Zhong Tao's drowsiness vanished in an instant. He suddenly jumped out of the bed and quickly asked, "Boss Hong, what has happened exactly?"

Hong Changyin laughed bitterly, "The specific circumstances can't be talked on the phone. In short, even my uncle won't be able to help me, lest he also be implicated. So your dream to become President of the County Hospital might be crushed. Perhaps, you'll also be thrown into jail. Alas... this is my mistake. If I have a chance next life, I'll pay you back."

Having said that, he directly hung up the phone.

Zhong Tao was struck dumb and tongue-tied as he listened to the muted sound of his mobile. His eyes blinked and then dialed the Inpatient Department's director, speaking with a heavy tone, "Zhong Tao here, is Boss Hong Changyin still in his ward?"

"Please wait a bit!"

A few minutes later, the caller was back.

"Yes? Is Boss Hong still there?" Zhong Tao asked again with a heavy tone.

"He isn't there, only his girlfriend is sleeping in the ward," the voice came again.

In this split second, Zhong Tang felt a chill down to his spine. He desperately wanted to figure out what really happened, so he called the number that called him before. A few seconds later, his call was picked up.

“Boss Hong, please tell me clearly! What the hell is going on here?”

“I’ve to discard this number immediately, so don’t call me again,” said Hong Changyin.

“Wait!” Zhong Tao shouted, “Boss Hong, where are you now? I’ll come over immediately.”

Hong Changyin bitterly replied, “I just came out from the Su Village and am preparing to hide in the mountain next to the village first until tomorrow morning, then I’ll be away from this place as fast as possible.”

“Wait for me, I’ll go there immediately,” shouted Zhong Tao.

Hong Changyin didn’t hang up the phone. After staying silent for a minute, he then slowly said, “President Zhong, I trust you won’t betray me! Since you want to know the big trouble this matter has caused, then seize the time. I’m still on the mountain foot next to the Su Village. Also, remember. You must make sure that nobody except you know where I am. And don’t bring anyone with you.”

“Understood!”

Zhong Tao complied. He hung up the phone and got dressed in a hurry, grabbing his car key and rushing out.

At the mountain foot next to Su Village.

Tang Xiu patted Hong Changyin's swollen cheek and praised, "Damn, your acting skills are really good. It looks like your pitiful begging before, to spare your life, was also fake, eh?"

Hong Changyin's pupils contracted. He desperately shook his head, "No, it wasn't. Absolutely not!"

Tang Xiu thought for a moment and then said slowly, "Words can't be trusted. Prove it to me."

"How I should prove it to you?" asked Hong Changyin.

"Break one of your legs." Tang Xiu said indifferently.

"WHAT?" Hong Changyin trembled as panic covered his face.

Tang Xiu replied lightly, "If you're afraid to do it yourself, I'll help you. A good trait of mine is that I love to help others."

Hong Changyin replied with a shivering voice, "B-B-Brother... please spare me! If you break my leg, I'll be crippled for life. You're a great man, please forgive me this time. I won't dare to bully



others due to my status, and I also won't do bad deeds again later. I promise you that I'll immediately shy away from you when I come across you in the future."

Tang Xiu shook his head, "I'll let you live this night, but you won't live past dawn. I'm giving you the choice to break your leg, but you can never leave safely if you don't do so. This is your last chance to live. If you won't take it, it's your choice. I give you a minute. If you don't act within this time, you'll enjoy your fucking life in hell!"

"I..." Hong Changyin cast a glance at Tang Xiu's grim expression. The despair in his heart grew thicker. In his mind, Tang Xiu was a devil, a vicious and ruthless demon.

He didn't want to die! He was rich and had a good life, he could live a squandering life for decades.

"Okay, okay, I'll break it."

Hong Changyin glanced around quickly. As he saw a stone a few meters away, he immediately crawled over, lifted it up and fiercely smashed his calf.

"Uwaaa..."

A piercing and miserable scream howled, echoing at the mountain foot.

Tang Xiu nodded in satisfaction. His grandmother's leg was fractured. If not for his superb medical skill, perhaps she would likely to have a sequela even if she was healed, and even become crippled. So he must make Hong Changyin who did the evil deed also taste how it felt to become a cripple.

However, Tang Xiu hated Hong Changyi's pained and anguished scream. He walked toward him, held his thigh and quickly pressed several acupoints in his calf.

Suddenly, Hong Changyin's pitiful scream came to halt.

"W-Why... doesn't it hurt?"

Hong Changyin's face twisted, slowly coming back to normal. He was dumbfoundedly looking at his blood-covered leg. It was obviously broken! He then looked up at Tang Xiu with disbelief.

It didn't hurt! Not even a little bit of pain could be felt now. If not for the blood on his calf, he would have thought that he was dreaming.

"There are things called acupoints in this world's kungfu. I sealed the acupoints on your thigh injury. One is to help stop your bleeding, and the other is to make the pain disappear. So if you dare to let out another howling ghost again, I'll stitch your mouth," said Tang Xiu indifferently.

Hong Changyin looked at him with disbelief, horror and shock

overwhelming his eyes as he replied, “You know acupoints?”

Tang Xiu coldly glanced at him but didn’t answer. He needed to calm his mind and wait for the County Hospital’s Vice President, Zhong Tao to arrive. Hong Changyin was admittedly hateful, but Zhong Tao was even more disgusting. He was a hospital doctor as well as had a good standing as a hospital’s leader, yet he turned out to make things worse for the patients and colluded in evil deeds with villains. If he didn’t make him pay, then who?

Twenty minutes later. A Volkswagen sedan slowly parked nearby the Land Rover as Zhong Tao got off from the driver’s seat. He then looked around and saw that nobody was here.

Just as he walked a few steps forward, a ghostly figure silently appeared behind him, punching his head, making him faint.

Tang Xiu grabbed his hands and brought him to a place a hundred meters away as he stopped and put him down in front of Hong Changyin who was sitting exhausted on the ground. He said indifferently, “Wake him up! And you better smash his leg with a stone!”

Hong Changyin hesitated for a moment before following Tang Xiu’s order. He took the stone and fiercely smashed Zhong Tao’s left leg. The fractured bone produced great pain, causing Zhong Tao to wake up from his stupor. He let out a pig-like scream, echoing in the wilderness.

"Hong—Hong Changyin!"

Zhong Tao could only see starlight, and then looked at Hong Changyin who was sitting exhausted in front him. Disbelief suffused in his eyes since Hong Changyin's appearance at the moment was really very miserable.

Hong Changyin bitterly said, "I'm sorry, Vice President Zhong."

Zhong Tao stared at him blankly. After several seconds later, only then did he realize that someone else was behind him. He turned and looked at Tang Xiu as his expression suddenly changed.

"You're Zhong Tao, yes? The Vice President of Qinghe County Hospital? You're a doctor, yet you cling to a powerful official to cause misfortune for the patients. You're pretty good!" Tang Xiu came before him and spoke without being salty nor insipid.

Zhong Tao exclaimed involuntarily, "Who are you?"

Tang Xiu sneered, "Who am I? I'm the executioner who enforces justice on behalf of Heaven. A butcher who punishes evil and uphold justice. You don't need to blame Hong Changyin. It is I who forced him to deceive you! Because if he didn't, he would die today. And you, your fate probably won't be much better than his."

## Chapter 246: The Killer Under the Pain

---

Zhong Tao suddenly turned his head to look at Hong Changyin, his sight then immediately turning to look at Tang Xiu. His lips squirmed a few times as he said with a bitter expression, "I understand! Sir, you deceived me and also smashed my leg. I'm guessing you're getting revenge for the matter with the Su villagers, right?"

Tang Xiu smiled, "Correct! This is indeed revenge. You have to know that if not for rushing here from Star City, my grandmother would've to continue to suffer. She would've to continue staying outside the hospital's operating room, waiting for those damned respected doctors for the surgery. And those respected doctors turned out to be playing 'Fight the Landlord'."

Intense regret welled up inside Zhong Tao's heart, regretting getting involved with Hong Changyin's matter. He initially hoped to get along, kissing him up. He could obtain a lot of benefits from him on one hand, while he also could draw support from Hong Changyin, speaking for him in front of the County's commissioner court's head. Everything was to give him a chance at a promotion to the Presidency of the County Hospital.

But in the end he didn't gain any benefits but actually provoking troubles for himself.

He was a doctor, and he knew that with his leg's condition, perhaps he would become a cripple for the rest of his life.

Tang Xiu looked to Hong Changyin and said indifferently, “Do what I tell you and I’ll let you go.”

Hong Changyin produced a pleasantly surprised expression and hurriedly asked, “What is it? Please tell me!”

Tang Xiu said, “I’ve badly beaten you, turning you very miserable this time. Now you can see and taste it for yourself. When others see you, they will remember it for a lifetime. So I want you to do the same with this surnamed Zhong. Don’t worry of him fighting back. If he does, I will use this stone to smash his other leg.”

“YOU DARE!” Zhong Tao glared at Hong Changyin.

Instead of answering, Hong Changyin grabbed the branch Tang Xiu threw to him. He sat and maliciously slumped towards Zhong Tao. Every man was for himself, and the Devil would take the hindmost. In order to escape danger, let alone hitting Zhong Tao ruthlessly, he wouldn’t even hesitate if Tang Xiu told him to kill him.

"Pa Pa Pa— "

Hong Changyin hit Zhong Tao as the latter rolled about on the ground, screaming. After beating him for two or three minutes, Zhong Tao was heavily bruised and extremely miserable, only then did he stop. He then looked at Tang Xiu with anticipation.

Tang Xiu faintly smiled. He raised his thumb up and said,

“Excellent! You’re cruel enough! You even dare to beat him into such miserable state to keep your poor life. Alright, both of you can leave! But bear in your mind. If you want to retaliate, you can find me. My name is Tang Xiu, a very ordinary and amiable person. Of course, you must be prepared of dying if you want to have your revenge on me.”

Having said that, he started the Land Rover and drove away. After traveling for two kilometers, Tang Xiu stopped his car on the roadside and turned it off. He then quietly returned back to where Hong Changyin and Zhong Tao were, seeing them quietly lying on the grass.

He wasn’t afraid of their revenge. But he was afraid they would implicate his grandmother, so he wanted to hear what they would conspire after he left.

Looking at the disappearing Land Rover, Zhong Tao looked at Hong Changyin with hatred. He loudly shouted, “Surnamed Hong, I helped you in your damned matter and you unexpectedly pay me back like this! Great, you’re great! If I don’t settle the score today, even if you’re rich and powerful I’ll also drag you back even if I die. Just you fucking wait for me, idiot!”

Hong Changyin looked at him and didn’t speak for a long time as his expression constantly changed! Murderous intent filled his eyes.

He suddenly felt that what Tang Xiu had said was true. Such a miserable state would certainly make others remember him for a lifetime. He didn’t want to be remembered by anyone in such

miserable state like today. He didn't want others to know that he had once betrayed the person who helped him.

“Vice President Zhong, let's talk!”

Finally, he spoke.

Zhong Tao bitterly shouted, “Is there anything good left for us to talk about? You're so fucking afraid of death. To keep your damn life, you even hurt me so badly! If I turn a cripple later, everything is over. Not only can't I not become the County Hospital's President, I'll even be kicked out from my job! It's all because of you, bastard!”

Hong Changyin sneered, “Vice President Zhong, shut it. You sure as hell know the saying that every man is for himself, and the devil takes the hindmost. I'm still young and haven't had enough to live. I admit wronging you, but I will compensate you later.”

Zhong Tao raged, “Compensate me? What the fuck are you going to compensate me with? My leg has just been smashed by a stone. Even with my years of medical experience, no matter how well-developed the medical technology is, my leg won't be like before. Do you fucking understand? I'LL BECOME A CRIPPLE!”

Hong Changyin said with a heavy tone, “Then what do you want? You want me to compensate you with my leg?”

Zhong Tao clenched his fist and shouted, “You'll compensate me



with your leg? You only have one leg now, bastard! And you think you still have the qualifications to say that? I, Zhong Tao, have done a lot of wrongdoings for evil people. But I've never done something so excessive to deserve such a wretched end!"

Hong Changyin stared at him and was silent for a long time. He then looked at the furious expression on Zhong Tao's face as he nodded slowly and said, "I got it! Since I owe you one, it won't matter if I owe you once again. Then, you can go to fucking hell!"

Having said that, Hong Changyin picked the stone beside him and smashed it toward Zhong Tao's head. Although he was hurting all over his body, the surging murderous intent gave him surprisingly enormous strength. The stone accurately smashed Zhong Tao's head, causing him to fall with his face down. He dragged his broken leg, picked up the stone and used both his hands to smash Zhong Tao's head once again.

"Huff—"

After Hong Changyin directly smashed Zhong Tao's head for several times in one breath, only then did he take a long sigh of relief. Blood got all over his grim face after he smashed Zhong Tao to death.

"Clap, clap, clap!"

Tang Xiu, who was hiding in the thick patch of grasses, didn't stop Hong Changyin's murder. At the moment, he even stood while applauding as he swaggeringly came before Hong Changyin

and exclaimed in admiration, “It was just, wow! Boss Hong is really ruthless! It’s no wonder that you dared to put your hands on such an ordinary boss. The scene of you killing him just now was really wonderful, so I got you tapped on video. Just imagine if I upload it to the internet. It’ll surely cause a great sensation.”

Hong Changyin looked at Tang Xiu with a disbelieving expression. He kept quiet after hearing Tang Xiu’s speech, not having the guts to retaliate. It was just that, he didn’t expect that not only had Tang Xiu beaten him so badly, he also had taken the evidence of his murder.

He nearly fainted.

Tang Xiu smiled, “What? Never expected that I would come back, eh? You never thought I’d finally see your ruthless side?”

Hong Changyin scowled miserably and said, “Brother—Boss, I beg you. Can you forgive me? I really have no guts to get revenge on you, truly. I killed him because he had malicious intentions toward me, and I also don’t want anything that happened tonight to be known to anyone else.”

Tang Xiu raised his thumb up and exclaimed in admiration, “Sure enough, you’re really good at scheming. It seems like you’re not just a sissy who clings onto your uncle and bully the weak. Alright. I said I won’t kill you. Naturally, I won’t claim your life. But, after pondering for a moment after leaving, I feel I’ve yet to vent all of my anger, so I wanted to break your other leg. But now I have changed my mind.”

“T-T-Then, you... are you letting me go?” Hong Changyin’s heart turned cold and asked carefully.

Tang Xiu laughed, “You can leave anytime. But on the condition that you compensate all the injured villagers later! And the sum money must be good.”

Money?

Hong Changyin was secretly relieved. He patted his chest and promised, “Don’t worry, I’ll definitely personally... No. I’ll definitely send people to pay compensation to those villagers. I’ll also stop the project immediately. In the future, I guarantee that anyone who dares to make trouble for the Su Village will have to cross over this Hong Changyin first. A-Are you... satisfied with this?”

Tang Xiu nodded in satisfaction. He reached his hand out to lift Hong Changyin up, saying, “Your leg is broken. If you leave it like that, people will find out about it. Also, to help you take care of the dead body, I’ll send you back to Qinghe County Hospital and come back here to clean up the mess.”

Hong Changyin probed, “A-Are you really... not going to disclose the murder?”

“As long as you keep your word, I’ll hide it for you,” said Tang Xiu indifferently.

“Thank you, thank you, Brother!” said Hong Changyin gratefully.

Tang Xiu glanced at him with a ridiculing expression. He carried him to the parked car and then drove with the quickest speed and quietly sent him back to the County Hospital’s ward.

“Brother, you... are you going to take me out like this?”

Hong Changyin was sent back to the hospital’s ward and found that his girlfriend was not there. He immediately asked Tang Xiu, who was about to leave.

Tang Xiu turned around and lightly said, “What? Is there a problem with it?”

Hong Changyin swallowed his saliva desperately. He shook his head heavily. Tang Xiu easily climbed up to the Inpatient Department on the third floor and easily sent him back through the window. He was shocked to the extreme, but he didn’t dare to reveal it.

He was fearsome! A monster!

Tang Xiu said indifferently, “Either the 3rd or 13th floor you said, I can take you out and send you back easily if I want to. You won’t dare to imagine what my abilities can do. Alright, take care of your problems, and I’ll think about the solution to solve your other

matters.”

Having said that, his figure instantly slipped away through the window and disappeared in the darkness of night.

Hong Changyin walked to the window with his crippled leg, looking at the pitch black sky outside. The fear inside his heart didn't diminish even a bit. He was afraid of the unknown, fearing that Tang Xiu would take go back on his words and give the evidence of his murder to the police or uploaded it on the internet.

“I don't have the luxury to think so much. I gotta take care of my injury and find an excuse to get through this.”

After thinking for a few minutes, Hong Changyin dialed a cell number and spoke with a deep tone, “Huzi, get up. Get your ass here immediately. Alone. Also, bring a stone with you and head directly to my ward. Quickly...”

## Chapter 247: The Su Village Big Event

---

Tang Xiu drove back to the mountain near Su Village. He then threw Zhong Tao's dead body to feed the wild animals in a remote part of the mountain. He then returned back to where his car was parked and frowned.

He took care of the dead body! But how should he take care of the car?

After hesitating for a long period of time, he decided to drive the car far away. He remembered that there was a small lake about several kilometers away. So it shouldn't be a problem throw the car into the lake.

After more than an hour later dawn came as Tang Xiu finally had erased all the traces and drove his car back to Su Village.

“Yo, aren't you Little Xiu?”

Just as Tang Xiu stopped his car, an uncle passed by and approached. He circled around the car twice as his eyes then landed on Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu knew this man so he smiled, “Uncle Danian, you wake up so early!”

Su Danian looked at him with a surprised expression. He also glanced at the Land Rover SUV a few times, then speaking

curiously, “It’s pleasantly cool in the morning, so it’s a good time to uproot the weeds from the land. Anyway, when did you learn to drive, Little Xiu? You also have such a good car. This is a baby, I can tell. Although your Uncle Danian only knows a little about cars, I can see that this car is quite expensive, right?”

Tang Xiu smiled, “Uncle Danian, cars are just means of transport. It’s nothing surprising!”

Su Danian nodded as he exclaimed in admiration, “People in our country love to drive good cars, and they all like to pretend to be big shots, comparing themselves with others. You have a good disposition, just like when you were still a child.”

“Uncle Danian is overpraising me!”

Tang Xiu and Su Danian chit chatted for a while before he returned to the courtyard. He didn’t expect that his mother, Su Lingyun, had woken up and was washing her face and rinsing her mouth right there.

“Mom, why don’t you rest more!”

Su Lingyun smiled, “Your grandma woke up and said she’s hungry, so I couldn’t sleep much longer. I got up to make her breakfast. Xiu’er, I didn’t see you at home, what were you doing?”

Tang Xiu didn’t want to tell her that he got revenge on Hong Changyin and Zhong Tao because he knew his mother’s character.

If he told her, she would be anxious and scared for a long time. So he lied, “I just drove around in the vicinity. It’s been nearly two years. There’s not much change in our hometown, it seems.”

Su Lingyun shook her head, “People here are too poor, so it isn’t strange that there’s not much change here. Alright, you go sleep now, Mom will prepare food immediately.”

“Alright, Mom!”

Tang Xiu replied and soon came to his old room.

The walls and furniture were familiar. He lived here for several years. The memories of those years were unforgettable; even comparing what he experienced in his 10,000 years in the Immortal World.

“This place truly gives off a homey feeling!”

Tang Xiu sighed deeply inwardly. Warmness filled his chest as he felt slightly tired. Contemplating for a moment, he then laid down on the bed without changing his clothes and slept.

Two hours later, more than half of the village’s folks flocked to the Su family’s dilapidated courtyard. Some of them looked curiously at the Land Rover SUV parked outside the courtyard, whereas some others looked gratefully as they talked to Su Lingyun.



“Little Yun, Quan has told us about the matter when he got back. We’re really thankful, especially to Tang Xiu. If it wasn’t for him, perhaps Fourth Uncle would still be in the Inpatient Department’s corridor in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital!”

“Lingyun, you really have a good son! He has grown up and has a good future ahead of him. This time, if it wasn’t for him, those folks who went to Star City would have suffered.”

“Tang Xiu is still young, yet he’s so reliable. He’s really the pride of our whole village. I have heard that he’s also skilled in medical skills, a Divine Doctor who’s in charge of the Outpatient Department in Star City Chinese Medical School. Young, promising and amazing!”

“Lingyun, you’ve taught your son well—”

"..."

As shocked as she was, Su Lingyun listened to everyone’s praises with happiness. Having her son praised by her fellow villagers made her happier.

Just as she was happily replying to them, two black cars arrived. Every Su villager looked at those two cars curiously.

“Creak...”

The two black cars stopped nearby the crowd.

As four big and burly men came out of the car, a man wearing gold-rimmed glasses followed. It was a middle-aged man who looked refined in his manners as he slowly came out of the car.

After seeing the middle-aged man, the villagers of the Su Village had a great change in their expressions. Some young villagers even began to prepare some handy weapons, preparing to fight.

The middle-aged man's expression slightly changed. He quickly let out an amiable smile and said, "Folks, please don't be so tense. We're not going to cause you trouble this time. Our boss knows we were too excessively aggressive, so he specifically send me to apologize to you."

As the old village chief, Su Changhe was quite brave. He paced a few steps to the front of the middle-aged man and growled, "We don't need your apologies. Our fields will never be sold to you, so I advise you to spare the effort and just get the hell out."

The middle-aged man forced a smile, "Elder, please don't be angry. This time, I'm under the imperial order from my boss. If I just leave and go back without a good result it won't be good for me. This time, not only am I here to apologize to the Su Village, I'm also here to compensate the families of the injured from yesterday's conflict."

"Compensation?"

The Su villagers glanced at each other in dismay, wearing

uncanny expressions on their faces. They didn't know what kind of medication the other party had taken. It was perhaps another scheme of theirs!

The middle-aged man continued, "Everyone, our boss suddenly had a nightmare last night. In his dream, he was being punished for his evil deeds he committed before. Finally, a subordinate who worked for our boss a year ago suddenly broke into the hospital and injured him. If not for being seriously injured, he would have come to personally apologize to you."

A strange expression was written on the faces of the Su villagers.

"How are you going to compensate us?"

Su Changhe asked with a heavy tone, along with a disdainful expression.

The middle-aged man quickly motioned the middle-aged strongman and received a black bag from him. Then he raised it and said, "Our boss said that for each injured villager, we will pay 100 thousand yuan as compensation. Since there's six injured, we'll give 600 thousand yuan altogether as compensation."

"What?"

All the villagers were shocked. They never dreamed that this matter would unexpectedly be reversed so greatly.

Could it be that the Boss of Imperial Water Royal View City, Hong Changyin, had his head broken by someone?

The middle-aged man said loudly, “For the families of the six injured, is there anyone present now? If so, please come forward to receive the compensation.”

The Su villagers looked at each other. Most of them suddenly felt envious of the wounded villagers. Had they known that the Imperial Water Royal View Real Estate would give so much money, they would have come forward to be beaten before!

100 thousand!

It was a huge sum of money for the Su Village’s folks. With 100 thousand yuan, they would definitely be the richest here.

“Me! My mother was injured.”

Su Lingyun braved herself as she stood and spoke.

100 thousand for her, at present, was a very ignorable amount, because the net monthly profit from her restaurant exceeded 100 thousand yuan. But her mother was, after all, wounded. Since the other party was willing to pay compensation, why wouldn’t she accept it?

The middle-aged man asked, “Is there anyone else?”

Su Change said, “The other injured and their relatives have gone to Star City. If you sincerely want to compensate them, just give the money for the other five to me. I’ll give it to them when they come back.”

The middle-aged man hesitated, “This... would this be alright?”

In a split second, all the Su villagers voiced their trust in the old village chief, saying he was an extremely honorable person and that everyone was relieved entrusting the money to him.

The middle-aged man nodded. He took 100 thousand from the black leather bag and handed it over to Su Lingyun and gave the remaining 400 thousand yuan to Su Changhe.

“Everyone! We have given you the compensation money, but there’s another thing our boss wants to tell all of you. The plan to levy your farmland and the establishment of the industrial site will also be abandoned. We will no longer trouble you in the future.”

Su Changhe glanced at the money in his hand and looked at the sincere look of the middle-aged man. Then, he spoke with a deep tone, “Each and every one of us here are only ordinary people. If you don’t provoke us, we naturally won’t bother you on our own initiative.”

“OK!”

The middle-aged man replied. Then he boarded the car and quickly left.

The Su Village's folks talked about what happened outside the courtyard. Su Lingyun herself held the 100 thousand yuan and walked into the courtyard in a hurry. There was no established bank in a rural village so there were no means to guard the money. Su Lingyun then came to Tang Xiu's room and saw that he was sleeping. After hesitating for a moment, she put the money into the desk drawer.

At noon, Tang Xiu woke up from his sleep. He found that the Imperial Water Royal View City Real Estate's people had come over and compensated the injured people. He was quite satisfied with this conclusion. He then went to the county downtown to deposit the 100 thousand yuan into his grandmother's bankbook. He had originally planned to leave a sum of money for his grandmother, but since she gained 100 thousand yuan, Tang Xiu gave up on this idea for the time being.

"Tang Xiu!"

Su Ben and Su Quan came to the courtyard. Seeing that Tang Xiu was chatting with Zhang Shi, they immediately called him out enthusiastically. There was a bag in Su Ben's hand. His usually reserved and rarely speaking self was now somewhat smiling.

Tang Xiu came forward and hugged Su Quan. He then smiled, "Quan, I heard that you sent my grandma to the County Hospital. Thanks, brother."

Su Quan replied with a smile, “Why are you thanking me? No need for that between us. Besides, I originally intended to send your grandma to Star City, but she refused and said that she didn’t want to give you trouble.”

Tang Xiu nodded slightly. He then looked at the bag on Su Ben’s hand and asked, “Big Brother Ben, could it be there’s Silver Dragon Grass inside that bag?”

“Yes! I just went home and searched around and found 16 strains of Silver Dragon Grass. Also, Su Quan and I went to the mountain in the morning and found a dozen strains more. There are a total of 28 strains in this bag,” said Su Ben.

## Chapter 248: College Entrance Test Scores

---

Tang Xiu took the bag and looked at all the Silver Dragon Grasses inside. After observing for a few seconds, he nodded, “28 strains of Silver Dragon Grass, totaling 28 thousand yuan. Big Brother Ben, please give me your bank account number, I’ll transfer the money to you now. As for how Quan’s share, it’s up to you.”

Su Ben and Su Quan were a bit excited.

A few minutes later, 28 thousand yuan had been transferred to Su Ben’s account.

“That’s right, you found seven strains last night, so I’ll give you another seven thousand.” As honest as he was, Su Ben immediately transferred the money to Su Quan.

Tang Xiu put the Silver Dragon Grass into his car and then looked at Su Quan, saying, “Quan, I’ve talked to Big Brother Ben. He’s preparing to follow me to Star City. What about you? Do you want to go with me to Star City too?”

Without hesitation, Su Quan replied, “Big Brother Ben also talked to me about that. I’ll go.”

Tang Xiu laughed, “That’s great! When the time comes, I’ll arrange to put the both of you together. Big Brother Ben is an honest person and good for safety works. You’ve a pretty good head on you, so I’ll arrange another position for you in the future.”



“Well, I feel good following you,” said Su Quan smiled.

“Ring, ring, ring...”

Just as Tang Xiu was about to reply, his mobile suddenly rang. As he took out his cell phone and looked at the number on the screen, he saw that it was Han Qingwu calling.

“Hello, Teacher Han!” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

“Tang Xiu, quickly check your score. Oh my god! The total score of the CET test is 750 points. You, you... you unexpectedly got a score of 746 points! It’s amazing and unbelievable! You only missed 4 points for the perfect score!” Han Qingwu’s shivering voice came out from the phone.

Tang Xiu was surprised for a moment. He suddenly recalled that today was the release of the CET scores. As he heard the news from Han Qingwu, he knew that she had his CET admission card number and checked the result for him. He then laughed and said, “Teacher, haven’t I told you that I’d make you proud with this year’s College Entrance Test? Anyways, what about Yuan Chuling and Chen Yannan’s test scores?”

Han Qingwu quickly replied, “I haven’t checked theirs yet. But now I’m confident about their results as well. Tang Xiu, congrats!”

Tang Xiu laughed, “I also want to say thanks for you sparing no

effort to take care of me from the beginning!”

Han Qingwu laughed and replied, “It’s good that you know. But anyways, where are you now? I want to treat you to a meal to celebrate your good test result.”

“I’m in my hometown. There was an accident here. Alright, I’ll call you when I’m back in Star City,” said Tang Xiu.

“Alright!” said Han Qingwu.

Han Qingwu hung up the phone. Tang Xiu then searched his admission card number to check on his test result. He was quite satisfied. Aside from Literature and Language which he had 4 points off from the perfect result, all other subjects were perfect.

"Ring, ring, ring..."

Just as he was checking his results, his mobile rang again. This time it was Ouyang Lulu calling.

“What’s up, Lulu?”

Feeling good, Tang Xiu asked with a laugh.

Ouyang Lulu quickly asked, “Tang Xiu, the CET results have come out. How many points did you get?”

“746,” answered Tang Xiu.

“What’s the total score? And how are your results?” Puzzled, Ouyang Lulu asked again.

“Apart from Literature and Language missing four points from the total score, which should become from the essay writing section, I got a perfect score on all other subjects.”

“WHAT? You meant that you only missed 4 points to get a perfect score in the CET?” Ouyang Lulu’s scream came out of the phone.

Tang Xiu laughed, "That's right!"

Ouyang Lulu was shocked, “T-Tang Xiu, y-you... you aren’t lying to me, right? Oh, Heaven! This is so amazing. Hey, I remember you seem to like science, right? To get such a high score is truly unexpected. Perhaps the CET top scorer for the science subjects in Shuangqing Province is none other but you.”

“It doesn’t matter. As long as I can pass and enter Shanghai University, it’s fine,” said Tang Xiu laughed.

Ouyang Lulu exclaimed in admiration, “Tang Xiu, I always knew that you were good! But never did I expect that you would be this amazing. Anyways, when will you come to Jingmen Island? I’ll take you to dinner to celebrate.”

Tang Xiu hesitated as he wryly smiled, “When I’m done with the matters here, I’ll go there to find you.”

"Great!" Ouyang Lulu laughed happily.

Standing at his side, Su Ben and Su Quan were shocked and dumbfounded ever since Tang Xiu checked the CET scores. As Tang Xiu and Ouyang Lulu finished talking on the phone, the both of them still hadn’t recovered from the shock. They were students before, so they naturally understood the meaning of getting 746 points in the CET.

“Tang—“

Just as Su Quan was about to speak, Tang Xiu’s mobile rang again.

Tang Xiu looked at the phone’s screen. A wry smile appeared on his face. He looked at Su Quan, shook his head and answered the phone, saying, “Zhengyu, something’s up?”

“Tang Xiu, the CET scores have come out, have you checked yours? How many points did you get?”

"746."

"How many?"

"746!"

"OH GOD ..."

Within the next forty minutes, Tang Xiu received more than 20 calls. All of them, with no exception, were only to ask about Tang Xiu's test scores. Even the President of Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, Li Hongji, also called to ask about it. When they heard that he got 746 points in his CET, each and every one of them was shocked to the point where it was hard for them to recover from it.

They all knew that Tang Xiu was amazing. Amazing in every aspect!

But not even in their dreams had they ever thought that Tang Xiu's good academic performance would be so terrifying to this extent!

However, Tang Xiu also knew from Yuan Chuling and Cheng Yannan about their CET results. Yuan Chuling scored 663 points, and according to the previous year undergraduate passing grade, it would be easy for him to pass a university entrance exams' undergraduate course. Even if he couldn't take the test for a top university, it wouldn't be a problem for him to enter the second-grade ones. As for Cheng Yannan, her CET result was 674 points, she was more likely to be able to enter a top university than Yuan Chuling.

At this time.

Su Lingyun came out from the kitchen. As she saw Tang Xiu speaking with Su Ben and Su Quan, she immediately smiled, “Su Ben, Su Quan, both of you stay for lunch. Also, Xiu’er, I just recalled that there’s something very important happening today, yet I forgot what it is. You said that our family...”

Tang Xiu interrupted her with a smile, saying, “Mom, I just checked my CET score. From the total score of 750 points, I got 746 points.”

Su Lingyun stared blankly for a moment as her eyes turned sauce-like immediately after. Disbelief burst out from her eyes. Her hands quickly rubbed her apron as she dashed toward Tang Xiu, grabbed both of his arms and hurriedly shouted, “How many? How many points have you got on your test?”

“746, mom! It’s just four points off the perfect score.”

Su Lingyun stared at Tang Xiu in a daze. Her two eyes were brimming with tears. As she loosened his arms, she squatted on the ground and cried.

Tang Xiu squatted down and gently hugged her shoulders. He knew that his mother was crying out of extreme happiness. He didn’t say anything to console her and gently hugged her, letting her vent everything she had inside.

Su Ben and Su Quan looked at each other and quietly left.

Only after a minute only did Su Lingyun stop crying. She looked up with a hazy face full of tears and said excitedly, “Sonny, you’re the best!”

Tang Xiu laughed, “Mom, you’re the best one in my heart!”

At Star City Primary Public Hospital.

Sun Wenjing was holding the examination report in her hands. She went out of the hospital building in a daze. Outside the building, all the Sun family’s members were standing and waiting. All eyes firmly watched her, staring at the copy of the report in her hands. Looking at her expression, a bad feeling arouse inside the hearts of the whole Sun family.

“Wenjing, what’s the result?” Sun Jianhai strode to her and anxiously asked.

Sun Wenjing handed the examination report to him and replied with a blank expression, “Take a look at it yourself, Big Brother.”

Sun Jianhai quickly took it. A disbelieving expression was written on his face when he read it. The expression lasted for a few seconds before a look of ecstasy took over his face.

“There’s no cancer cells! The cancer has been cured!”

The same disbelieving expression was also cast on Sun Jianjun, Sun Wenmin, and the old lady’s face. They quickly dashed to read

the report as looks of great happiness immediately appeared on each and every one of their faces.

At this moment, Sun Wenjing finally woke up from her shock. Tang Xiu's handsome face appeared in her mind. She clenched her fists strongly as she called out, smiling, "Our entire family have to thank Tang Xiu very well! People say that he's a divine doctor, but even though I know he's very skillful, I didn't believe it completely before. But now, I truly believe that he's a Divine Doctor, one that is much more powerful than ordinary Divine Doctors."

Sun Jianhai solemnly nodded, "Indeed. Being able to cure a middle stage liver cancer, he's definitely the world's most powerful Divine Doctor. However, he doesn't want us to publicize this matter and must keep it confidential for him. To be honest, I agree with his decision, because if this matter is spread out, that he can cure cancer, great benefits will come to him, yet it will also bring along it huge trouble."

Sun Wenmin said, "I know that Tang Xiu doesn't want anything from us, but his benevolence of saving our mother's life is not something that we can fail to pay! Oh, right. Didn't Big Sis say that even though he gives medical services in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, yet he's also a student that just participated in the CET? Well, the CET scores just came out today. If he didn't get a good result, I'll call my contacts to let him enter one of the top universities. I have an old friend, a classmate. She teaches in one of the top universities in Beijing, with her husband being the Dean of that university. So he should have a special quota."

Sun Jianhai thought for a moment before nodding, "Wenjing,



call Tang Xiu and ask him how many points he got in his CET. If his score is not high enough, then let Wenmin call her friend to take care of it.”

“Alright!”

Sun Wenjing nodded and dialed Tang Xiu’s number.

About two minutes later, a shocked expression covered her face as she hung up the phone.

Sun Jianhai frowned. He then asked with a deep tone, “What is it? Is his result very poor?”

Sun Wenjing looked at her family members as she shook her head and smiled, “It’s not poor, on the contrary, it’s way too good! If it’s not because I believe that Tang Xiu won’t lie, I really wouldn’t believe that he would get such a high CET score. He got 746. Four points off from the total score.”

“WHAT?”

Each and every one of the Sun family members were stupefied upon hearing it. This news shocked them greatly.

After a long period of time.

Sun Jianhai let out a forced smile, “Since we can’t help him in

this aspect, let's think about another way! We'll just have to bear in mind his benevolence to our Sun Family."

## Chapter 249: The Cry for Help

---

It was late at night and the vault of the heaven was full of flickering stars. The intermittent breeze was blowing, delivering a bit of coolness to the scorching summertime. Due to the mountain nearby, the countryside of Qinghe County had a fresh air, the spiritual qi between heaven and earth richer than in the city.

Tang Xiu was sitting cross-legged on the roof of his ancestral home as he bathed in the starlight coming from everywhere, cultivating his Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis. At present, he already reached the pinnacle of the Skin Strengthening Stage and might break through to the Flesh Strengthening Stage at any time. Hence, he didn't want to delay his cultivation even if he was busy every day.

“Ring, ring, ring...”

His mobile phone's ringtone rang loudly, abruptly awakening him from his cultivation state.

Tang Xiu took out his mobile, turning slightly surprised as he saw the number. He suddenly recalled promising Yuan Zhengxuan a favor that he had yet to fulfill it until now.

“Uncle Yuan!” said Tang Xiu.

Yuan Zhengxuan's urgent voice came out of the phone, “Tang Xiu, where are you? Can you rescue Little Ling?”

Tang Xiu's expression changed and he hastily asked, "What happened to him? What has happened exactly?"

Yuan Zhengxuan's voice was very low yet still clear, "An accident just happened in my business. I didn't expect that those foreign forces eyeing our core scientific and technological data would be this crazy. They even went so far as to attack my other businesses. Apart from Little Ling, they even killed two other high-level executives. Those people are too powerful, I can't withstand their attacks."

Tang Xiu asked in a heavy tone, "Uncle Yuan, where are you now? I'll look for you immediately."

"Tang Xiu, don't come here now, there are too many of them. You'll only lose your life if you come," said Yuan Zhengxuan urgently.

Tang Xiu jumped down from the roof and dashed toward the door while replying with a sinking tone, "Tell me the address, quickly!"

"I'm in Jinfeng District, in an abandoned used car dealer."

Hesitating for a moment, Yuan Zhengxuan then replied with a heavy tone.

Tang Xiu hung up the phone. He immediately called Zhong

Tiekui and commanded him to lead a few of his subordinates to rush for the rescue. He then started his Land Rover and drove fast toward Star City.

Even though he had no experience driving through the highway, he didn't care. Rescuing someone was the same as fighting fire! Relying on his skillful driving, his car speed quickly exceeded the speed limit.

Star City, at the Jinfeng District's used car dealer.

Yuan Zhengxuan was holding a pistol as he erased the bloodstain on the corner of his mouth. He was bleeding, a bullet having pierced his shoulder. There was also a knife cut on his left cheek. He looked particularly grim. Around him, more than ten big, strong-looking guys with numerous scars on their bodies, some of them holding guns and some others armed with knives. They hid in a dark corner whilst vigilantly observing the surroundings.

“Boss! Let's rush out. We'll cover you!”

A tough, big guy in his middle-aged years, holding a gun, spoke with murderous intent.

Yuan Zhengxuan shook his head bitterly. He lowered the pitch of his voice and said, “We have too few people. If we rush out recklessly, more than half of us will die. We'll drag for more time. Those assholes want to catch me, but I won't give them what they want. As long as we can drag this for a long time, the situation will be against them and they will back out.”

Another big man frowned and said, “Boss, why don’t we call the cops? If the cops come, we...”

"Shut up!" Yuan Zhengxuan shouted in a low voice, “Did you forget what we’ve been researching and developing? If the cops find out about this, the military will surely know too. If that happens, do you think we can live? Even if... we will sell the results of this experiment to the military, but now is not the time yet.”

"Understood!" That big man nodded and grit his teeth.

"Pats— "

At this very moment, a bullet pierced the glass and hit the big guy’s forehead, killing him instantly.

Yuan Zhengxuan’s complexion changed. He shouted in a heavy tone, “Be careful, the enemy snipers have a good marksmanship. Who dares to stick out their head will surely be killed. Remember to stay put in your position and your fixed shooting sight. Don’t move recklessly and stay on alert!”

Forty to fifty black-suited big guys surrounded the used car dealer, coordinating their advance to storm inside. Each one of them was armed with firearms. Shielded by the curtain of the night, they looked for available shooting targets.

Behind them, a Volkswagen pickup truck with two big foreigners

was parked nearby. They were using binoculars to watch over the used car dealer building.

Finally, one of the foreigners put down his binocular and spoke in English, “The Chinese have the saying that a trapped beast’s struggle are futile. Yuan Zhengxuan is already trapped and he can’t escape. As long as we catch him, we can torture the core information about the biochemical weapon out of him. Jeff, be prepared to destroy the plan of these islander dwarfs and get out of this place ASAP after we got the core information.”

“The plan was to act in conjunction with those islander dwarves, but they didn’t show up tonight. I suspect they want us and Yuan Zhengxuan to kill each other while they pick up the spoils. The Chinese also have some sayings about this. Just as the mantis stalks the cicada, it might be unaware of the oriole behind. The Boss said that these islander dwarves are the most cunning and unreliable things in this world. I’m afraid the previous evacuation route we prepared is no longer safe. So, Tagore, I have drawn a new evacuation route. It will be absolutely safe.”

Tagore frowned and said coldly, “My responsibility is to get the core information for the biochemical weapon. As for how to transport it back, it’s yours. Once I hand the information to you, I no longer have any relation to this matter whatsoever.”

Jeff shrugged and picked up his binoculars again.

“Puff, puff—“

Muffled gunshot sounds could suddenly be heard.

The firearms used by both sides were all equipped with mufflers. So even in this intense gunfight, it didn't attract the attention of outsiders. In addition, this used car dealer had been relocated around six months earlier and it had scrapped cars here.

On the pickup truck, Tagore sneered, "The experts I brought along come from the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries. They're seasoned veterans of numerous battles, whereas those chaps under Yuan Zhengxuan are just mantises trying to stop a chariot, wanting to bite off more than they can chew. I recall someone saying that the people of this country are a peaceful sleeping lion, but to me, they're just well-behaved mommy kids. Look, Jeff, you must know that we've killed more than ten of Yuan Zhengxuan's men, with only two of my men dying so far. Gimme ten minutes, we'll be able to finish off all of Yuan Zhengxuan's men and catch him for sure."

Jeff shrugged his shoulders and said indifferently, "I've heard about the Death Scythe Mercenaries. Even though they're not listed in the top ten mercenaries, their combat abilities are amazing. Well, I'm looking forward seeing you deal them within these ten minutes."

Tagore revealed his white teeth and grinned fiendishly as he said, "Do you wanna bet with me? If my men can't deal them within ten minutes, I'll give you 100 thousand USD. But if I do, then you gotta give me that pretty Japanese chick of yours."

Jeff rolled his eyes and said coldly, "Tagore, oftentimes conceited



people die quickly. I'm telling you, be more cautious. Fine, don't swallow your words. I'll take that 100 thousand USD of yours."

Tagore replied confidently, "I'm Blood Lion Tagore. I've never taken back my words. I'll take that pretty Japanese chick of yours."

Both of them had yet to realize that a ghostly figure a few hundred meters away from their place was silently advancing toward them. From time to time, the figure appeared and disappeared in the veil of the night. If one wasn't cautiously paying attention, they wouldn't be able to detect it.

Half a minute later, a flying knife pierced Jeff's neck as a gold wire strangled Tagore. A powerful punch then heavily hit Jeff's temple, whereas the one who was so full of himself was directly knocked out.

"Split into two-person teams and clean up these ants."

Zhong Tiekui issued his order quickly through the wireless earphone. Along with his hand sign, eighteen of them quickly divided into nine teams and quietly slaughtered the members of Death Scythe Mercenary in a fan-shaped line.

They weren't armed with firearms. Instead, they used cold daggers.

Puff! Puff! Puff! Puff!

The sounds of daggers cutting off and piercing throats had yet to disturb the others. Within just two minutes, dozens of the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenary members became ghosts under the knives, while their firearms were also obtained by Zhong Tiekui and his men.

"ENEMIES!"

Suddenly, an angry roar came out from a Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenary member. But quickly after, his throat was cut off and the dagger pierced his heart. The machine gun in his hand also fell in his adversary's hand.

"Captain, there are at least 30 people on the enemy's side. We've been exposed, how should we carry out the next step of the operation?" The voice of a team member came from the earphone.

Zhong Tiekui thought for a moment and then replied with a deep tone, "Looking at the situation, they haven't caught Yuan Zhengxuan yet. All teams, head to the eleven o'clock direction. We'll blaze a trail of blood inside and gather up with Yuan Zhengxuan there. The Boss has commanded. We must guarantee his safety no matter the cost."

"Understood!"

Several replies came out of the earphone.

Zhong Tiekui glared at the stunned Tagore. The dagger in his hand instantly cut off his hamstring, the moment of pain awaking Tagore as he stunned him again. He then put his body in a hidden corner and shielded it with the other member in turn as they dashed toward the eleven o'clock direction.

Tagore was perfectly aware of the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenary members' strength. But he never expected that twenty shadows would suddenly rush to the killing, their strength even more fearsome.

If he knew the nicknames of these twenty shadows, he would probably issue a retreat order and flee immediately!

# Chapter 250: Test

---

It had to be known that Zhang Tiekui and the nineteen others had received devilish-like training since a very young age as they grew up and were sent abroad to be placed within various terrifyingly dangerous organizations.

They had gone through numerous battles and were baptized by the flame of wars as well as the scouring dead sea of blood of the battles. If anyone of them were to be drafted into the army, they might have become the king there.

And now! The Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenary members were already perplexed by the sudden surprise attack. They called Tagore through the earphones but nobody responded.

"Retreat!"

"Retreat!"

The voices of their companions were constantly being transmitted to each member of the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries. One of the strong and vigorous figures no longer thought of prolonging the combat and quickly retreated. As they passed by a certain spot, they found the dead bodies of their companions.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

In half a minute, the body of seven or eight Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries fell, whereas the remaining were wounded and fled.

Zhong Tiekui and his men didn't chase them. He only sent two people to quickly track those fleeing Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenary members. As for the remaining men, they quickly rushed inside. At the same time, Zhong Tiekui dialed Tang Xiu's cell number in a hidden corner.

Inside the used car dealer building, Yuan Zhengxuan's brows slightly wrinkled. There were no sounds of firing from the enemies in the last few minutes, and even the situation outside was very quiet and there was no slightest movement whatsoever. The quietness amidst the dangerous situation made his heart more restless and anxious.

"Buzz, buzz, buzz..."

His expression changed as he found that his mobile vibrating. He quickly grabbed it and saw an unfamiliar number. After thinking for a moment, he resolutely picked the call and spoke in a low voice, "Who's this?"

"I'm Zhong Tiekui. My boss sent us to support you. The enemy has retreated. We must gather up with you immediately!"

"Who's your boss?" Yuan Zhengxuan's face flickered as he asked hastily.

“Tang Xiu,” said Zhong Tiekui.

After a few seconds of silence, Yuan Zhengxuan then asked, “Why should I believe you?”

Zhong Tiekui replied with a deep tone, “Call my boss, he’ll tell you!”

“Alright!”

Yuan Zhengxuan hung up the phone and dialed Tang Xiu’s cell number.

On the highway.

Tang Xiu was driving his Land Rover SUV. The car’s speed had exceeded 180 km/h. There were only a few cars on the highway in the night and he also passed by some, scaring the drivers by his car’s speed.

“Tang Xiu, did you send someone to back me up?”

Tang Xiu received Yuan Zhengxuan’s call and heard his inquiry from the phone.

“Yes. There should 20 people. The team leader is Zhong Tiekui.”

"Ah! Thank you!"

"You're welcome!"

After ending the call, Yuan Zhengxuan quickly called a dozen of his men and then dialed Zhong Tiekui's cell number to let them come inside.

Shortly after, both sides met with each other.

Zhong Tiekui quickly arrived in front of Yuan Zhengxuan, asking in a heavy tone, "Are you injured?"

Yuan Zhengxuan nodded bitterly, "I got shot on the shoulder and lost quite a lot of blood."

"Please endure it for a moment, I'll help you remove the bullet," said Zhong Tiekui.

Yuan Zhengxuan quickly said, "Please don't be such in a hurry. I can still bear it. Where are those foreigners? Have they really backed out?"

"If I'm not wrong, the first two we dealt with were the commanders of this foreign team. Since they're without leaders and we also killed some of them, they retreated. Don't worry, I also have sent some men to track them. We'll wait for our Boss before talking about how to deal with the remaining survivors."

Yuan Zhengxuan's eyes flickered as he looked at Zhong Tiekui and the several strong men with a panic-stricken look. He had personally experienced how powerful the enemies were. Of his originally thirty trusted subordinates, half of them died after a night of combat, and the rest were all injured; whereas these strong looking guys at present, they were unscathed. Moreover, the ice-cold aura emanating from them sent a chill down his spine.

“Go outside and have a look at the situation!”

Yuan Zhengxuan calmed down his emotions with quite an effort. He let Zhong Tiekui tear his clothes as he turned to some of his men who only had light injuries and ordered them.

“Understood!”

They looked at each other and carefully lurked toward the outside.

Zhong Tiekui ripped Yuan Zhengxuan's clothes and took a lighter from his pocket. He lit it up and unceasingly burned the point of his knife. After half a minute, he said deeply, “Please endure it.”

“Alright!” said Yuan Zhengxuan as he nodded.

Zhong Tiekui's eyes narrowed slightly. Using the tip of his knife, he tore open the flesh near the bullet's entrance as Yuan Zhengxuan's complexion turned very ugly. The bullet's head was



pulled out very fast as Zhong Tiekui quickly took a needle and thread from his bag and stitched Yuan Zhengxuan's wound. He also took a roll of gauze from the bag and wrapped it up.

“Huff...”

Yuan Zhengxuan felt acute pain but was greatly relaxed inwardly. He exclaimed in admiration, “I really didn't expect that you would be carrying even needles, thread, and gauze. You have learned professional medical aid, didn't you?”

Zhong Tiekui said coldly, “We got injured practically every day in the past. If we didn't bring these life-saving stuff, I'm afraid that all of us might have already died countless over.”

Injured every day in the past? Life-saving equipment?

Yuan Zhengxuan looked at his grim expression. He palpitated and his heartbeat sped up. A deep curiosity toward who Zhong Tiekui and his men were, suddenly arose inside his heart. He wanted to know how Tang Xiu could have such a group of men.

As Zhong Tiekui dealt with Yuan Zhengxuan's wounds, he also ordered his men to treat Yuan Zhengxuan's subordinates. He then called Tang Xiu, asking for the next instructions. He was ordered to stand by and wait for him.

At Star City highway intersection.

Tang Xiu quickly drove toward the tollgate. After he paid the fee, he left the toll station as two police cars lit up their sirens and pursued him.

"Hmph..."

Naturally, with important things to manage, Tang Xiu was disinclined to deal with the cops. He accelerated his car and quickly threw off the police cars. As soon as he entered downtown, he parked his car in a remote place and left quickly.

Inside a dark alley.

Tang Xiu dialed Wolf Head's cell number. After it sounded thrice, his call was connected.

"Wolf Head?"

"It's me!"

Wolf Head's voice came.

"Since you want to pledge allegiance to me, I'll give you a test. And do bear in mind that everything I'll be telling you now must be kept strictly confidential," said Tang Xiu.

"Understood!" Wolf Head replied with a deep tone.

“A businessman friend of mine was hunted down by a group of foreign assassins. My other men have rescued him, but more than 20 of them escaped. Quickly rush to the Whitesand River ferry crossing. There’s an abandoned factory nearby. Get rid of them for me.”

"Foreign assassins?"

Wolf Head knitted his brows as hesitation was written on his face.

Tang Xiu said in a heavy tone, “I can assure you that they’re definitely foreign assassins, even though I have yet to verify their specific identities. But they have scythe signs. My men told me that they should the Grim Reaper Scythe mercenaries from abroad. Also, they are heavily armed, so you have to pay attention to your safety.”

Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries?

A thick murderous look glinted from Wolf Head’s eyes. He knew that mercenary group as well as was aware of its reputation in the mercenary world. They had committed grave crimes and killings for countless of times. Members of this mercenary group were also listed in the Interpol as well as on the clean-up list of peacekeeping forces.

Moreover, even though he had never personally fought the members of the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries during his missions abroad, but two of his comrades-in-arms had died in their

hands.

“I guarantee you, we’ll accomplish the task!” Wolf Head replied.

Tang Xiu ended the call. He didn’t hurry to converge with Yuan Zhengxuan and Zhong Tiekui. Instead, he stopped a taxi in the roadside and then rushed toward the Whitesand River ferry crossing.

The total number of retired soldiers who came to Star City along with Wolf Head was only 12. Despite his idea to test them out, Tang Xiu also wanted to ensure that they would be safe. This world was no better than the Immortal World. Let alone ordinary people, even the powerhouses in the Immortal World would have to face the possibility of death at any time.

But on Earth, one’s life was very important. Especially for Wolf Head and the other retired soldiers, for the special department of the country must be monitoring them in secret. And in the case that they all died under the enemies’ hands, perhaps, trouble would also come to him.

In addition, Yuan Chuling was kidnapped. If his guess was correct, then these people should be the culprits. Thus, if he could solve these people in time, he would also be able to find Yuan Chuling’s whereabouts and rescue him at the same time. This was, all in all, the most important purpose he had in mind.

"Creak..."

The taxi stopped around two kilometers away from the ferry crossing.

The middle-aged driver took the money Tang Xiu handed and asked curiously, “Little Brother, this a desolate place. What are you going to do here in the middle of the night?”

Tang Xiu took the change from the taxi driver and said lightly, “I lost something here during the day, so I wanna search it and see if I could get it back.”

“Is it a very important thing?” the taxi driver asked in surprise.

“Extraordinary!” said Tang Xiu.

“It looks like that thing you lost is indeed very important, or else, you wouldn’t have run over here in the middle of the night. Anyway, I wish you good luck.” The taxi driver suddenly realized and said with a sigh.

As the taxi left, Tang Xiu clarified the direction and dashed quickly towards it. Soon, his eyes were fixated at the abandoned factory in the dark. Instead of moving down the road, he slipped into the overgrown thick patches of grasses and weeds in the surrounding.

Two minutes later, Tang Xiu could clearly sense that four sneaking silhouettes were lurking toward the abandoned factory about five to six hundred meters away from him. The four of them

were wearing black clothes and were as though blended into the darkness. If not for his sharp vision as well as keen observation, he wouldn't have been able to find them.

“They were surely the ones who were fighting his and Yuan Zhengxuan's men, and they also had been terribly defeated. They must be in high vigilance. So Wolf Head and the others would perhaps suffer heavy losses if they move recklessly.”

Tang Xiu silently thought deeply.

# Chapter 251: The Reek of Blood Enveloped the World

---

Under the stars, the night was quiet and peaceful, yet a murderous aura was hidden within. The gently blowing breeze was as though having a faint reek of blood therein.

Wolf Head and eleven veteran soldiers divided into three groups as they moved closer to the abandoned factory. With their mouths biting Mitsubishi army knives, they advanced forward, creeping as though wolves in the thick patches of grasses. They didn't sense Tang Xiu following them behind nor they were aware of his presence in the surrounding. But the two who were lying amidst the grasses already found a few big guys.

“Eight o'clock direction, two sentries, white males. Another black one is guarding 12 meters behind the holed wall. Two groups, get closer and take care of them.” Wolf Head was lying in a thick patch of grasses. He issued an order after having observed through his binoculars for a long time.

“Roger that!”

The groups' members replied to him through the wireless earphone.

Very quickly, the four war veterans quietly lurked as though leopards in the night. Having spent half a minute, they appeared near the two white guards. One of them was biting the Mitsubishi army as he moved more vigorously along the wall, crossing to the

other side and quietly appearing behind a black guard.

Puff!

The knife slashed the black guard's throat as his hand filled with calluses covered his mouth. The movement of his knife changed direction and then deeply pierced the black guard's heart. The Grim Reaper Scythe mercenary struggled a little before laying still.

"Scythe tattoo?"

The retired soldier opened the black guard's collar. After he saw the scythe tattoo on it, he finally determined the other party's identity.

At the same time, the other three war veterans began their attacks as if thunderbolts. Their moves were neat and clean, quickly slaying the other two black guards within two short breaths.

"Wolf Head, they're members of the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries. I've identified them."

A voice transmitted through Wolf Head's wireless earphone, rising his murderous intent.

Wolf Head took his binoculars as he hid in a dark corner and issued another order, "Observe the surrounding for any guards left and clear all the enemies in the periphery."



A few minutes later.

All six sentry guards had been removed. After which, Wolf Head and the other men got two sniper rifles and four light machine guns. They were slowly moving toward the deepest wall of the factory when the mobile in his pocket suddenly vibrated. He quickly hid and grabbed his phone. His brows deeply furrowed as he saw the message on the screen.

On his mobile screen, an open text message showed: “There are two people coming behind you, they are our allies. They will assist you in this operation.”

Wolf Head turned around. Just as he was ready to observe the rear with his binoculars, two figures silently emerged at both of his sides.

“Don’t, they are allies!”

Wolf Head’s face changed greatly. He immediately shouted with a low voice through his wireless earphone.

As he leaned against the wall, he looked at two grim-looking strong men as shock spasmed his heart. It must be known that he had been on guard and vigilant, and was carefully watching his rear and front at all times. But, he didn’t expect that someone could appear at his sides without him realizing it.

Experts! They were definitely fearsome experts!

“What’s your name!”

Wolf Head repressed his shock inwardly and whispered.

"Shark!"

"Jungle Wolf!"

The two big strong men answered coldly as they quoted the nicknames they had used when fighting abroad.

Wolf Head was surprised for a moment. The two names were somewhat familiar to him.

Suddenly, his expression changed drastically as his breathing became more rapid, “You’re Shark, an international mercenary? The same Shark who slew the rebel army leader Hagenda in Africa, destroying nearly a hundred of his soldiers and escaping unscathed? And you’re Jungle Wolf, the Gold Medal God Assassin from the Wolf Mercenaries?”

Shark and Jungle Wolf glanced at each other as they looked at Wolf Head with some astonishment.

"Do you know us?" Shark asked in a whisper.

Wolf Head looked at them incredulously. He didn't expect that it would really be them. One must know that these two were fearsome people in the world, as one of them could cause great turmoil. But how could they be in China now? Why would they become Tang Xiu's men?

Could it be? They were Tang Xiu's men then and what they did overseas were all also by Tang Xiu's orders?

In an instant, Wolf Head became more curious about Tang Xiu's identity.

Shooo!

A shadow quietly appeared around them, causing their bodies to tense up for a moment, as Tang Xiu's voice then reached their ears, "It's me!"

"Boss!"

As they saw Tang Xiu, they immediately relaxed.

Tang Xiu nodded, "I've tell you a bad news. We're being surrounded now."

Wolf Head was startled and asked in a low voice, "How could it be? Won't we make the other people inside alarmed? Besides, when we lurked here, we also observed the back and we didn't find..."

He stopped speaking abruptly because even though they had observed the surrounding, they weren't even aware of Tang Xiu, Shark and Jungle Wolf's presence.

"These people came after we arrived! A total of more than 40, with black night-coats and fully armed. We have two choices now. First, we commence the raid and get rid of those people inside first and then strike back later. Second, we solve those outside first and clean up those inside later. Choose."

Wolf Head looked at Shark and Jungle Wolf, not uttering a word. Although he was powerful, he had no assurance in a full victory against them.

Shark thought for a moment and then slowly said, "Boss, you decide. We'll definitely obey your orders."

Tang Xiu nodded, "If we solve the ones outside first, I'm afraid that the enemies inside will be alarmed. Our main target for this operation is to kill the enemies, but more importantly, is to save my friend. I suspect that my friend was kidnapped by someone inside. So, I'll sneak inside first and deal with the enemies there, and then go outside to clean up the newcomers."

"What's the operation plan, Boss!" said Wolf Head.

Tang Xiu shook his head, "Wolf Head, I'll leave the commanding of the team to you. These two will be under you, while I'll be responsible for the assassination and rescue. You don't need to

manage me.”

“Understood!”

Wolf Head was slightly excited. Shark and Jungle Wolf were experts, after all, and putting them under his command boosted his confidence in this battle.

Tang Xiu said, “This factory is quite large and there is a total of 22 people inside. There are two at the door that are responsible to warn the others inside in case of an attack. I’ll take the responsibility to kill those two sentries while you guys will take care of the rest.”

Wolf Head was astonished, “Boss, how did you know...”

Tang Xiu interrupted him and said indifferently, “You don’t have to know how I know about the situation. You just need to know that I’m mistaken.”

Wolf Head recalled Tang Xiu’s strength and nodded slowly. He then re-analyzed the ad-hoc combat plan he had brewed and planned inside his mind. He then issued the strike orders.

The factory’s gate was made of two detachable thick iron gates.

At this moment, the large iron gate was closed and two foreign mercenaries, armed with light machine guns, were chatting in low voices, talking about what was happening tonight. Their

commander was missing, maybe killed along with their other superiors, causing all of them to be at a loss and tensed up.

“Bang...”

Tang Xiu darted very fast and heavily trampled on the two detachable heavy iron gates. This time, he used all of his strength, so the two detachable iron gates crashed down, smashing the two foreign mercenaries that were caught off guard. Even if they didn't die, these two foreign mercenaries would be ruined.

“Ratatat...”

Four light machine guns and two sniper rifles opened fire nearly at the same time. Inside the factory, more than ten Grim Reaper Scythe mercenary members who were gathered together had yet to react to what happened when they were shot.

At the other side, Tang Xiu had already gone into hiding. He had already used his spiritual sense to observe the factory; there was an office in the factory where Yuan Chuling was tied up inside. A black man was also there wiping his dagger as he sat on the couch.

Furthermore, there was also one foreign mercenary in the toilet who had escaped the killing as well as another four mercenaries inside. At this time, the four mercenaries already responded and counterattacked.

“Bang...”

The window glass of the factory was shattered. Tang Xiu instantly passed through and dashed toward the toilet's direction. At that moment, the foreigner inside the toilet held his gun and walked toward the toilet's door, but by the moment the door was opened, a sharp Mitsubishi army knife pierced his heart.

Immediately.

Tang Xiu appeared outside the office door and observed the surrounding with his perception. The foreigner mercenary expert holding a knife had already grabbed a pistol and got up quickly as he dashed toward the door at the side.

“Bang—“

Tang Xiu chased after him. Just as the man affixed his body to the door, Tang Xiu fiercely punched the door, his fist hitting the foreign mercenary's body, causing him to fly out upside down. He then opened the door and sprinted inside, catching his body that was about to land on the floor.

Tang Xiu then slashed the knife up and down, slaying him.

Yuan Chuling, who was tied up on a chair, secretly saw the scene. He was so shocked that his eyes almost popped up. Tang Xiu's storming violent strength and ruthless actions made him look at Tang Xiu as if looking at a strange monster.

If his mouth wasn't sealed up with a tape, he would've interrogated Tang Xiu loudly-Is this the real you?

Tang Xiu smiled faintly. He looked at Yuan Chuling's shocked expression and walked toward him to tear open the tape on his mouth. He then used the Mitsubishi army knife to cut off the rope tying him, saying, "Wait here. There's still a fight at the outside, so you'll be in danger if you go out rashly now. If you want to say anything, wait until the enemies outside have been solved."

"Alright!"

Yuan Chuling hesitated for a moment and nodded silently.

Tang Xiu grabbed the pistol on the floor. He then moved out of the office through the side door and found the four foreign mercenaries resisting stubbornly. Two of them had been killed, whereas the other two were hiding in the corner and counterattacking.

"Hmph!"

The two men's position was completely exposed in front of him. So, without a moment's hesitation, Tang Xiu fired twice at the two men, blasting their heads.

"Shoo! Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!"

Lines of silhouettes quickly shot toward Tang Xiu.



Wolf Head glanced at the foreigners who were shot dead and exclaimed in admiration, “Boss, if you were to enter the army, you’d definitely become the most powerful marksman there.”

## Chapter 252: The Japanese

---

Tang Xiu faintly smiled, “You’re good enough. The enemies were very fierce, yet they were unable to fight back against you. Anyway, be prepared and take their guns! Wait outside for the upcoming attack.”

Wolf Head hesitated before saying, “Boss, it’s better to take the initiative to attack rather than passively remain on the defensive.”

Tang Xiu shook his head. He then took out his mobile and dialed Zhong Tiekui’s number, asking, “How much time do you need?”

"Ten minutes at the most."

"Good!"

Tang Xiu ended the call. A thick murderous glint shot out from his eyes as he said with a heavy tone, “The enemies will come rushing in in ten minutes. We’ll defend first, and then counterattack. I hate those whom intrude our land and kill our people. All the invading enemies must leave their lives here.”

Wolf Head said, “Boss, the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries have a total of more than 40 people in their ranks. They have been maintaining this number for more than a decade, whereas we’ve killed more than 20 of them. But you say there are more than 40 behind us... I suspect they’re another force, coming behind the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries.”

Shark also said with a heavy tone, “The people from the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries should have died. We killed 20 of them before, also killing the other 20 here. So the people outside should be from another force.”

Tang Xiu replied indifferently, “No matter who they are, as long as they dare to shoot at us first, we’ll claim their lives. Do remember my words, I’ve never have taken action against those who don’t attack me, but if they do, I’ll make them pay hundreds of times the price.”

Wolf Head licked his lips. He suddenly felt that his future life would be extraordinarily splendid if he followed Tang Xiu. He was used to his blades, shedding blood and dodging bullets. Having experienced six months of ordinary life made him uncomfortable and tortured. And tonight was his starting point to return to those splendid days.

At the periphery of the abandoned factory.

Ichiro Yamamoto took his binoculars and observed the situation inside the factory. Next to him was a fabulous body of a masked woman, exuding a chilling aura into the air. While behind them, were four masked men in black carrying Western knives, as if they were the Japanese Ninjas in TV series.

“Kuwako, your target is Tagore. I want him alive, he absolutely mustn’t die.” Said Ichiro Yamamoto as he retracted the binoculars and spoke in a deep tone.

The masked woman replied in a cold voice, "I'll commit suicide if I can't accomplish the task."

Ichiro Yamamoto shook his head, "You don't have to make such a promise! Do remember that you're the sole heir of the Yamamoto clan as well as the future Schoolmaster of the [Northstar One Blade School](#). Anyone can die, but you mustn't."

The masked woman was silent, yet the firmness in her eyes was extremely thick.

Ichiro Yamamoto secretly sighed. He waved and ordered, "Attack and kill those Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries and grab Yuan Zhengxuan."

Instantly, the silhouettes in the surrounding dim lights of the night silently infiltrated the interior of the factory. Their movements were very strange. There were three in the group moving in coordination as they soon arrived at the deepest part of the factory.

"Stop!"

Ichiro Yamamoto stopped his pace around tens of meters away from the factory and ordered the halt through his wireless earphone. In front of him, the dead bodies of two members of the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries had yet to become cold.

“They died from the wound on their necks and pierced hearts. They were killed by someone wielding a Mitsubishi army knife. Judging from the footprints on the ground, the number should be two or three; the other party is very strong. At the least, they are experts in assassination, because these two should be the sentry guards.” The masked woman spoke in a deep tone.

Ichiro Yamamoto said with a heavy tone, “Check the perimeter and see if there are other dead bodies of the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries.”

"Report, one dead body found."

"Report, two dead people here."

"Report, a dead body here."

Reports were transmitted to Ichiro Yamamoto's ears through his wireless earphone.

His face turned a bit unsightly. The people he sent to monitor the members of the Grim Reaper Scythe Mercenaries had given him a report saying that they had returned with only 20 remaining. He thought they had grabbed Yuan Zhengxuan and was about to seize the chance of them having suffered serious losses and then launching a surprise attack. He would then exterminate these people and become the final winner.

However, this sudden development made him at a loss and didn't

know how to react.

After half a minute of thinking deeply, Ichiro Yamamoto quickly hid behind a big tree and shouted, “Tagore, are you still alive? This is Ichiro Yamamoto!”

Inside the factory.

Tang Xiu furrowed his brows deeply as he heard the voice coming from outside. He turned to look at the others and asked, “Ichiro Yamamoto? Japanese?”

A cold glint flashed in Wolf Head’s eyes as he said with a heavy tone, “He’s the patriarch of the Yamamoto clan from Japan. A very distinguished and high standing figure. Also, he has another identity. He’s a Master in Northstar One Blade School.”

Tang Xiu had a bad opinion of the Japanese. The people from this country had a very strong and aggressive attitude; it could be said that it was the venereal disease of attitude. Throughout history, their nation bullied the weak and feared the strong. They had also invaded and encroached upon China once and left their bloody reign of terror on this land.

Tang Xiu took out his mobile and called Yuan Zhengxuan. He then learned from him that these Japanese were one of the forces that had tried to snatch the core data and information from him.

"Get ready to leave none of them behind!"

Tang Xiu ordered with a grim tone and expression.

At the outside, Ichiro Yamamoto's furrowed his brows deeply. There was no reply from the inside, giving him a bad premonition. However, he had an arrogant attitude, and the manpower he brought along this time were all Northstar One Blade experts. Therefore, after waiting for two minutes, he immediately issued the order to advance.

Puff! Puff! Puff! Puff!

Tongues of flame were shot out as four Northstar One Blade ninjas were directly killed by sniper rifles.

"Fuck! Be careful!"

Ichiro Yamamoto cursed. He took out his pistol from his waist holster and then continued to advance toward the factory.

The gunfight started.

Both sides were firing, but the situation remained at a stalemate. The people inside the factory didn't come out, yet the experts brought by Ichiro Yamamoto couldn't break through the net of fire and were unable to storm into the factory. Ichiro Yamamoto was angry at the moment as the two ninjas besides him suddenly fell to the ground, their heads pierced by bullets.

"What?"

Never in his dreams had he ever expected to there be still enemies behind. At the moment, fear sprouted up inside his heart. Before he could issue the retreat order, a ghost-like figure rushed out from the factory, the gunfire instantly becoming several times more intense.

“FUCK! Retreat quickly! Kill and blaze out our path with blood!”

Ichiro Yamamoto fell into a panic. He recalled the ancient saying of the Chinese that they were like turtles in a jar, completely stranded and trapped. He felt that they were the ones in such situation.

Shoo!

A strange silhouette appeared next to Ichiro Yamamoto. It was the masked woman. She said with a heavy tone, “Master, leave with me.”

Ichiro Yamamoto rejected the masked woman’s suggestion and scolded, “Idiot! Woman, you’re so timid and afraid of danger! Even if the enemy has us surrounded, we’ll blaze out our path with blood. Everyone! Move your ass to me. Move closer!”

"Stupid!"

The masked woman shouted as her figure disappeared instantly.



At this moment, Tang Xiu had already darted out from the factory. He fired three consecutive shots and killed three Japanese ninjas. As he looked at the enemy leader, he suddenly tightened his brows. In his spiritual sense, he found that those ninjas were all moving in a certain direction, whereas a vigorous figure was rushing to the side. Furthermore, the figure's speed was extremely fast. In addition, he hadn't seen anyone amongst cultivators apart from him who could have such a fast speed.

“Want to escape, eh?”

Tang Xiu's shadow flashed as he rushed toward the masked woman.

About ten seconds later, Tang Xiu had blocked the masked woman's path. The gun in his hand was also aimed at her. He pulled the trigger.

“Bang, bang, bang...”

The three bullets were blocked by a half-moon blade, causing sparks to flash everywhere. The masked woman moved with a strange footwork as her body flashed constantly. A moment after, she was already seven or eight meters away.

Tang Xiu's face turned more serious. The other party was able to catch the trajectory of the bullets and was even able to escape the moment she blocked them. This indicated that the strength of the other party was even more powerful than he had thought.

“You can never escape. If you don’t want to die, obediently surrender!”

Tang Xiu stuffed the pistol into his pocket and took out the Mitsubishi army knife, rushing toward the masked woman. His speed was almost twice faster than hers. Within just a few breaths, he blocked her path once again.

“Hai yah...”

The masked woman shouted loudly in a tender voice. The half-moon shaped blade in her hands created layers upon layers of blade shades as it tried to slice off and hack toward Tang Xiu. Her blade play was extremely uncanny as it attacked in a straight course and aimed at all vital points on Tang Xiu’s body.

“Clang, clang, clang...”

Tang Xiu evaded the attacks and continued using his dagger to block it. In a blink of an eye, he took back his dagger, seven or eight cracks appearing on it.

"Hmph!"

Tang Xiu circulated the star force throughout his body and stopped the blade slashed at him by the other party in an instant. His body dashed toward the masked woman and moved as though a shadow following her body, whereas the Mitsubishi army knife

in his hand blocked her attacks toward his vital points and then pierced her left shoulder. Tang Xiu's another hand formed a fist and exploded into the woman's abdomen severely.

"Bang..."

The masked woman's body flew upside down, blood spraying from her mouth as she then smashed to the ground heavily. Tang Xiu's body flashed and appeared in front of her, quickly sealing several of her acupoints in a very fast movement and picking her up.

"I told you, you can never escape."

Tang Xiu reached out toward the masked woman's mask, turning quite surprised immediately after. The masked woman had a breathtaking beauty, and there was also a fingernail-sized butterfly pattern between her eyebrows. The pattern coupled with her beauty caused her to look devilishly enchanting.

"Kill me!"

The masked woman spoke in an ice-cold voice. Even though she was shocked to find that she couldn't move her body, but she felt that falling to the enemy's hand was no different than death. At this point, what she most regretted was that the poison capsule in her teeth had already been forcefully taken out by her father a year ago.

Tang Xiu coldly smiled, “You wanna die? Even if you want to, wanting to die is very difficult after falling into my hands. I forgot to tell you, I’m also a doctor. Even if one were to bite their tongue in front of me, trying to commit suicide, cutting off their own throat or stabbing their own heart, I can still make them live for hours. So you can give up on killing yourself, else, I’ll make you taste the most vicious and painful torture in this world in the last hours of your life.”

The raws refer to Hokushin Ittō-ryū or Northstar One-Blade-School in English.

## Chapter 253: Tang Xiu's Intentions

---

The masked woman closed her eyes slowly. As confident as she was in her own strength, but Tang Xiu defeated her with very strange methods. She was really clueless whether what he said was true or false.

It was shameful! Shame was burning her heart like a fiery flame. To be captured and being a captive was the most painful thing she ever experienced in life.

At the other side, the fighting ended at a very rapid rate. Ichiro Yamamoto was shot dead and more than 40 Japanese ninjas lost their ability to fight back. Apart from four or five injured amongst them, the rest were all killed, whereas Tang Xiu's subordinates, except for two wounded, all came out unscathed.

"How should we deal with them, Boss?"

Upon seeing Tang Xiu's arrival, Zhong Tiekui's eyes swept over toward Kuwako's body on his shoulder before asking with a deep tone.

Tang Xiu replied with an indifferent expression, "Kill them all!"

"Understood!" Zhong Tiekui replied in a high tone.

As he was about to kill the assassins...

"Wait!"

Kuwako, who had her eyes closed, suddenly opened her eyes and cried out.

Tang Xiu motioned Zhong Tiekui and threw her to the ground as he then spoke lightly, "What do you want to say?"

Kuwako glared at Tang Xiu and asked with a sinking tone, "Who are you people?"

"You don't need to know who we are. You only need to know that we're your enemy. Yuan Zhengxuan is my friend. You wanted to deal with him, so you will naturally become my enemy."

Kuwako nodded. Her gaze swept over the four or five severely wounded ninjas. After thinking for a few seconds, she looked at Tang Xiu again and said, "I'll agree to one of your conditions, but you have to let them go."

Tang Xiu sneered, "Conditions? What can you give me?"

"You have two options, for which you can choose one. Firstly, I can ransom them. Secondly, I'll become your slave for three years if you let them go."

Ransom money or becoming a slave?

Tang Xiu replied with an inconceivable expression, “I can understand ransom money as you should be a Yamamoto clan member. These ninjas should be from the Northstar One Blade School. But, I’ve never heard of becoming a slave nowadays.”

Wolf Head suddenly frowned as he quickly came to Tang Xiu’s side and spoke, “Boss, I know about the Northstar One Blade School. This school has a very unusual custom and each and every person there is very ruthless, yet they also have an iron law that, if the successor of the Schoolmaster of the Northstar One Blade School were to fall into the hands of the enemy, they agree to become their enemy’s slave for three years in order to live. But three years later, the opposite party must return them. Otherwise, the Northstar One Blade School will put everything on the stake to get revenge on the opposite party even if their school face destruction.”

“This Northstar One Blade School is kind of strange, aren’t they?” replied Tang Xiu with astonishment.

Wolf Head forced a smile, “It’s the sick mentality of the Japanese, I think. How could ordinary people be able to understand them! I think that since we’ve killed so many people from their side, it’s best to just kill them all! Lest we leave future troubles behind!”

Tang Xiu thought for a moment before looking at Kuwako and saying, “How much ransom money will your Yamamoto clan and the Northstar One Blade School be willing to pay?”

Kuwako replied, “My life is worth 300 million USD, whereas

their lives are worth 50 million USD. The five of them altogether would be 250 million USD. So the total ransom money is 550 million USD.”

550 million USD? More than 3 billion RMB?

Tang Xiu’s eyes flickered as he looked at Kuwako with a hard-to-believe expression. Although he was also rich and had total assets of more than 3 billion RMB, if he could get the money, he would be able to directly solve his financial crisis at present.

“Pa...”

Tang Xiu pulled out a cigarette from his pocket. The team leader quickly took his lighter to help him ignite it. After deeply inhaling, he then said slowly, “You’re the heir of the Yamamoto clan and also the future Schoolmaster of Northstar One Blade School?”

“That’s right,” answered Kuwako.

“Alright, how about we change the condition?” asked Tang Xiu laughed.

“I’ll only accept one of these two conditions. Anything else, you’d better kill us now!” Kuwako frowned and replied.

“Just listen to my words first and then decide whether you’ll comply or not,” said Tang Xiu.



Kuwako didn't speak.

Tang Xiu then continued, "Be my subordinate. Later on, after you become my subordinate, this Tang Xiu will never limit your freedom and will also let you go back to Japan. However, you must carry out my orders in the future."

"Dream on!" replied Kuwako in a cold voice.

Tang Xiu said indifferently, "I'm not asking you to be my subordinate in vain, I'll give you benefits. The benefits are something that countless of people can never imagine even in their dreams."

Kuwako shook her head, "I don't lack anything. Give up thinking of buying me!"

Tang Xiu motioned the other people around them and they immediately scattered. After there was only Kuwako and him, Tang Xiu then slowly asked, "What do you think about my strength?"

Kuwako's pupil shrunk as she nodded, "You're very strong. Even my Schoolmaster perhaps won't be more powerful than you."

"I can make your strength to surge up greatly if you become my subordinate. I guarantee that if you practice according to my methods for three years at the most, your strength will soar by

tenfold,” said Tang Xiu.

“Hmph.” Kuwako sneered, “Is your strength even ten times stronger than mine? Impossible.”

“You’re mistaken. My ability is not limited to just straight up killing. If you didn’t come that fast and gave me enough time to arrange a good formation array, I dare say I’d be able to wipe out all those 40 plus people of yours within half a minute.”

“You know about formation arrays?” Kuwako was overwhelmed with shock as she asked with a flabbergasted expression.

“I know a lot of things, formation array is just only one of them. I’ll offer you again. If you can completely pledge your allegiance to me, I can help you in secret so it will be easier for you to become the head of the Yamamoto clan as well as the Schoolmaster of the Northstar One Blade School. I can even help you develop these two powers to become the most powerful forces in Japan.”

Kuwako stared at Tang Xiu and asked with a deep tone, “Who are you in the end?”

“If you want to know my identity, you have to agree to my conditions. After you go back, you can investigate about me slowly. But the premise is that you are alive and able to go back,” said Tang Xiu indifferently.

“There’s nothing that can make me believe you,” said Kuwako

whilst shaking her head.

Tang Xiu pointed at Kuwako and said, “Do you think I need to lie to you?”

Kuwako was silent. She wasn't repugnant of submitting herself to a powerful expert, but she always felt that if she decided it now, it would be too hasty and careless. After half a minute of pondering, she then asked slowly, “Are you not afraid of me betraying today's oath after I leave?”

“Why should I? You won't dare violate it,” replied Tang Xiu with a smile.

“From where this confidence of yours come from?” replied Kuwako with a sneer.

Tang Xiu said indifferently, “So long as you do as I say, I guarantee that you'll believe it!”

“Do what?” asked Kuwako.

Tang Xiu grabbed her palm and used the Mitsubishi army knife to make a bloody scar. Then, he also bit his finger and dropped a drop of his blood on her palm. He then said with a deep tone, “Don't reject. Be quiet and don't move. Receive the sensation that will enter your body, you'll find out the benefits you're about to get later.”

Kuwako instinctively wanted to reject it, yet, upon hearing Tang Xiu's words, she thought that Tang Xiu was about to scam her. In order to find out about what Tang Xiu would do, she then slowly relaxed.

Tang Xiu's finger pressed the wound on Kuwako's palm. Along with the control of his mind, the drop of blood on her palm gradually seeped into her body and slowly moved through her blood vessels and fused inside her heart.

“Soul Ruling Spell!”

Tang Xiu's fingers pinched a series of imprints on Kuwako's palm as he tapped the star force condensation at the tip of his finger on Kuwako's palm, controlling it to flow into her heart along with her blood vessels, entering her heart and fusing with the drop of his blood therein.

“Boom...”

At present, Kuwako felt that there was only darkness in front of her. A sweet taste invaded her throat as she spurted out a mouthful of blood. If Tang Xiu didn't move to the side to avoid it, the blood would've sprayed onto his body.

Tang Xiu panted heavily in secret. The requirement for the Soul Ruling Spell was extremely harsh. If the other party had the thought to repel it, he would simply be unable to do it with his current cultivation base. Fortunately, Kuwako didn't repel it and relaxed her mind entirely.

Standing in the dark, he was already able to feel Kuwako's body condition. He was sure that if he wanted her to die, he could make her heart explode if he willed it.

"Y-You... what did you do to me?" Kuwako erased the blood on the corner of her mouth, looking at Tang Xiu with an aghast expression.

Tang Xiu said indifferently, "It's a Soul Ruling Spell. It rules over your life. If you dare to betray my orders and intentions, as long as I will it, your heart will explode and you'll die a tragic death directly."

"What?"

She also had the feeling of her life force being controlled by another. She now realized that she could even "see" the situation inside her own body. She could even see the bloody archaic runes above her heart that was more bright and colorful than her own heart.

"My body!"

Kuwako slowly felt the unusualness and the abnormality of her body. Even though she couldn't move at present, she could clearly feel that an amazing and mysterious power was bursting out from the blood. A layer of glimmering luster slowly gushed out from the blood vessels and was integrated into her internal organs, fusing into her muscles and tendons, finally settling in the bones.

Her constitution was getting stronger.

Tang Xiu said indifferently, “You can feel it now? Like I told you, I will give benefits if you become my subordinate. Likewise, the benefits you can have later are far more than these. Say the oath and pledge your allegiance to me and I’ll teach you one cultivation technique. Later on, if you cultivate diligently, your strength will certainly soar for more than tenfold within three years.”

Kuwako swallowed her saliva desperately. She looked at Tang Xiu and asked, “Are you a Sorcerer? And you just cast a black magic on me?”

“A sorcerer?” Tang Xiu replied with a disdainful expression and continued, “People who call themselves sorcerers are nothing but trivial conmen! If I continue cultivating for a few more years, my cultivation will breakthrough substantially, even the most powerful sorcerer on Earth will be no more than the tip of my finger.”

Kuwako’s heart throbbed and palpitated faster.

She clenched her teeth and then said with a heavy tone, “Please give me back my ability to move.”

Tang Xiu stretched his hand to relieve the seals on Kuwako’s acupoints and didn’t even to put his guard up, as he didn’t believe that Kuwako thought to move against him this fast.

Kuwako moved her body up and down. Following that, she then knelt in front of Tang Xiu with her right fist on top of her left chest, whereas her left hand made a special hand seal and vowed, “I, Kuwako Yamamoto, swear an oath to serve the man in front of me as my Master starting from today. His command is my wish, and I shall never betray him. If I were to violate this vow, let me be forever imprisoned in the thousand cold pools.”

## Chapter 254: Smooth Solution

---

Seeing Kuwako's oath to the end, Tang Xiu then said serenely, "Get up!"

Kuwako stood up and asked, "Master, are you really able to make me strong?"

"If, in the future, your way of handling my matters and your performance pleases me, I'll make you very powerful, to the extent that you've never dreamed of. Don't doubt my capability nor question my words. I might be unable to accomplish it now, but you will see for yourself later," said Tang Xiu.

Kuwako nodded and suddenly asked, "Master, you..."

Tang Xiu interrupted her and spoke with a deep tone, "Don't call me Master, just call me Boss."

"Understood!" Kuwako answered immediately.

"Alright. Now tell me what you wanted to say," said Tang Xiu

Kuwako asked, "Boss, can you also use the controlling arts on those five? I think they also have heard the contents of our conversation. I'm afraid..."

"I'll kill them," said Tang Xiu.



Shaking her head, Kuwako said, “They are the experts that have been painstakingly nurtured by my school. It would be a pity if they were killed. If you can control them and let them follow my commands later, I’ll have trusted subordinates.”

Tang Xiu shook his head, “Perhaps they are experts in your eyes, but they are just trash to me. They’re not worth the consuming of my mental power to control them. However, I’ll impart my Soul Ruling Spell to you, so you can cast it on them.”

“I can learn it?” Kuwako quickly asked.

“You can’t learn it for now, but after you cultivate and have inner qi inside your body and then turn it into True Essence, you can cast this Soul Ruling Spell fully. Alright, I’ll impart to you the cultivation technique now,” replied Tang Xiu.

Having said that, Tang Xiu arbitrarily taught Kuwako a set of a very ordinary immortal cultivation technique from the Immortal World. Two hours later, Kuwako had been able to grasp it completely. She was even able to convert the True Qi into True Essence in her first try. Although the amount of True Qi she converted was less than 1%, she clearly felt herself becoming stronger.

“Your aptitude is quite good and you’re still young. If you cultivate well, you’ll have limitless achievements in the future,” said Tang Xiu calmly.

A pleasantly surprised expression suffused inside Kuwako's eyes. Even though she was a bit uncomfortable of becoming Tang Xiu's subordinate all of a sudden, but the benefits she obtained balanced the uncomfortable feeling inside her heart.

"Thanks a lot, Boss!"

Tang Xiu waved his hand and also imparted the Soul Ruling incantation to her, saying, "What purpose did you have in coming to China this time? Was it in order to rob the scientific and technological information from Yuan Zhengxuan?"

Kuwako nodded, "Recently, Yuan Zhengxuan's laboratory developed a biochemical bacterium. If these biochemical bacteria are used as weapons, it will have a very powerful effect. A few years ago, a professor from his laboratory was bought by an American arms dealer, of whom he got the information from. Later on, many forces in various countries in the world also learned about this news. Therefore, we came to China in an attempt to obtain the core data and information about the biochemical bacterium from Yuan Zhengxuan."

Tang Xiu instantly understood, "Alright, I got it. Now, go and subdue those ninjas. Then take them and leave China! As for robbing the biochemical bacteria as well as its research and developments into weapons, keep out of it and don't participate in this business again in the future. Also, if you encounter any problems after you go back, contact me as fast as possible. If I can help you, I'll send some people to assist you."

"Understood!" nodded Kuwako.

Under Tang Xiu's instruction, the five ninjas were taken to the factory by Kuwako. Tang Xiu then stood outside the factory as he saw Yuan Zhengxuan rushing toward him in a hurry.

"Tang Xiu, I already learned about the situation here. Thank you. I'm really thankful. If it wasn't for you, I'm afraid that Little Ling and I would have died. And perhaps, even... even the core data and information my company has would also have been seized by them." Yuan Zhengxuan said with gratitude all over his face.

Tang Xiu waved his hand and said, "It's alright. This is what I should do. In fact, I'm the one who made a mistake here if I must say. I did promise you to deliver the core information, but since I was occupied by many things, I forgot about it. I have yet to carry out my promise."

As Yuan Zhengxuan heard it, he immediately laughed, "It's alright. As long as this core information can be preserved, I feel relieved. I also have made up my mind after this incident. Even though I can't get the money, I'll end the experiment thoroughly. I'll directly sell all the research materials that can be used as weapon to the military and I'll change my business orientation to another fields."

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes and asked, "Uncle Yuan, might I ask you how much this biochemical bacteria developed in your laboratory can sell for?"

Yuan Zhengxuan stared blankly for a moment. His face changed

immediately and asked, “How do you know it’s a biochemical bacterium?”

Tang Xiu pointed to the factory building and said, “That woman is my subordinate now.”

Yuan Zhengxuan suddenly realized. A forced and bitter smile hung over his face as he said, “It’s actually not worth much, it should be around... 1 billion USD.”

Tang Xiu’s face changed a bit. He then nodded and said, “Well, it’s indeed very valuable. Alright. I’ve done everything I could, so I’ll leave the collateral and aftermath to you!”

Yuan Zhengxuan nodded, “My men have already sent the dead bodies to the crematorium; I’ve a contact there. I’ll also call some people to clean this place up. In short, however, I owe you a great favor; I’ll bear this in my heart. If you need anything in the future, feel free to call me.”

Tang Xiu nodded slowly. Suddenly, his face changed slightly as he recalled something. He then immediately forced out a smile and said, “Uncle Yuan, now that I recall, I do have one matter that needs your help.”

Puzzled, Yuan Zhengxuan asked, “What is it?”

“Do you know someone at the Bureau of Transportation, Uncle Yuan?” asked Tang Xiu.

“I do! The Chief of the Bureau of Transportation is my buddy. I also have some contacts in the traffic police division,” said Yuan Zhengxuan.

Tang Xiu said reluctantly, “When I received your call, I was in Qinghe county at my ancestral home. Because I tried to rush here earlier and as fast as I could, I was speeding all the way here, and I just got my driver license. The most important thing is that I was truly speeding very fast. Even if I didn’t reach 200 km/h, it shouldn’t be far from that. So as to avoid trouble, I parked my Land Rover in a remote urban area.”

Warmness filled Yuan Zhengxuan’s. He laughed loudly, “Tang Xiu, this is just a trivial matter. Leave it to me! I guarantee that nothing will implicate you when you’re driving your car later. Tell me the address and I’ll send someone to pick up the car tomorrow and send it to you.”

Just as Tang Xiu said his thanks, he looked at Yuan Chuling who was somewhat in a daze at Yuan Zhengxuan’s side. He punched his chest gently and laughed, “How was it? Were you scared shitless? You didn’t expect that I’d kill the enemies by myself, did you?”

Yuan Chuling came back to his senses, the complicated expression suffusing his eyes slowly disappearing as it was then replaced by admiration and worship as he looked at Tang Xiu and cried out, “Eldest Brother, you gotta teach me your Kung Fu! I must be as good and powerful as you!”

Tang Xiu laughed involuntarily, “If you can swallow the bitterness and the pain, I can let others teach you, but it seems that you must go to college. So just enjoy your college life well!”

Yuan Chuling shook his head, “Even if I go to College, I can still practice martial arts. So let’s quickly decide it. I’ll be following you to practice martial arts later.”

Tang Xiu smiled faintly, “Got no problems with that. But before I teach you martial arts, you gotta get up at 5:30 AM every morning, squat for an hour and run 10 kilometers. Then, you also have to run 10 kilometers in the evening. If you can persist until September the 1st, I’ll teach you martial arts then.”

"For real?" Yuan Chuling’s fighting spirit soared.

Tang Xiu looked at his round stomach as he laughed involuntarily and said, “Real!”

Immediately after, he turned toward Yuan Zhengxuan and said, “Uncle Yuan, I’ll have to trouble you to deal with the aftermath. We’ll leave first! Please do contact me if you need anything!”

“Alright!” Yuan Zhengxuan nodded.

Tang Xiu didn’t bid farewell to Kuwako Yamamoto, instead, he left with Zhong Tiekui and Wolf Head, altogether 32 people quickly leaving the abandoned factory.

Since Wolf Head and the other eleven retired special forces had promised to follow him, he had let them go their own ways. And, as they had completed his test, Tang Xiu was thinking what to do with them. Suddenly, his complexion flickered as a plan sprouted inside his head.

“Wolf Head, you guys did a good job this time. It can be said that you got my recognition. So I’m going to let you spend a few days freely in Star City first. Wait there until I handle some issues here, and then I’ll take you to the island I bought in the Pacific Ocean. After that, you will stay there,” said Tang Xiu slowly.

The twelve men, including Wolf Head, looked at each other and nodded in unison.

Tang Xiu then looked at Zhong Tiekui as he smiled, “Tonight all of you have done a good job; I saw your abilities. Alright, this will conclude everything for this matter. You’re all dismissed!”

“Understood!”

It was 4:00 AM.

Tang Xiu returned to South Gate Town. He hurried back to Star City overnight and didn’t tell this matter to his mother. Therefore, he decided not to return to Qinghe County for the time being. The matters there should almost be solved, and he wanted to handle some issues in Star City before going to Jingmen Island and then rushing to see the island he bought.

At the second floor of the villa.

Tang Xiu gently opened the door to Gu Yin's room. As he saw her soundly sleeping inside, he nodded with satisfaction. He then went to his own room, pushing its door and turned on the lights conveniently.

“Huh...” Tang Xiu's face was solidified as a dull expression filled his eyes.

On his bed laid a woman wearing only underwear on her fabulous body. The woman's sleeping position was very attractive. Delicate and exquisite contours, along with bewitching and seductive vibes. Despite his perfect self-control, Tang Xiu couldn't help but have his imagination running wild at this very moment.

“There are so many rooms downstairs and Kang Xia is actually sleeping in my room. This woman... could it be that she isn't afraid that I would come back suddenly and then do something untoward to her?”

Tang Xiu shook his head and was about to turn off the lights, going to the guest room. But on the bed, Kang Xia suddenly moved and opened her eyes.

“Who is it?”

Kang Xia, who had good alertness, suddenly grabbed the cool summer quilt to cover up her body and then jumped from the bed.



## Chapter 255: The Charm of Romance

---

Looking at Kang Xia's reaction, Tang Xiu was at a loss whether to cry or laugh. The vigilance in Kang Xia's eyes was like she was looking at a pervert.

“Have you woken up?”

After clearly seeing that it was Tang Xiu, only then Kang Xia's vigilance disappeared slowly, replaced by an awkward and embarrassed expression, making her blush.

“B-Boss, you... you're back!”

Tang Xiu laughed, “Yeah, I just came back and wanted to rest, but I didn't expect...”

The embarrassed expression on Kang Xia's face was getting thicker. She knew what Tang Xiu would say. Yet, however, she was here in his room. Last night, after she accompanied Gu Yin to sleep, she had a sudden impulse to go to Tang Xiu's room. She only intended to play in his room for a while as she later stumbled with drowsiness and fell asleep there.

More importantly, she only put on underwear without covering herself with a quilt. Didn't this mean that he had already seen almost everything?

Looking at her expression, Tang Xiu only smiled, “It's alright.

Since you feel more comfortable sleeping in my room, sleep here tonight! I'll go sleep in the guest room."

Having said that, he then turned around to leave.

Kang Xia was surprised for a moment and promptly called out, "Boss, I'll return to the guest room. Y-You... you rest here!"

She immediately ran off the bed, putting her slippers and dashing to the door. Yet, when she ran to the door, only then did she realize that she also threw the thin quilt that covered her body in Tang Xiu's room. She wanted to take the blanket back, but because she was only wearing underwear, for a moment, her usually smart and intelligent self was unexpectedly caught at a complete loss, embarrassed.

Tang Xiu smiled as he shook his head and said, "Just sleep here!"

Leaving his bedroom, Tang Xiu picked one of the guest rooms. There were bloodstains on his clothes, and though it was not very obvious, he couldn't wear it anymore. After going to the bathroom and taking a bath, he suddenly realized that he didn't bring a change of underwear. Without any other choice, he walked out of the room stark naked, sit on the bed and covered himself with a blanket, and then dialed Kang Xia's number whilst half-leaning on the bed.

"Yes, Boss?"

In the master bedroom on the second floor, Kang Xia had put on pajamas as she sat on the bed, her imagination running wild. As she heard her mobile ringing, she took it and saw that it was a call from Tang Xiu. A slight blush covered her face, but she still quickly answered it.

“Erm... I forgot to get clean underwear and clothes. Can you send them over? I’m on the first floor,” said Tang Xiu.

"Alright!" replied Kang Xia.

Two minutes later, she knocked on the guest room’s door and heard Tang Xiu’s voice, permitting her inside. She opened the door cautiously and saw Tang Xiu’s naked upper body as he sat in the bed head position. With a slight blush on her face, she said, “Boss, your clothes.”

Tang Xiu pointed the end of the bed and said, “Put them there!”

Kang Xia quickly put the clothes on the end of the bed, but a strange thought popped inside her mind, “He obviously had just finished bathing and had yet to change clothes and underwear. Then... he’s stark naked now?”

Tang Xiu’s naked appearance involuntarily popped out inside Kang Xia’s mind. For a moment, her face turned hotter, blushing as though a sunset glow crawling up on her face.

Looking at the dazed expression on Kang Xia’s face, Tang Xiu

secretly sighed inside. At the moment, Kang Xia looked especially attractive to him. After all, her thin pajamas were basically unable to cover her perfect delicate body. Even the color of her underwear could be seen clearly under the bright lights.

He wasn't a wicked and perverted man, yet his body was young and he was in the prime of his youthfulness. It was very easy to fall into impulsiveness. However, he couldn't give Kang Xia any responsibilities, so he must restrain himself.

“Is there anything else?”

After having been silent for more than ten seconds, Tang Xiu slowly asked.

"Huh?" Kang Xia came back to her right mind. She shook her head with a shy expression. There was panicked look in her eyes as she replied, “Uh, no, nothing. I'm fine.”

Tang Xiu said with a laugh, “If there's nothing, go back and rest! Dawn soon will come, and if you don't have a good sleep, you won't be spirited in work tomorrow.”

Work?

As she heard Tang Xiu mentioning this word, her heart was as though poured by a bucket of cold water. Suddenly, a bad mood filled her, feeling as though she wasn't really attractive enough for Tang Xiu, not able to tempt him. Had it been other men seeing her

with only pajamas on her body and sitting on their beds, perhaps they would be already unable to endure it, throwing themselves at her. But Tang Xiu...

He simply turned a blind eye!

Anger was breeding fast inside Kang Xia's heart as she thought about it. Suddenly, she looked up at Tang Xiu and asked, "Anyway, am I really that unattractive to you, just an employee that can make money for you?"

For a moment, Tang Xiu stared blankly. As low as his emotional intelligence was, he really didn't understand why Kang Xia suddenly asked him this question. After staying silent for a moment, he then said indifferently, "For any men, you have a strong attraction and allure. As for me, I don't want to be trapped within the sentiment of love. So I can't give any you responsibilities. Hence, apart from regarding you as my employee, I really don't know how to regard you otherwise."

"What did you say?" Kang Xia's beautiful eyes stared wide as she looked at Tang Xiu.

He... does he really think of her as only his own staff? A money-making tool for him?

Tang Xiu said with all seriousness, "Responsibility is not something I can give to any women whatsoever. It's not like I'm inconstant in love nor such relationships, rather, I don't want to be hard-pressed with the feeling. I admit that you're an

extraordinary, perfect woman, yet I can only regard you as my subordinate.”

Kang Xia was quite irritated upon hearing Tang Xiu’s argument. Anger and a feeling of loss mixed in her heart at the same time, causing her to turn incensed. Under Tang Xiu’s gazing eyes, she gritted her teeth, taking off her pajamas as she stood in front of him and said, “If-what if I don’t want you to be held responsible for me?”

"You....."

Tang Xiu was at a complete loss, looking awkward.

Coldly watching him, Kang Xia lifted her legs onto the bed and straightly uncovered the quilt on her body. Just as she looked at Tang Xiu’s stark naked body, her expression dazed for a moment, yet she still pressed herself onto him directly.

Tang Xiu’s body turned stiff. He felt Kang Xia’s lips kissing his chest as a sudden stream of heat flowed from the place under his abdomen. Facing such temptation, all the idealistic thoughts inside his mind sunk as he only pondered for a few seconds before standing up and pressing his body to hers.

“It hurts...”

Along with tender and delicate cries, the bedroom suddenly plunged into a charming and romantic atmosphere.

An hour later, Tang Xiu's sweat dripped as Kang Xia's body was all tired and devoid of strength. Tang Xiu felt helpless, yet he had done it. But he didn't regret it. He might be unable to give any responsibility to her, but he could give her atonement through other means, such as giving her money, or cultivation resources...

"It's your first time, isn't it?" asked Tang Xiu suddenly.

"Hmm!"

Lying down under Tang Xiu, Kang Xiu nodded silently.

"You don't regret it?" asked Tang Xiu.

Kang Xia's heart was struck down with all kinds of emotions. The feeling was so complicated that it was hard for her to describe it. She didn't know how to answer Tang Xiu's question.

Did she regret it?

If truth be told, she did, a little! Yet, things had already gotten to this point and she could only choose to accept what happened. She constantly consoled herself that it was only a one-night stand with Tang Xiu, nothing ever happening after dawn.

Tang Xiu no longer asked. He knew nothing about women's thoughts and way of thinking. Moreover he didn't want to delve

into the bottom of it seriously. What was done had already been done, and it was unnecessary to ask about regret again.

Regardless of Kang Xia's reluctance, Tang Xiu hugged and picked her up, bringing her to the bathroom. He cleaned her body and then put her back on the bed. After he covered her with the blanket, Tang Xiu put on his clothes and straightly left the room.

Inside the room, it was filled with a deadly stillness!

Kang Xia could hear her own heartbeat. She could feel a pleasurable feeling as well as a lingering pain after what had happened. In the truest sense, a woman's first time was a kind of mesmerizing experience, for the ecstatic emotion was as though the taste of flying high in the clouds. It made her cheek feel hot.

"His disposition... it seems like, he isn't totally irresponsible?"

Imaginations ran wild inside her mind as she gradually fell asleep.

Tang Xiu returned back to his room. He immediately went to bed. He might have an excellent physique, but after fighting and working in bed for an hour, he almost couldn't bear it anymore.

Shortly before noon.

Tang Xiu was awakened by his mobile's ringtone. As he took his mobile and looked at it, finding that it was a call from his mother.



He took the call and said with a smile, “Hi, Mom. Something happened last night, so I drove back to Star City. I didn’t tell you because it was late night.”

Su Lingyun’s voice came, “Indeed. I was wondering why you hadn’t gotten up, so I went to your room and you weren’t there, even your car wasn’t in front of the house. Anyways, when will you come back, Xiu’er?”

“I won’t go back there for a while, Mom. Anyway, I’ll call Su Ben and Su Quan to come to Star City since I promised them a job. Also, I might be out of town not long from now and I don’t know when I’ll be back. But please don’t worry. I’ll be back before school starts,” said Tang Xiu

Su Lingyun was surprised, “Out of town? Are you going traveling or is it a business trip?”

“It’s kind of a business trip. But I also plan to go out and play. Ah, right. I’ll also take Yinyin with me, so you don’t need to worry about her,” said Tang Xiu.

Su Lingyun laughed, “Alright. If there’s anything, call me. I’ll be taking care of your grandmother for a few days more before going back to Star City. That’s right, Su Xiangfei is also coming back.”

Tang Xiu’s face changed as a chilling light burst out from his eyes. Su Xiangfei never went back to school after his family had an accident nor did he participate in the CET. Tang Xiu also knew that something happened with the Su family. After their assets were

confiscated, Su Xiangfei and Su Yanning's traces disappeared.

And now, he was back to their hometown in Qinghe County. What was he going to do?

“Mom, did that guy trouble you?”

“No. He seems to have changed into a different person. He's very sensible and thoughtful now. Not even half a word did he mention about what you did to his family. Don't you worry, Xiu'er! Although Xiangfei was spoiled by his parents, his nature is good. As long as he thoroughly repents for his mistakes and becomes a better person, it's no problem for me. Besides, he's my own nephew, after all,” said Su Lingyun.

Tang Xiu said, “Mom, I know he's your nephew. But the only person in this world who will never hurt you, is me! We mustn't loose our guard as we don't know people's hearts, so you must pay attention to your safety. How about I help you find two bodyguards later to protect your safety. And please don't object this, Mom. Later on, when I run my business, I might offend some people. The business world is no different than a battlefield, and you're my biggest weakness. I want to guarantee your safety so I can do my things without worries.”

# Chapter 256: Making a Clean Break with the Past

---

Su Lingyun said, “Xiu’er, I understand your concern and I agree with you. But I believe that Xiangfei’s basic nature isn’t absolutely bad. Even your uncle... Su Shangwen lost his basic nature because of money. He used to be a good person before, very kind, and used to take care of the family. He also really helped us a lot all these years living in Star City. So, Xiu’er, you have to find a way to save him if he repent in prison.”

“Alright, Mom!” Tang Xiu complied.

At Qinghe County, Su Village.

Su Xiangfei quietly leaned on the courtyard wall whilst smoking a cigarette. He clearly heard the conversation between Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu.

He felt hatred! Yet, he didn’t know for whom he should point his hatred to.

He experienced too many things in these couple of months. Despite considering himself very strong in bearing pressure, yet hid in the home of his sister’s classmate for many days. Smoking and drinking every day, living a life that was even worse than death.

Tang Xiu was was the one he wanted to hate because he knew

that Tang Xiu was the one who harmed his family. However, as he pondered and recalled everything that had happened, he suddenly realized that his family was indeed the one that pretty much bullied his aunt and cousin using their riches and powerful status.

As he recalled about that time, if not for the police finding that evidence, it would've been Tang Xiu going to jail instead of his parents.

Two lines of tears fell down from Su Xiangfei's eyes as he heard his aunt's words. Prior to this, he used to think that his aunt was a very weak person and easy to bully. He used to watch his parents bully her, yet he acted as though he was watching a drama play. But now, after he heard his aunt, all sort of mixed feelings filled his heart.

“Pa...”

He threw the cigarette butt to the ground and fiercely extinguished it with his tiptoe. He then turned around and went straight to Su Lingyun and knelt.

“Auntie, I'm really sorry.”

Su Lingyun was shocked by Su Xiangfei's action. She looked at him with disbelief as she opened her mouth but not knowing what to say. She lifted her phone but didn't end the call, whereas her son at the other end of the phone was also silent.

After a long period of time, Su Lingyun sobered up from her daze. She quickly propped Su Xiangfei up as she sighed and said sincerely and earnestly, “Xiangfei, no matter how bad our discords, we’re relatives, after all; family members. Xiu’er was only afraid of me being bullied. You’re older than him so you should be able to understand more about this, so don’t blame him.”

Su Xiangfei said bitterly, “Auntie, I don’t blame him. Just like what you just said, it was because my father’s mind was muddled by wealth, whereas I was also too full of myself. I did frame him initially. If it wasn’t discovered, perhaps he would be the one in jail now, not my parents. So I don’t hate him.”

A happy expression was revealed on Su Lingyun’s face. She gently patted his shoulder and said, “Xiangfei. It’s good that you don’t hate him. Don’t you worry though! Xiu’er is someone who lives up to his word. He said to your grandmother that after two years, he will certainly get your father out of jail.”

Su Xiangfei nodded heavily and said, “Auntie, the reason I came to my senses and woke up is actually because of father. When he tried to commit suicide before being arrested, he was hospitalized and I heard him shouting your name in his coma, apologizing to you. At that moment I knew that father regretted what he did to you.”

Sparkling and translucent tears overflowed from Su Lingyun’s eyes. For her blood brother, if he could wake up and treat her as a relative and then become a good person, even if she had to pay a huge price, she was willing.

“Xiangfei, stay with your grandma at home. Wait for a few days, and then we’ll go back to Star City together to see your father!”

"Alright, Auntie!" Su Xiangfei nodded heavily.

However, the trace of smile that had just appeared on his face quickly dissipated. After a moment’s hesitation, he said in a low voice, “Auntie, if my older sister can’t think this through and continue hating you and Tang Xiu, please don’t blame her. She...”

Su Lingyun shook her head as she sighed, “I can understand if she hates me and Tang Xiu. Don’t worry. I’m, after all, her aunt. I’ll talk to her well when I see her.”

“She left for Shanghai!” said Su Xiangfei.

“What will she do there?” asked Su Lingyun with a puzzled expression.

“She said that she would live with her classmate, find a job and settle there,” said Su Xiangfei.

Su Lingyun was silent for a moment. Then, she nodded and said slowly, “Your cousin will also go study in Shanghai soon. After he has settled there, I’ll ask him to find your sister.”

Su Xiangfei was silent for a moment before he nodded and slowly

replied, "Thank you, auntie. Please tell my cousin that I indeed behaved badly before."

At this time, Tang Xiu's voice came through the phone, "Mom, please pass cell phone to Xiangfei."

As Su Lingyun heard it, she quickly handed her mobile to Su Xiangfei, saying, "Your cousin wants to talk to you!"

A complex expression was revealed on Su Xiangfei's face. He took the phone but didn't speak.

Then, Tang Xiu's voice was transmitted, "Xiangfei, I don't care whether you're truly sincere in repenting or faking it. Do remember, if you dare to do something that hurts my mother, I'll make you experience the most miserable taste in this world. But, if you're truly able to turn a new leaf in life and kindly treat our relatives, I can promise to give you a rapid progress in your life."

Su Xiangfei replied in a bitter tone, "Having a rapid progress in life? I'm afraid that I'd be just like my father, losing myself after progressing rapidly. Cousin... Tang Xiu, I'd rather write off everything that happened before. Auntie has treated me kindly, so I won't let her down. Also, I'll be taking out my time to come back, staying with grandma and looking after her."

"Remember your own words," said Tang Xiu.

Having said that, Tang Xiu hung up the phone directly.

He wasn't someone who was over suspicious of anyone, yet he still couldn't trust Su Xiangfei fully. Therefore, after thinking for a moment, he dialed the number Kuwako Kitamiya had given him.

"Kuwako Kitamiya speaking, may I ask who is this?"

"It's me!"

"You're... Boss?"

"Yes!"

Kuwako Kitamiya's tone immediately turned more respectful as she asked, "Do you have any command for me, Boss?"

"Have you returned to Japan?" asked Tang Xiu.

Kuwako Kitamiya shook her head and said, "Not yet, Boss. Their injuries are serious. We are still somewhere in Star City. We're preparing to go back in two days."

"Are there any female ninjas in your Northstar One Blade School? Ones that are loyal to you?" asked Tang Xiu.

Kuwako Kitamiya replied confidently, "I have four attendants who have accepted severe training from Northstar One Blade School. But I didn't bring them along with me this time. Also, I'll



use the Soul Ruling Spell on them when I go back, to make them more loyal.”

“Do they speak Mandarin?” asked Tang Xiu.

“Yes! They are fluent in Japanese, Mandarin, English, French, and German,” said Kuwako Kitamiya respectfully.

Tang Xiu said, “In that case, after you use the Soul Ruling Spell, send two of them to Star City to protect my mother secretly. I’ll send my mother’s information to you later.”

“Understood!” Kuwako Kitamiya said respectfully.

Tang Xiu hung up the phone. He edited the information about his mother and then sent it to Kuwako. After that, he got dressed, brushed his teeth and washed his face as he went to the hall on the first floor.

A faint scent of food came from the dining room.

“You woke up? It’s lunch time.”

Kang Xia carried two dishes from the kitchen and showed a sweet smile when she saw Tang Xiu.

Looking at her, Tang Xiu realized that Kang Xia was walking in an awkward manner. He suddenly understood the reason, yet, he

had no choice but lament about the mysteriousness of the creatures called humans. Kang Xia was so tired she could barely move a finger and had no strength before this, yet she was so energetic now. Looking at her bright and spirited appearance, she seemed more beautiful and breathtaking.

‘Yuan Chuling was right! There are only dead-tired cows on Earth, and no land have ever gone bad after being plowed.’

Tang Xiu secretly sighed as he walked to the dining room, smiling.

“Master!”

Gu Yin had sat at the dining table and looked full of joy as she saw Tang Xiu’s arrival.

Tang Xiu stroked her small head and said with a smile, “Let’s eat! Also, a few days later, I’ll take you along with me to Jingmen Island.”

"Hmm!"

Gu Yin didn’t care about where they would go, she only cared about being together with Tang Xiu.

Jingmen Island?

Kang Xia, who was just put the dishes on the table, suddenly had a change in expression upon hearing Tang Xiu's words. The both of them had just an intimate event, so she became especially concerned about Tang Xiu. If Tang Xiu was to go somewhere, she might not care about it. But she was a bit worried if he went to Jingmen Island.

It was because Ouyang Lulu lived there, and she was on Jingmen Island now!

Kang Xia tried hard to make her expression look normal as she asked, "Boss, what are you taking Yinyin to Jingmen Island for? Is it to play or there's something else?"

Clueless about her thoughts, Tang Xiu replied, "I'm gonna take her to see her Senior Sister as well as take her on a trip abroad along the way. I had bought an island in the Pacific Ocean before, of which I hadn't seen it yet. So I'm going there before college starts. Ah, right. I don't have a passport either. Can you help me handling the passport applications for me and Yinyin?"

Kang Xia secretly relaxed. Yet, she was secretly astonished when she heard that Tang Xiu also had another apprentice that turned out to be a woman. Then, she said, "Boss, you need to apply for a passport by yourself, and it also takes a bit of time to get it. But if you find Long Zhengyu, he should be able to get it."

Tang Xiu nodded, "Then I'll ask his help. Come sit down and let's eat! We gotta take care of our bodies."

Take care of the body?

Suddenly, Kang Xia recalled what happened between the two of them. A charming, shy expression was instantly revealed on her face as she lowered her head and sat down in front of the table.

Gu Yin raised up her small face and asked, “Master, is Senior Sister’s temper good? Would she take a liking to Yinyin?”

Tang Xiu smiled, “Your Senior Sister is injured and in a coma. Her temper is very good, however. Besides, you look like her when she was small. I think she’ll certainly like you.”

“Hmm!” Gu Yin nodded cutely.

Kang Xia then asked with a confused expression, “How many apprentices do you have exactly, Boss?”

“There are four presently!” replied Tang Xiu with a smile.

Kang Xia continued, “I only know Chen Zhizhong and Gu Yin, and the one who’s working in the hospital. Who’s the other one? Why haven’t I heard it from you before?”

Tang Xiu answered with a pale smile, “Some things are kinda inconvenient to say. Wait until later, then you’ll know about her.”

# Chapter 257: First Meeting

---

After lunch, Kang Xia left South Gate Town in a hurry. The Magnificent Tang Corporation was exactly at the initial stage and there was a lot of things she had to manage personally. Even if Tang Xiu gave her a day off she wouldn't agree to it.

Tang Xiu left his villa's courtyard and found his Land Rover parked on the roadside outside. He went back to the villa and took the car keys. After that, he drove to Star City Chinese Medical Hospital. His fellow villagers came to be hospitalized in Star City and even though he made a call to arrange everything for them, he still had to go there and see them. They watched him as he grew up, after all.

At Star City Chinese Medical Hospital.

Tang Xiu parked the car in the parking area and walked toward the Inpatient Department. On the way there, he called Dai Xinyue and asked her the ward number for the five injured villagers.

At the President's office.

As Li Hongji was reviewing the documents he was suddenly struck with happiness as well as feeling quite regretful. It was regretful that the hospital only had a few rooms, whereas there were a lot of patients being admitted everyday. It was joyful because Star City Chinese Medical Hospital became quite famous now, even the big and more famous hospitals in the country had contacted him.

“If only... Tang Xiu could forever stay, it would’ve been great. Sigh! If he was willing to stay I’d really willing to give the president position to him.”

As he finished reading the documents, Li Hongji shook his head and sighed.

“Ring, ring, ring...”

As his cell phone rang, his brows furrowed. He took the mobile and saw the caller ID. His eyes suddenly turned bright. After he answered the call, he spoke with a very amiable tone, “Hello Xinyue! Is there something you need? Is your Master coming to our Star City Chinese Medical Hospital?”

“Yes! My Master is going to the Inpatient Department to visit his fellow villagers there.” Dai Xinyue’s voice came through the phone.

A happy expression was written on Li Hongji’s face as he immediately said, “Did you tell him my request to report if he came to the hospital?”

“Yes, I did!” said Dai Xinyue.

The smile on Li Hongji’s face became thicker. Since Tang Xiu didn’t disagree, that meant Tang Xiu wouldn’t mind seeing him. When he thought up to there, he immediately said it to Dai Xinyue

as he hung up the phone and came out of the President's office.

Inside the Inpatient Department ward.

Su Jiande was half-leaning on the sickbed while eating a piece of an apple peeled by his daughter. At the same time, he spoke to the patient on the next bed who was just being admitted with a joyfully satisfied expression, "The Divine Doctor you just mentioned, I know who he is. Not only do I know him, I also know where his family lives!"

The patient on the next bed was a white-haired old man with a son and daughter at his bedside. Upon hearing Su Jiande's words, the old man's daughter replied quickly, "You know where he lives? Really? I heard that this Divine Doctor comes and goes without giving notice. He also has no fixed time for his medical service in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital. My dad has asked the hospital's president, and he didn't even know when Divine Doctor Tang would come over to give medical services."

Su Jiande smiled to her, replying, "Considering that you know the president, I can tell that you're not an ordinary person. Do you know why we can stay in this ward? It's because Tang Xiu made a phone call to the hospital's leader. Also, I watched him grow up. That child is sensible, thoughtful and intelligent, so it's no wonder that he became a Divine Doctor. Hahaha..."

"Uncle Jiande, you're overpraising me way too much. It kinda makes me embarrassed."

A voice came from the outside as Tang Xiu's figure appeared at the door.

A pleasantly surprised expression was immediately written on the faces of Su Jiande as well as the other Su villagers. Su Jiande was struggling to get up, but Tang Xiu stopped him.

“Uncle Jiande, you're injured, so don't get up. We're relatives, after all, so we can cut ceremonies between us. How is it? Have your injuries recovered?” Tang Xiu smiled at him and asked.

Su Jiande said excitedly, “The recovery is great. The doctors said I only need ten to fifteen days before I can leave the hospital. Tang Xiu, it's really you! But, weren't you going to Qinghe County? How come you're back in Star City now?”

“Everything has been handled well at home, and the culprit who injured you has apologized and admitted their mistakes. They also paid compensation. So that's the end of the incident. As for me, I have things to take care of, so I came back to Star City.”

Immediately after, Tang Xiu greeted the other villagers inside the ward. Although he was rich and powerful at present, as well as being hailed as a Divine Doctor in this hospital, he didn't act arrogant and his attitude was as modest as always.

On the next sickbed, the white-haired old man who was half-seated on the bed head was looking at Tang Xiu with a curious expression. His children were also doing the same. They had heard that Divine Doctor Tang was very young, but it was out of their



imagination that he would be this young.

Seeing Tang Xiu and the fellow Su villagers greeting each other, the old man then smiled and said, “Heroes truly come from the youth! I have heard that Divine Doctor Tang is a young man, but to be this young is beyond my imagination. Divine Doctor Tang, you come and leave as if it’s a coincidence, might I ask you to check my sickness right now?”

Tang Xiu looked at the old man with a slight vigilance in his eyes. Just when he came to the Inpatient Department, he realized something unusual. In the entire Inpatient Department, there were at least 20 men in casual suits watching the stairs and elevators. There was also several stern-looking men at the ward corridor who seemed to be martial arts experts who were also intentionally watching the ward.

Hence, he already guessed that the old man’s identity was definitely extraordinary. Furthermore, he felt that the old man was somewhat familiar, but he couldn’t remember where he had seen him.

After a moment of silence, he asked, “What is your illness?”

The old man smiled wryly, “It’s asthma, a chronic one for many years. It’s getting more and more serious nowadays. Hence, when I heard that Star City Chinese Medical Hospital has a Divine Doctor on duty, my children brought me here from Beijing.”

“How should I address you?” Tang Xiu nodded.

The old man laughed, “My family name is also Tang, our whole family should come from the same line about 500 years ago.”

Family name Tang, from Beijing?

Tang Xiu’s brows furrowed. Although Su Lingyun didn’t disclose too much information about his father to him, yet she had told him that his father came from Beijing and was also surnamed Tang. However, he shook his head secretly, because he didn’t believe that such coincidence could happen in the world.

Furthermore, that father who had no affection toward him whatsoever should have nothing to do with them. This family’s background wasn’t simple. If he was related to this family, would he even possibly take a liking to his mother who was only an ordinary woman from the countryside?

Tang Xiu looked at the old man’s smiling face and lightly said, “To be honest, I have no good impression on the people surnamed Tang. If I could, I really wanted my surname to be Su. Anyways, asthma is very easy to treat. The illness’ problem is inside the lungs. Please wait until your family takes you to the consultation room and I’ll treat you there.”

“Knock, knock...”

The door was knocked as Li Hongji, accompanied by two hospital’s leaders, strode inside. When he saw Tang Xiu, he immediately spoke excitedly, “Tang Xiu, you really came! You

know, I'm really excited as well as in distress right now. If you didn't come, I'm afraid that I'd have to visit you."

"Ah," Tang Xiu said with a puzzled expression, "Is there something you need me for?"

Li Hongji forced a smile, "Of course there are matters that need you! Because of you, our Star City Chinese Medical Hospital has become well-known throughout the country. You've cured those hard-to-treat internal illnesses and also treated a lot of patients who came from other regions of the country, who can't be treated by the outstanding doctors from many large hospitals. Hence, you're the most dazzling supernova in the medical world. Don't tell me that you didn't realize it when you come to the hospital? This Inpatient Department is already filled with patients coming from all over the country, even each corridor on every floor is temporarily filled with sickbeds. The 50 beds we bought yesterday are far from adequate; there are a lot of patients lying in the corridors."

Tang Xiu was dazed and said with disbelief, "The fame of Star City Chinese Medical Hospital has really become so big?"

Li Hongji forced out a smile and said, "It's absolutely true!"

Tang Xiu touched his nose and said lightly, "It seems that I ought to lessen the number of times I give medical service here. Tall trees attract the wind, whereas I myself never liked to stand in the limelight."

He then turned his head and spoke to the old man, “How about this, let your children take you to the consultation room? I’ll examine you there. Afterwards, you can save the time and leave right away.”

Li Hongji looked at the old man as an unusual light flashed in his eyes. He then quickly said, “Senior Chief, since Tang Xiu is willing to give you treatment, you’ll finally be able to be cured of your asthma!”

He believed in Tang Xiu because he knew one thing-Sun Wenjing’s mother. She was an old lady who was suffering of a middle stage liver cancer and was cured by Tang Xiu!

It’d simply be a joke if a divine doctor who had been able to cure a middle stage liver cancer of an old woman was unable to cure asthma. Hence, he was pretty confident in Tang Xiu.

Senior Official?

Tang Xiu frowned. A picture suddenly flashed inside his mind. He suddenly understood as to why he felt that this old man looked somewhat familiar. He was one of the top leaders of the country, and could be grouped within the top 10 influential figures throughout the country. He used to watch him on TV news before.

The old man frowned and replied in a low voice, “President Li, haven’t I told you to not call me that? It’s fine calling me Old Tang.”

“Ah, yes, yes, yes!”

Li Hongji quickly let out an obsequiously smile and said.

The old man looked at Tang Xiu as he smiled and said, “Divine Doctor Tang, I’ll have to trouble you then. If there’s anything to be prepared in advance, you can tell President Li directly.”

Tang Xiu nodded slightly, “Prepare a basin of warm water and clean towels. Also, prepare for me some medical alcohol along with alcohol cotton.”

The hospital leader who accompanied Li Hongji behind immediately said, “I’ll go prepare them at once.”

Tang Xiu waved his hand as he then spoke to Li Hongji, “I must take a trip abroad for a few days. If I can handle the matters ahead of schedule, I’ll still have some time before college starts, so I’ll come to the hospital and give medical services for a few days. But if I come back late, I won’t be able to give medical services here anymore! I’ll only have time again when vacation comes. About those patients coming from all over the country, the hospital still has other doctors, so you can let them handle it!”

As Li Hongji heard it, a bitter and sour expression immediately covered his face. The hospital had received so many external patients. If Tang Xiu was to put down his workload, perhaps he, as the top leader, would be unable to withstand it! After all, there were a lot of people among the patients that had extraordinary backgrounds. Even though they paled in comparison with the one

in front of them, some people were really not good to offend.

## Chapter 258: An Unexpected Turn of Events

---

Li Hongji hesitated for a moment before carefully asking, “Tang Xiu, you don’t need to wait for a few days before going abroad! Can you take two days before you leave? Besides, those patients are kinda pitiful, and they come from faraway places! If they can’t see you, they will be very disappointed! You can rest assured that, after you’ve given medical service for two days, I’ll immediately announce your leave because of an important matter, saying you won’t come back to our Star City Chinese Medical hospital within a short time.”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment before nodding, “So be it then! I have something to do tomorrow, but after I’m done with it I’ll come here give treatment for two days.”

Pleasantly surprised, Li Hongji said, “Great! I’ll inform everyone immediately!”

“Knock, knock...”

The ward’s door was knocked.

As he looked at the crowd of people outside who were about to enter the room, Tang Xiu stared blankly for a moment as a surprised expression filled his eyes. It was because he knew someone from among them, the Seaside Strait Manor’s owner in Jingmen Island, Tang Dong.

The expression on the old man’s face on the sickbed turned

gloomy as he asked with a heavy tone, “Why are you here?”

Tang Dong himself was obviously surprised upon seeing Tang Xiu here. He faced Tang Xiu and nodded at him. Forcing out a smile, he then replied to the old man, “Uncle, my father heard that you’re visiting Star City for treatment, so he wanted me to come and see you. Moreover, I also have acquaintances in Star City. Hence, my visit this time is also to deliver a number of goods to him ready to trade.”

“Hmph.” The old man snorted coldly, “It’s damn rare of your father to remember me, eh?! So be it. Since you have come and have also seen me, just go and take care of your business!”

Tang Dong smiled wryly, “Uncle, even if I want to take care of my business, I’ll still have to find my acquaintance first! If I leave now, I won’t be able to conclude the business transaction.”

The old man shouted angrily, “Whether you’re able or unable to do your business, how the hell would it be related to this place? You’re an adult, yet how could you be so frivolous? Would it be even possible for you to do your business transaction here? Hmph...”

Tang Dong forced out a wry smile, “Uncle, the person I’m gonna have a transaction with, is exactly here.”

The old man was surprised for a moment before he flew into a rage.



At this moment, a trace of smile revealed on Tang Xiu's face as he said, "Tang Dong, how many cargoes did you bring this time?"

Tang Dong extended his fingers as he smiled, "Five."

Tang Xiu nodded, "Where are they?"

"I've sent some people to escort them to the last transaction site. I originally wanted to see my uncle before calling you afterward! But I never thought I would bump into you here. How is it? You also have relatives or friends hospitalized here?"

Tang Xi pointed to the two villagers on the sickbeds and replied, "Yes, they are injured, so I came to see them. It's the same for me. I didn't expect such a coincidence, this elderly turning out to be your uncle. President Li, even if I don't speak, perhaps your hospital is even afraid to charge him for the hospitalization and medical treatment fees, right?"

Li Hongji let out an embarrassed smile, "Of course, of course!"

The old man partly sat on the sickbed head as he looked at Tang Dong and Tang Xiu with astonishment. He didn't expect that his nephew would know Tang Xiu and even had business deals with him. Out of curiosity, he asked, "Tang Dong, your cooperation with Divine Doctor Tang, what kind of business is it?"

Divine Doctor Tang?

Tang Dong looked at Tang Xiu with a strange expression and replied truthfully, “Uncle, you too know about our family’s manor! Tang Xiu bought those fierce beasts’ bones as well as the other materials from its body for a high price. I already sold him four dead fierce beasts and its bones, and this time I brought five.”

The old man was astonished, “Doctor Tang, what are you making in the end? Aside from being a doctor in this hospital, you seem to also be a student. Have you started your own business?”

Tang Xiu said lightly, “I do have a little business that makes some money and support my family. You have a distinguished status, so you don’t know the hardships of little people like us!”

The old man was speechless.

He was surnamed Tang and was called Tang Guosheng, whereas his children at the bedside were Tang Yunpeng and Tang Min.

At this moment, Tang Yunpeng frowned, “Divine Doctor Tang, although my father has a high status, he still understands the hardships of the people! If you know nothing about him, I ask that you don’t talk irresponsibly like this!”

Tang Xiu shot a cold glance at him and didn’t reply.

Tang Guosheng scolded in a low voice, “Yunpeng, don’t talk rubbish!”

Despite scolding, he was secretly surprised inside. He could tell that Tang Xiu had correctly guessed his identity, yet he didn't have the slightest fear of him. It was as if his status and identity was nothing. He knew that if ordinary people knew his identity, he was certain that they would be greatly shocked and would immediately start acting respectfully in front of him. For example, the President of Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, Li Hongji.

Tang Yunpeng showed a slightly forced smile as he got scolded. He intended to give Tang Xiu a lesson, but the latter was, after all, a divine doctor, and his father's illness also needed his treatment. So he could only repress the idea inside his heart.

Looking at Tang Xiu, Tang Guosheng laughed, "Divine Doctor Tang, I made you laugh at me. These children of mine are good for nothing and love to talk rubbish, so please ignore them. It's just that I've never thought that you'd have such a great ability despite being so young."

Tang Xiu said indifferently, "No problem."

Tang Dong, on the other hand, could see the indifference on Tang Xiu's expression. He quickly said, "Tang Xiu, I really never knew that you'd unexpectedly be a Divine Doctor. Had I known it earlier, I would've already asked you to examine my uncle."

Tang Xiu said, "Treating it now isn't too late! Even though he has some breathing problems, it wouldn't be a problem for him to live for more eight to ten years! After I've cured his asthma, he could still live for more than ten years."

“Great!” Tang Dong was pleasantly surprised.

Tang Dong’s complexion suddenly flickered. He suddenly recalled something and quickly said, “Tang Xiu, since you’re hailed as a Divine Doctor that even my uncle flew from thousands of miles to Star City for your treatment, then, could... could it be possible for you to treat my Third Brother? If you can treat him, I’ll give all the fierce beasts’ bodies and bones to you for free, I’ll not ask a dime for them!”

Tang Guosheng on the sickbed, Tang Yunpeng and Tang Min at the bedside, all of them had their spirits startled as their eyes instantly stared at Tang Xiu intensely.

All would be delivered for free?

Tang Xiu looked at Tang Dong with astonishment. One must know that the price of a fierce beast’s body and bones was around five million yuan, and it would continue rising later on! And this man said he would send all of them to him for free? The price itself, wasn’t it rather too big a number?

“What’s his illness?”

Tang Dong replied with a heavy tone, “His brain was hit hard and he has been in a coma for 19 years. The most famous medical experts throughout the world have determined that he is in a vegetative state.”

Tang Xiu nodded, "If there's an opportunity, I'll try it. But I'm very busy for the time being, so I have no time."

Tang Guosheng asked anxiously, "Divine Doctor Tang, y-you... you can treat someone in a vegetative state?"

Tang Xiu said lightly, "Whether or not I can treat it, I can only tell after I examine him. He has been in a coma for 19 years, yet he's still alive until now. It seems that you have spent quite the laborious efforts!"

A painful expression flashed on Tang Guosheng's face. He tightly gripped his wrinkled palm. After a few seconds of silence, he said bitterly, "He's my youngest son. He was 25 years old when he entered into a vegetative state, and coincidentally, he was injured in this Star City."

Star City?

Tang Xiu was stupefied as his heart turned tense all of a sudden.

After being silent for a moment, Tang Xiu asked with a deep tone, "What's the name of your youngest son?"

"Tang Yunde!" Tang Guosheng answered in a low and deep tone.

"What did you say?"

Tang Xiu's complexion changed greatly and turned pale, disbelief showing in his eyes.

Tang Yunde?

It was a familiar name yet an unfamiliar one, for which he firmly carved it inside his hear for twenty years. And for all these years the owner of this name was also the target of his hatred.

Tang Guosheng was flabbergasted as he looked at Tang Xiu, "Divine doctor Tang, how come you..."

Tang Xiu glared at Tang Guosheng with a coldness suffusing inside his eyes as he asked a series of question, "Tang Yunde? Did he live in seclusion 19 years ago in Star City? 25 years old at that time? Comes from Beijing? And was once a famous soldier?"

Tang Guosheng was astonished, "How did you know about that?"

Tang Xiu's unsightly face turned grimmer. He understood in an instant. He then turned to look at Li Hongji and snapped with a stern tone, "GET THEM OUT OF STAR CITY CHINESE MEDICAL HOSPITAL, AND GET THE HELL OUT OF STAR CITY. I WILL NEVER TREAT HIS ILLNESS EVEN IF HE DIES!!"

"WHAT?"

Li Hongji was shocked. He was dumbstruck and stupefied as Tang Xiu suddenly raged violently.

Tang Xiu's eyes were as though a wolf's, watching Tang Guosheng, Tang Yunpeng, Tang Min as well as Tang Dong with icy, deadpan eyes. He turned around and rapidly left. Only when he was at the stairs did he stop. Leaning his back against the wall, he panted roughly.

Tang Yunde!

How he used to hate the owner of this name. He originally thought he would no longer hate him after he had grown up, even believing that any contact between them would never occur.

Yet, he suddenly heard this man's name and even saw his father and siblings. The accumulation of hatred that had been buried deep inside his heart for so many years erupted once more.

This hate not for himself, but it was for his lonely and forsaken mother who brought him up.

Tang Xiu's hands were trembling. He took out a cigarette pack from his pocket, lit it up and deeply sucked it twice. Slowly, the anger inside his innermost world returned back to normal.

Inside the ward.

The Tang Family was shocked by Tang Xiu's reaction. They were

clueless as to why Tang Xiu would show them such an intense hatred. Tang Xiu's expression just now, it made them think they were his mortal enemies.

What happened?

Tang Guosheng's lips shivered and wriggled a few times. He looked at the door in a daze. Suddenly, he seemed to realize something as his eyes turned wide with disbelief. He then shouted with a stern voice, "Quickly catch up to him! Find him and bring him back!"

Tang Yunpeng awoke from his daze, asking with a confused expression despite sobering up, "Father, what kind of situation is this?"

Tang Guosheng was as if unable to hear his son's question. Inside his mind, he repeatedly recalled the call from his youngest son before he turned into a vegetative state:

"Father! You will be a grandfather again. Little Yun is pregnant now, it's been three months already..."

Could it be...

Tang Guosheng's old body was slightly trembling. He knew that he had a missing grandson or granddaughter that he had never seen. 19 years ago, he had sent a large number of people to find his youngest son's wife—his daughter-in-law whom he had never met



before.

However, he only knew that his youngest son's wife was called Little Yun, there was no other information. Therefore, they were naturally unable to find anything from the investigation. He always imagined that his youngest son would wake up one day, and then he would hear from him about his daughter-in-law and his granddaughter or grandson.

Unfortunately, he was struck with disappointment.

## Chapter 259: Only as Strangers

---

Tang Yunpeng watched his father's constantly changing expression with eyes full of curiosity, whereas Tang Min and Tang Dong looked confused, as they were clueless about what kind of situation they were in.

“Why aren't you chasing him!”

Tang Guosheng came out from his daze and immediately called out as he saw that his children were still there.

Tang Yunpeng hesitated for a while. Then, he turned around and walked out of the ward. As he entered the corridor outside, he was still figuring out the whole process. He waved to a bodyguard in casual attire and asked, “The young man who just came out of the ward, where did he go?”

The guard pointed to the stairs, “There!”

Tang Yunpeng nodded and strode toward the stairs. Just as he reached there, he saw Tang Xiu leaning on the wall, looking gloomy and smoking a cigarette.

“Divine Doctor Tang, I want to know the reason you acted like that.”

Tang Xiu looked at him with a cold and detached expression, “You have neither the right nor the qualification. Even your father

don't have that right either. If I'm not mistaken, at that time Tang Yunde was expelled from your family and then came to Star City alone, am I right?"

Tang Yunpeng knitted his brows as he asked, "How do you know about my youngest brother's situation so much?"

Tang Xiu shook his head, "I know very little, but these are enough for my family to detest your Tang Family. So I'm telling you to not provoke me. Your Tang Family might be big and powerful, but if I want to destroy you, it's still within my capabilities."

The frown on Tang Yunpeng's face grew deeper as he continued asking, "You seem very hostile toward us. Do my Tang Family and yours have any hatred and grudges?"

Tang Xiu sneered, "A grudge? How I wish that it was only a grudge! Just forget it, I already told you that I cannot treat your father's illness. Do your best to deal with it yourself." Having said that, he walked downstairs.

"Wait!"

A loud voice reverberated. It wasn't Tang Yunpeng but Tang Guosheng who came with someone propping him up.

Tang Xiu stopped and looked at him coldly.

Tang Guosheng stopped in front of Tang Xiu. He prudently looked at Tang Xiu's features for a long while before muttering, "You look like him, at least 60 percent! Twenty years ago, I almost turned Star City inside out, but still, I failed to find my youngest daughter-in-law, a woman called Little Yun. Since Yunde suddenly got injured and turned into a vegetative state, it's already been twenty years that I've been hoping for him to wake up, so he that can tell me personally that woman's full name. At that very same time yesteryear, he told me that she was already pregnant and lived here!"

"WHAT?"

Tang Yunpeng and Tang Xiu exclaimed out in alarm without them realizing. Even Tang Dong's eyes turned wide, disbelief shooting out from his eyes.

They all knew about this matter, and it had been a long time they had been seeking for the answer!

Could it be...

The three people's eyes looked at Tang Xiu intensely.

Tang Xiu was silent. He knew nothing of the actual facts that had happened that year. If that man suddenly went missing because he was severely injured and turned into a vegetative state and then was brought back to the capital, should he hate him for this?

Finally, Tang Xiu slowly raised his head and looked at the excited Tang Guosheng, saying indifferently, “That’s your family’s problem, nothing of it is related to me whatsoever. I may help and treat your illness, but I want you to never again appear in Star City afterward.”

Tang Guosheng walked forward a step and said with all solemnness, “If you’re my...”

Tang Xiu waved his hand to interrupt him and said with a cold and detached expression, “No! The more I hear that hated name, the more extreme I’ll respond to it. Furthermore, I’m already twenty-two and I shall have nothing whatsoever related to you. So, just go to the ward and I’ll treat you there.”

Twenty-two years old?

Tang Guosheng frowned deeply. If Tang Xiu’s age became the reference, he couldn’t be his own grandson, yet his response and appearance was too unusual. Even if he wasn’t his grandson, perhaps there was an unseparated relationship between him and his daughter-in-law.

“Tang Xiu, you know about my youngest son’s situation and your response is way too unusual. So, I’m very sure you must know something. Please tell me, my Tang Family will certainly thank you for this.”

While walking toward the ward, Tang Xiu replied with a cold and detached voice, “I couldn’t care less about the gratefulness of your

Tang Family. You'd better not to think about this messed up shit and rather focus on your asthma. If you want me to treat you, then cut the crap. If you don't want me to treat you, then don't shit much longer here and go the hell back to Beijing."

Tang Guosheng wore a complicated expression on his face. The more unusual Tang Xiu acted, the more he was certain about his suspicion. Tang Xiu must know a lot about his youngest son and his wife. Yet, with the apparent hostile attitude Tang Xiu had toward him, he felt that he must not act with undue haste.

A strange light glinted from Tang Dong and Tang Min's eyes even though they kept silent. Tang Yunpeng, however, frowned and said with a sinking tone, "Tang Xiu, you'd better pay attention to your attitude."

"Hmph," Tang Xiu snorted coldly, "You think that my attitude isn't good enough? If you feel so, then get the hell out."

Tang Yunpeng was incensed. He was a man with a prominent position and also a high-ranking official of the region. No one dared to speak to him with such attitude for many years. Furthermore, his father had a more distinguished status and was someone with equal status with the few senior statesmen of the country. Now, however, a 20-year-old young man humiliated him, causing him to want to act against Tang Xiu at once.

Tang Guosheng raised his hand to stop Tang Yunpeng as he glared at him. Only then did he look at Tang Xiu and said, "Then I'll have to trouble you for this, Divine Doctor Tang."

After returning to the ward.

Su Jiande saw Tang Xiu returning and quickly asked, “Tang Xiu, are you alright?”

Tang Xiu squeezed out a smile as he shook his head, “Uncle Jiande, I’m fine.”

Su Jiande calmed down from his tensed up state.

He was a typical countryside layman. All of his relatives were also local farmers there. They also thought that Tang Guosheng looked somewhat familiar before, and at present, they suddenly realized they had seen him on TV. He was one of the bigshot leaders of the country.

As good-hearted as he was, he wished to urge Tang Xiu to not offend this kind of bigshot. But then, he swallowed the line that was already on the tip of his tongue.

Tang Xiu pointed to the sickbed and spoke with a sinking tone, “Take off your coat and get down with your face to the floor.”

Tang Guosheng did as he was told and lied on the end of the sickbed. Although he didn’t know how Tang Xiu would treat him, but with the title of Divine Doctor, then it surely wouldn't be a prank.

Tang Xiu's fingers pressed Tang Guosheng's chest center acupoints and rubbed it for half a minute. Then, he took the alcohol and alcohol cotton handed over by Li Hongji and rubbed the said acupoints over and over again, while his fingers pressed all the acupoints on Tang Guosheng's lungs.

Asthma was also known as bronchial asthma. It was a chronic inflammatory disease of the airways of the lungs, which involved a variety of cells and respiratory parts. If the conditions become more serious, it could lead to pneumonia.

The chronic airways inflammation oftentimes was accompanied by the increasing of hyper-responsive respiratory tracts, leading to repeated wheezing, shortness of breath, chest tightness, and coughing. If one wanted to cure it, besides treating the bronchial obstruction, on the other hand, one would have to ease the inflammation of the lungs.

Tang Xiu actually had a more effective treatment method. However, Tang Guosheng's age was, after all, already advanced and not suitable for quite radical treatments, even though the effect of such treatment method was extremely excellent. Therefore, Tang Xiu could only choose the gentle method with a slightly worse effect than the first method. Yet, despite the method being gentle, it still frightened the people around.

As one of Tang Xiu's hands took the alcohol and alcohol cotton from Li Hongji, he also took back his other hand from Tang Guosheng's lungs' acupoints. Along with the flow of his star force into the palm of his hand, Tang Xiu began to hit Tang Guosheng's



back repeatedly.

Each and every hit he did it, it caused his star force to enter Tang Guosheng's body, as he controlled the surging force toward the internal organs, lungs and trachea, until his star force gradually seeped into them.

“Cough, cough, cough...”

A severe cough made Tang Guosheng's body tremble. His eyes turned bloated and his face turned red. Even the green veins on his forehead protruded.

The crowd around were trembling as they watched the scene scared shitless. The Tang Family in particular had a thought sprout in their hearts: Tang Xiu had said that he wouldn't treat this old man, yet, might he take the chance to retaliate at this time, and then cause the old man to suffer?

About ten minutes later, Tang Guosheng was no longer coughing. Tang Xiu slowly retracted his hands. He then washed his hands with the warm water and said indifferently, “Let the senior Chinese medical doctor from the hospital make a Chinese herbal medicine prescription to raise the qi and moisten the lungs. Drink the medicine for three to five days. Anyways, President Li, he's fine now, he can already be discharged! The hospital has insufficient wards, so we might as well have it unoccupied and not delay the other patients.”

"This..."

Li Hongji hesitated.

Tang Guosheng slowly got up from the sickbed at this time as he sat there, stroking his chest. A faint excited expression was revealed on his old face. He could clearly feel that his breathing was particularly smooth, very different from his usual struggle to breath. Even his brain was much more sober and clearer than before.

The effect that satisfied him the most was that he could feel that his body was very comfortable, as though he got a few decades younger. His body now felt a lot more relaxed.

“Leave the hospital and take care of the administration formalities immediately!”

At the moment, Tang Guosheng’s voice brought with it a lot more strength than before.

Li Hongji dared not to offend Tang Xiu or Tang Guosheng. And now, he immediately felt relieved inwardly upon seeing Tang Guosheng compromising. However, his eyes had a lot more admiration when he looked at Tang Xiu now.

Who was Tang Guosheng?

He was one of the senior statesmen of the country! Someone with an honorable status and above hundreds of millions of people.

Yet, Tang Xiu dared to have such attitude toward him, even Li Hongji couldn't help but slightly worship him!

After Tang Xiu had treated Tang Guosheng, he no longer stayed inside the Chinese Medical Hospital. By now, he only had one thought: to immediately rush to his hometown in Qinghe County to see his mother. Prior to this, his mother had never wanted to tell him anything about this and he also didn't want to disturb and make her awkward about the matter. Yet, now was different. Since that man was still alive and also in a vegetative state, for whatever it could be, he must tell this issue to his mother.

As for what his mother would do, he could only respect her decision.

On the way back, he called Su Ben and Su Quan, telling them to not leave for Star City as he wanted the both of them to wait for him in the Su Village.

Two hours later, Tang Xiu had driven back to the Su Village. When he had just parked his car outside his grandmother's courtyard, Su Ben and Su Qian came out from the house.

“Tang Xiu!”

Su Quan called him out.

Tang Xiu waved at him and said, “You two wait for me outside. I

have something important to discuss with my mother. After we talk, I'll chat with the both of you."

"Alright!"

Su Ben and Su Quan nodded at the same time.

# Chapter 260: The Not Unexpected Decision

---

Star City, at Long's Dining Hall.

Inside the luxurious presidential suite, Tang Guosheng sat uprightly on the living room's couch. He had stopped smoking for decades, yet he was smoking right now. Even though his children had tried to stop him, they were unable to do so. At this time, the eyebrows on his old face were deeply wrinkled as he looked at his mobile on the coffee table in front of him from time to time.

He was waiting, waiting for the investigation result which he had ordered to be carried out after he left Star City Chinese Medical Hospital!

“Ring, ring, ring...”

His mobile's ringtone finally sounded. The call Tang Guosheng was anxiously waiting.

“Report.”

Tang Guosheng extinguished his cigarette with quite an effort as he grabbed the mobile and answered the call. His expression and voice were extremely serious.

A voice then transmitted through his phone, “Senior Chief, we've investigated Tang Xiu's information clearly. He's 20-years-old this year, with excellent academic performance and the top

scorer of science subjects for Shuangqing Province this year. Hometown is the Su Village in Qinghe County, no father, was brought up by his mother—Su Lingyun. He also still has a grandmother in his hometown...”

When Tang Guosheng heard that Tang Xiu was really 20-years-old, he suddenly stood up. His old body couldn't help but tremble upon hearing the name “Su Lingyun”.

He was now completely sure that Tang Xiu was his grandson!

His age fit. Single parent. Everything fit!

Su Lingyun, with the last character of Little Yun, also coincided with the name said by his youngest son.

Tang Guosheng didn't believe that existed so much coincidence.

After listening to the report.

A long period of time passed before he slowly sat back on the sofa. His eyes were somewhat wet, a complex expression within. He was perfectly aware of Tang Xiu's hatred and anger, as well as understood why he was like that. The incident that happened to his youngest son was too sudden, so sudden that he hadn't been able to confess to Su Lingyun.

However, he neither had a clue nor understand why Su Lingyun didn't go to Beijing to find the Tang Family after so many years.

Could it be that she wasn't sure she had borne the descendant of the Tang Family, meaning she already became the daughter-in-law of the Tangs?

Tang Yunpeng, who stood at the side, could see the complex expression on his father's face. After hesitating for a long period of time, he finally couldn't help but ask, "Father, what's the result?"

Tang Guosheng slowly raised his head as he looked at his children and nephew in front of him. He then nodded and said, "I wasn't wrong. Tang Xiu is really the son of your youngest brother, my grandson."

Tang Yunpeng quickly replied, "But his age..."

Tang Guosheng said, "He didn't want to recognize us and used it as an excuse. His real age is 20-years old and he lives with his mother and has no father. He grew up in the Su Village from childhood with the family from his maternal line."

At this moment, Tang Yunpeng, Tang Min, and Tang Dong understood.

Tang Yunpeng said in a heavy tone, "Father, since he's the descendant of our Tang Family, we can't ignore him. No matter what he wants, we must take him back to Beijing with us to kowtow before our ancestral shrine and recognize his ancestors and family line. Besides, he also has superb medical expertise; he could even cure your chronic asthma you had endured for so many years. Perhaps, he really has the confidence to save Yunde from his

coma.”

Tang Guosheng shook his head with a pained expression, “Sigh, for him to recognize his ancestors and family line is necessary, that I know. Yet, I’m afraid that it could be a very difficult process. You also saw how deep the resentment he showed when he identified our identities. The accumulation of resentfulness for 20 years, is not something that could fade away within a short while. Furthermore, let alone the fact that he has cured my asthma, just solely the lonely and forsaken life those mother and son had gone through, which I believe it’s our sin, for they have suffered so many hardships and sufferings for so many years; our Tang Family indeed have no qualifications and right to ask him anything.”

“Then, how should we proceed with this, father?” After pondering for a moment, Tang Min asked.

Tang Guosheng replied with a heavy tone, “I’ll go to Qinghe County personally. Go and prepare the car for me.”

"I am coming too!"

"I am coming too!"

Tang Yunpeng and Tang Min shouted in unison.

Tang Dong also opened his mouth, yet, for fear that his uncle—Tang Guosheng would reprimand him, he strongly held back the urge.



Tang Guosheng shook his head, “Little Min, you’ll go with me. As for you, Yunpeng, since our Tang Family has been in a very unstable situation due to my sickness, you must go back to the capital and help your Third Uncle stabilize the situation there. Furthermore, the matter with Little Tong must be carried out as fast as possible. Even if we must trade it with some of the interest the opposite party wants, she has to take that position. This retreat, all in all, would be very helpful for our Tang Family’s layout plan in advance.”

“This... Understood!”

Tang Yunpeng hesitated for a moment before reluctantly agreeing.

At the Su Village, Qinghe County.

Tang Xiu entered his grandmother’s house courtyard and he saw his mother washing his grandmother’s clothes while Su Xiangfei helped her with the laundry.

“Hmm? Xiu’er, didn’t you tell me that you wouldn’t come back for the time being? How come...” A surprised expression was suddenly revealed on Su Lingyun’s face as she saw Tang Xiu.

Looking at Su Xiangfei with the back of his eyes, Tang Xiu then replied to her, “Mom, I have something important to talk to you. Let’s find a quiet place.”

“What important thing?” asked Su Lingyun with a puzzled expression.

Tang Xiu walked to the side room where he stayed and said, “Mom, please follow me and you’ll know it. But you have to be mentally prepared. And please don’t be agitated regardless of anything you hear from me.”

Su Lingyun laughed involuntarily, “You, sonny, how come you’re acting so mysterious? Alright, I promise you that I won’t get agitated.”

Inside the side room.

Tang Xiu closed the door from the inside as he released his perception and found that Su Xiangfei didn’t come over to secretly eavesdrop, but sat on the spot where his mother just left and continued to dry the washed clothes. He then nodded his head as he turned around to look at Su Lingyun, saying, “Mom, I just met some people today.”

Su Lingyun was at a loss whether to cry or laugh, “Uh, you just met some people, why would you even need to report to me? Right, were those people from the top universities in China wanting to throw you an olive branch because you’re the top scorer for the science subjects in Shuangqing Province this year? I too have heard that numerous universities would rush and struggle to receive the CET’s top scorer from each province every year!”

Tang Xiu replied with all solemnness, “Mom, the people I met were not those from the top universities. They... they were all surnamed Tang!”

Su Lingyun stared blankly for a moment as her complexion changed greatly and turned pale.

Tang Xiu continued with a heavy tone, “There was also an old man. He’s called Tang Guosheng, as well as his eldest son, Tang Yunpeng, his daughter, Tang Min, and his nephew, Tang Dong, who came from the capital. They are the Tang Family of Beijing.”

Su Lingyun’s body trembled. If not for her quickly supporting herself on the wall, she would’ve fallen to the floor. Her face turned extremely desolate, with fear glittering inside her eyes.

Tang Xiu held her arms, taking her to sit on the edge of the bed. Only after that did he continue, “Mom, I think you need to tell me something about this. Certainly, I still have many things that I have yet to tell you, such as... the news about... him!”

His... the news about him?

Su Lingyun’s eyes contracted violently, with an inconceivable expression bursting from her eyes.

He... was still alive?

Tang Xiu no longer spoke. He knew that his mother would need

some time to digest the news.

After a long period of time, an agitated and disturbed expression covered Su Lingyun's face, along with some expectations within it as she whispered, "He... where's he?"

"Beijing," answered Tang Xiu faintly.

A thick sense of loss was revealed on her face while translucent crystal tears spun inside her eyes. She bit her lower lips as she murmured, "H-he didn't... die... w-why didn't he come find us? H-he obviously knew that I was pregnant that time..."

Tang Xiu interrupted her, "He has been in a coma for twenty years, in a vegetative state."

"What?"

Su Lingyun was shaken and shocked by Tang Xiu's news. Looking at him in a daze, she looked as though she couldn't believe what she heard.

In a vegetative state?

For twenty years?

He...

In an instant, Su Lingyun broke into tears. A thick remorse rose inside her, regretting not going to the capital. She clearly knew that his family was there, but why didn't she go there to look for him?

Tang Xiu held her gently as he patted her back and said, "Mom, I always knew that you're a strong woman ever since I was small. You might look soft on the outside, but you have a tenacious and strong heart. Please don't cry, and tell me everything about that year..."

Su Lingyun wept bitterly for a while. After that, only then did she raise her hazy and tearful face, speaking in a bitter and painful tone, "In the past, he got a call from his comrades to go out. So he said that he would go out drinking. At that time, I didn't take him seriously but waited for him. I then waited for a day, two days, three days..."

"He was then missing, without even any news. I reported to the police, yet there were no results whatsoever. I always believed he wouldn't abandon us, so I thought that he had died in some dark alley. Afterward, Su Shangwen took me back home and I lived there until you were born. After giving birth to you, I didn't give up hope and wanted to go to the Capital to find him and his Tang Family. But, I didn't dare. I was afraid..."

Tang Xiu sighed secretly, "You were afraid that I would be taken away by the Tangs, weren't you?"

Su Lingyun nodded silently and replied amidst her crying, "The Tang Family of Beijing is a wealthy family and has fearsome power

and influence. If they knew that I had Tang Yunde's son, I was afraid they'd snatch you away from me. I've already lost a husband, I can never bear to lose my own son!"

"So all these years, you never thought of going to Beijing?" asked Tang Xiu.

"Xiu'er, do you remember before you entered Junior High School? Every year I said I had to go to the neighboring city to see our relatives. In fact, where would I have any relatives in the neighboring cities! I basically spent all the little bit of money I saved to find news about your Dad. For more than a decade I went there every year, I even went to the old residence of the Tangs hundreds of times, yet I only dared to secretly observe the place from far away. However, I've never heard anyone mention about your Dad and never once have I ever seen him," said Su Lingyun with a bitter and agonized expression.

Tang Xiu suddenly realized and said earnestly, "Mom, I think you've done the right thing. I felt happy being raised up by you, receiving and feeling motherly love. But..."

"But what?" Su Lingyun finally stopped crying and asked.

Tang Xiu replied, "But, what do you intend to do now?"

Su Lingyun answered without thinking, "I'll go see your father! I believe him. As long as he doesn't die, there will be no difficulties. He has been in a coma, lying on the cold bed for twenty years, without me staying at his side to take care of him. Therefore, as

long as he's still alive, I'll stay with him for the rest of my life and look after him."

# Chapter 261: Visiting and Inviting Personally

---

Tang Xiu said with a serene expression, “Mom, I respect your choice and I’ll recognize that man as my father. But you know clearly well that I don’t have an ounce of familial affection toward the Tangs whatsoever. My family and roots are in this place.”

For a long time Su Lingyun was silent before she nodded silently.

Tang Xiu spoke again, “Then, when will you see him?”

As if realizing something, Su Lingyun then suddenly grabbed Tang Xiu’s arms with a nervous and agitated expression on her face, “Xiu’er, Mom knows that you’re a doctor, and I also heard that you’re extremely skillful at that. You... you, are you able to cure your dad?”

Tang Xiu shook his head, “I don’t know anything specific about the condition he is in, so I’m gonna jump into wild conclusions now.”

A trace of disappointment was revealed in Su Lingyun’s eyes. But still, she nodded and said, “Xiu’er, let Xiangfei take care of your grandma at home. We’ll go to Beijing now.”

Twenty years had passed, and never once had she ever seen her husband! Hearing the news that her husband was still alive, Su Lingyun wished she could have wings to immediately fly to Beijing



to see him. The more she delayed, the more her suffering.

Tang Xiu shook his head and slowly said, “Mom, I think we still have to wait for awhile, because I feel that some people will come to invite us to Beijing!”

Su Lingyun blankly stared at him and asked with a confused expression, “Who would want to invite us there?”

“The Tang Family,” replied Tang Xiu.

Su Lingyun’s expression changed. She harbored a wariness toward the Tangs for two decades along with the fear of them taking her son away. She was afraid that her son wouldn’t be close to her any longer. Yet, she wasn’t afraid now. Her son had grown up, and the affection between them would never be snatched away neither by fame nor fortune.

“Xiu’er, why are you so sure that the Tangs will come to invite us?”

Tang Xiu replied faintly, “Mom, they want us to recognize the ancestors, and they also want me to save him.”

Su Lingyun thought for a while before slowly saying, “Xiu’er, you’re their descendant after all, and of the Tang Family’s bloodline. So you’re supposed to recognize your ancestors!”

“Hmph,” Tang Xiu sneered, “Why should I? Because the Tang

Family's blood flows through my veins? If I ever had a choice, I would rather have the Su blood flowing within me. Mom, they are nothing but strangers in my eyes, whereas I have always been reluctant to relate to any strangers. And Mom, I respect your choice, so I wish that you can also respect mine."

Su Lingyun opened her mouth, yet she couldn't find any words to refute her son. Eventually, she could only helplessly nod and let Tang Xiu follow his decision.

"Xiu'er, please go out! I want to calm myself first. If... if the Tang Family don't come today, we'll go to the capital tomorrow," said Su Lingyun.

Tang Xiu nodded and went out of the room. As he saw Su Xiangfei doing the laundry at the courtyard, he was silent for a moment before approaching him. He then took out half a pack of cigarettes from his pocket, and pulled out one to give to him. He lit their cigarettes and puffed deeply. After that, he leaned on the tree beside Su Xiangfei and said serenely, "Can you tell me how you figured things out?"

Su Xiangfei pinched the cigarette with his wet hand as he then forced a smile, "It was not me that figured things out. It was my father that made me realize it. Virtues will be rewarded and retribution shall also befall onto the wicked, whereas some people are bound to be held responsible for everything they did. I see that as akin to what I did to you once. Had it been not for the awesome police work, perhaps it would've been you in jail now."

"Just these?" asked Tang Xiu with a tranquil expression.

Su Xiangfei shook his head, “No. In fact, I did resent you before I came back. After all, you were quite ruthless; you ruined my family and also destroyed my father’s remaining life. But when I secretly eavesdropped the conversation between you and Auntie, only then did I realize how ridiculously absurd I was.”

Tang Xiu nodded. After a moment of silence, he then said slowly, “Go repeat your high school’s third year again! After that, take the CET next year. You don’t need to worry about your welfare, my mother will look after you.”

Su Xiangfei suddenly smiled, and it was particularly bright. He then shook his head and said, “With my academic grades, I’m afraid that I can only be admitted to an ordinary university; it’s impossible for me to enter the top universities even if I have to repeat my third year of high school again. I’ve been thinking quite thoroughly, and I’ll be staying here until grandma’s injuries fully recovered. Then, I’ll leave Qinghe County and go outside to live on my own, relying on my ability. Regardless of how well I fare with life later, I will eventually return to the Su Family, to my roots.”

“Then write my cell number. I hope you contact me only if you’re forced by circumstances,” said Tang Xiu.

Su Xiangfei nodded silently.

Tang Xiu spoke no longer. He took a deep puff and then walked toward the outside of the courtyard.

"Tang Xiu!"

Su Ben and Su Quan, who saw Tang Xiu coming out, quickly called out to him.

"Anyways, you two will have to stay at home for a few more days! For the time being, I can't return back to Star City, I will have to go to Beijing to deal with some matters. When I come back to Star city from the capital, I'll contact you again."

Su Quan replied with a smile, "That would be great! Originally, Big Brother Ben and I also planned to leave for Star City a few days later! Because you need that Silver Dragon Grass, we also want to get some of them!"

Tang Xiu said quickly, "I advise you not to do that. Even if you take more people, you can only look around the outer periphery of the mountain. You said yourselves that that fierce beast is very dangerous, and ordinary people are basically unable to injure it. So, you would most likely have casualties occurring on a trip deep in the mountain."

Su Ben knew Tang Xiu's nature and disposition. Upon seeing him speak with all seriousness, Su Ben immediately replied, "Then we'll listen to you. We'll tell the other fellow villagers to only go uphill, and no matter how many Silver Dragon Grasses we find, we won't traverse deep into the mountains."

Tang Xiu nodded, "Please remember. Before summer vacation ends, I'll make a trip back here to solve that fierce beast. Anyways,

you two can go take care of your work! And wait my call!”

“Alright!”

Su Ben and Su Quan replied as they walked toward Su Ben’s house next door.

Two hours later, two black Audis slowly parked outside the courtyard. Four bodyguards in casual attire then dispersed as Tang Min opened the door and helped Tang Guosheng out.

“Are they here?”

Tang Guosheng looked at the shabby wooden doors as well as the dilapidated courtyard.

Tang Min nodded, “Father, according to the information sent to me, they live here. I also used GPS. This place is where their family lives.”

Tang Guosheng looked at the four bodyguards and spoke with a deep tone, “You’re all to stay outside, and no matter what happens, you must never step into the courtyard.”

"Understood!"

The four bodyguards immediately saluted as they received the command.

Tang Guosheng walked through the front gate. As he entered the courtyard and saw Su Xiangfei, an astonished expression flashed from his eyes as he asked him, “Young man, might I ask whether Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu live here?”

Su Xiangfei stood up from the chair and asked back, “Yes, they do. And you are?”

Tang Guosheng nodded, “I’m Tang Guosheng. Are they here now?”

Su Xiangfei turned his head and shouted, “Auntie, someone is looking for you!”

Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu came out of the house. As Tang Xiu saw Tang Guosheng and Tang Min, he sighed to himself. He could guess as to why they came, but he didn’t expect that it would be this fast. Perhaps, after he left Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, Tang Guosheng had sent people to investigate him.

With a cold and detached expression, Tang Xiu said, “Why did you come here? I told you that we have no relationship with the Tangs whatsoever.”

Tang Guosheng replied bitterly, “Xiu’er...”

“My name is Tang Xiu!” growled Tang Xiu.

Tang Guosheng was silent for a moment. He then replied helplessly, “Tang Xiu, this is your mother, my daughter-in-law, right?”

Su Lingyun was dumbfounded. Even though she heard from Tang Xiu that some people from the Tang Family would be coming, but she had never thought that Tang Guosheng would personally come. She knew him. Not only was he the Senior Official of the State, he was also her husband’s father, her nominal father-in-law.

“You... I’m Su Lingyun.”

Tang Guosheng walked toward Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu as he said bitterly, “I sent people and almost swept over the entire Star City twenty years ago. But it was very unfortunate that I couldn’t find the both of you, mother and son. Yunde only told me that you’re called Little Yun. Thus, I didn’t know your full name without further information. Twenty years ago, after I personally went to Star City to fetch Yunde, I couldn’t find you, so all these years I’ve let you—mother and son suffer hardships.”

Tears burst out from Su Lingyun’s eyes as she heard it.

Tang Min came to her side and spoke to her all smiling, “Sister-in-law, why don’t you call him father?”

Su Lingyun opened her mouth, yet, her voice couldn’t get out as it was stuck in her throat. She knew why her husband came alone to Star City that year. He was driven out by his family, and that

year, she had just left from her countryside village, working as a nurse in a hospital in Star City. At that time, nobody was taking care of Tang Yunde. Slowly after, they then fell in love and lived together.

Afterward, she got pregnant, but she had yet to have a marriage certificate. But her husband told her his true identity and also learned that a huge crises befell the Tang Family at that time. Tang Guosheng was forced by circumstances and had to expel her husband from the family and announced that he cut off the relationship between father and son.

At first, due to the anger her husband harbored, he cut off any contacts with his family. But when she got pregnant, driven by excitement and joy, he called Tang Guosheng.

She had seen this father-in-law on TV, but this was her first time seeing him in person.

Hence, she couldn't call him father as of now.

Tang Guosheng forced a smile, "Little Yun, I know that it's quite awkward for you to call me father-in-law. However, you're, after all, my son's wife, and you've given birth to the bloodline of the Tangs. I don't want to force you to recognize me as your father-in-law if it's against your will. I only hope that I would be able to compensate you—the mother and child in the future."

Su Lingyun raised her head and looked at Tang Guosheng as she said, "I must see Yunde."



Tang Guosheng replied without hesitation, “The reason I came here, is that I want to invite you—the mother and child to Beijing. Before I arrived here, I also learned that your mother is injured. If you want to, you can also take her along.”

Su Lingyun turned to Tang Xiu.

With a tranquil expression, Tang Xiu said, “The purpose of my mother going to Beijing is to see him, but our family doesn't belong in Beijing. If you may, I hope you let us see him, for we're a family in the truest sense. But the Tangs, to us, are nothing but strangers.”

## Chapter 262: The Tang Family Members

---

Tang Guosheng watched Tang Xiu calmly as a light of wisdom flashed in his eyes. He had experienced countless hardships in life, and he was good at identifying people's characters. Thus, he was able to distinguish Tang Xiu's disposition to some extent after a brief contact.

Hence, he didn't feel angry about Tang Xiu's remark. Certainly, had it been others darign to speak to him with this attitude, he would have flown into a rage already. But toward Tang Xiu, he owned him far too much.

“Tang Xiu, if you can treat your father, he would be free wherever he goes. If you can't treat him and insist to take him back to Star City, I would also agree with that. But I have a condition. The medical facilities in Star City are incomparable to the facilities in Beijing. Thus, if you want to take him over I need to send specialists and professional medical staffs along with him.

“As for your remark just now, I know very well about the resentment inside your heart. It was indeed my failure in not finding the both of you—mother and son that year, causing the both of you to endure hardships and suffering all these years. But, you're surnamed Tang, the bloodline of the Tangs, and the Tang Family is also your family.”

Tang Xiu snorted coldly and spoke no more.

Tang Min looked at Tang Xiu's eyes before her vision landed on

Su Lingyun. She then said with a smile, “Second Sister-in-law, I think you should go to Beijing with us. I believe that Second Big Brother has told you about the situation in our family. Even though the Tangs are a wealthy and powerful family, yet the elders have never intervened much in their children’s marriages, they won’t look down at you. And father, he personally rushed to Star City and stayed here for some days in the past. Even since Second Big Brother has been in a coma, for several years, Eldest Brother took some time to come to Star City to find you.”

Having said that, Tang Min walked toward Su Lingyun. She then grabbed Su Lingyun’s hands as the smile on her face disappeared, replaced with some bitterness, “Second Sister-in-law, do you know the most disturbing thought Mother has always been carrying with her all these years? It’s about the missing grandson she has outside. Oftentimes, when people mention about the Second Big Brother, she would fall into tears, being distressed by her beloved son, yet she also misses her own grandson.”

“I...”

Su Lingyun’s heart was shivering, a warm feeling gushing inside. Her resentment toward the Tangs reduced a lot. All these years, she had always been thinking and wanting to seek for her husband, yet it was out of her imagination that the Tangs also felt the same for them.

Tang Min spoke again, “Second Sister-in-law, please come with us to Beijing now! Our family is there. If you don’t want to live in the old grand residence of my parents, I will buy you a villa. And if my nephew wants to study, he can study in Beijing University, I

will fully support your every need.”

Su Lingyun opened her mouth as her sight fell on Tang Xiu with the intention of asking for assistance.

Tang Xiu said indifferently, “I’m sorry, we’re not accustomed to life in Beijing. Also, we don’t need even a dime from the Tangs. My wealth might be incomparable to the Tangs, but it’s enough for me and my Mom to have a rich life.”

Su Lingyun then added, “Yes! We have a good life here. Xiu’er has grown up now and he also has some abilities, whereas my restaurant business is also very good. So we really have no intention to live in the capital.”

Tang Guosheng said with a heavy tone, “Little Yun, Tang Xiu, no matter where you want to live, I’ll approve. But you can freely speak to me your needs, as long as it is within my abilities to provide. Even if it would heavily damage the welfare of my Tang Family, I’ll do it. You can bear in mind that the Tang Family owes you—mother and child, and we shall compensate you from now on.”

Tang Xiu was startled inwardly. An inconceivable expression flashed in his eyes. He didn’t expect that Tang Guosheng would make such a big commitment. At this moment, his sealed heart slightly cracked a bit, yet for now, he couldn’t make himself feel close and intimate with the Tangs.

“Bring the stuff inside.”

Tang Min shouted toward the entrance of the courtyard before turning around and speaking to Su Lingyun with a smile on her face, "Second Sister-in-law, Father heard that your mother is injured, and he has specially arranged some people to buy some nutrition and supplements. Also, since it's our first meeting, we couldn't be careless about the etiquettes, could we? As for those people who wounded her relatives, apart from the County Hospital's Vice President who disappeared, they will immediately be punished."

Immediately, the four bodyguards in front of the courtyard quickly carried over a dozen boxes.

"This..."

Su Lingyun was quite at a loss and didn't know how to respond.

Tang Xiu then spoke faintly, "Mom, since they have shown good intention, we'll accept them. Also, we're don't hit people smiling at us. They are not looking for trouble, so we shan't ignore them. Please let them enter the house!"

Su Lingyun sobered up and quickly said, "Ah, you're too kind, please come inside. My mother is there."

A while after, Tang Guosheng and Tang Xiu met Zhang Shi. After Zhang Shi learned their identities, she threw curses at them at first, but after she understood the whole story, only then did she show a bit of happiness. She felt happy for her daughter as well as

excited knowing that her son-in-law was still alive.

“Xiu’er, grandma knows that your medical expertise is very good, so you have to cure your father. His disappearance for so many years was caused by special reasons, so you can’t blame him any longer. Go to the capital and heal him! Grandma wants to see my son-in-law while I’m still alive.” As Zhang Shi learned about the situation, she called Tang Xiu and advised him.

“I’ll try my best, grandma!” Tang Xiu nodded.

Ten minutes later, Su Lingyun was done with the packing and left the house’s courtyard.

“You drive the car and lead the way. Mom will sit in my car.” Tang Xiu put their suitcases into the trunk as he spoke to Tang Guosheng and the others.

Tang Min quickly said, “I’ll also take your car so I can chat with Second Sister-in-law on the road.”

A trace of a smile showed on Su Lingyun’s face, “Alright!”

Tang Xiu didn’t prevent her. All in all, for whatever Su Lingyun decided, he wouldn’t object to it. After getting in the car, he saw Tang Min affectionately holding his mother’s arm as they chatted in the back seat. He then started the car and followed the two black Audis as they quickly left the Su Village. Although he just got his driver license, he followed the two cars at high speed and drove

northward.

Beijing, Famous Garden Villa Complex.

At this time, the third elder of the Tangs, Tang Guoshou, was reading the information in his hand. In front of him, two middle-aged men in military uniforms were standing straight, with one and two stars' ranking on their shoulders.

“Bang...”

The door was thrust open forcefully as Tang Guoshou's son, Tang Yunqing strode inside the room in a rush. Panting and short on breath, he shouted, “Father, it's a big event!”

Tang Guoshou's brows knitted as he snorted coldly, “Even if the sky is falling down, you still must be reverent and steady as Mt. Tai. Look at yourself now, what's got into you to act improperly like this?”

Tang Yunqing replied urgently, “No, father. It's really a very important matter. Uncle and the others are coming back to the capital in a hurry. I just received the call from the eldest brother saying that we must rush to the ancestral residence within four hours.”

Tang Guoshou was startled, “We need to rush to the ancestral residence? Did Yunpeng tell you what happened?”

Tang Yunqing said, “The Second Big Brother’s son has been found, and now they’re returning with the mother and son to Beijing. Also, most importantly, this time uncle went secretly to Star City to seek for the Divine Doctor surnamed Tang, and the said doctor turned out to be the Second Big Brother’s son, Tang Xiu.”

“What?”

Tang Guoshou’s expression changed, a light bursting out from his eyes. He didn’t expect that his direct nephew would be found. The person that the old madam of the family had been missing the most all these years, the one and only grandson who lived outside the family whom they never knew if he was still alive or died.

“Great! Yunqing, quickly inform the others and tell them to hurry to the ancestral residence in four hours. I really didn’t expect that the missing grandson turned out to be a Divine Doctor! If... if he can cure Yunde’s sickness...”

As Tang Guoshou thought up to there, the excitement on his face grew more intense.

Tang Yunqing quickly said, “Father, I’ll immediately go inform everyone.”

Beijing, Royal Dragon Club.

Tang Wei was holding a crystal bottle as he savored red wine.



Around him, two young men hugged an attractive girl each as they were drunk and had fun joyfully. The two young men, one was called Zong Lu and the other Zhang Hongnian. Both of them were scions from giant families in the capital as well as Tang Wei's best buddies since childhood.

“Bang...”

The deluxe box's door was kicked open from the outside as a lovely girl in a dress strode inside. As she saw the people sitting on the sofa, particularly the two attractive girls accompanying Tang Wei, her expression changed immediately. She sprinted toward Tang Wei and, under everyone's surprised gaze, she grabbed Tang Wei's arm and quickly spoke, “Big Brother, quickly come. Grandpa has decreed that all family members must return to the ancestral residence. We just had a major event.”

Tang Wei was at a loss as it was both funny and embarrassing. He rolled his eyes as he replied, “Tang Tang, the sky has yet to collapse; it's still atop of our head. What are you anxious for? Besides, hasn't grandpa just gone outside of the city? What kind of matter would happen anyway? Ah right, how did you know I was in this place?”

Tang Tang quickly pulled him out the box. After that, she quickly spoke, “That doesn't matter. Come with me now, the Second Uncle's son has been found, and now he's on the road back to the capital along with Grandpa. Hurry up, will you! If we arrive late and Grandpa arrives and find that we're not in the ancestral residence, he will be angry with us!”

Second Uncle's son?

Tang Wei fell into a daze as his expression suddenly changed.

He broke from Tang Tang's hold and went back into the box. He looked at Zong Lu and Zhang Hongnian as he said, "You should've heard it, yes? There's an urgent matter, so I gotta get back home. You just continue playing here, I'll look for you after I got time."

Zong Lu and Zhang Hongnian looked at each other and nodded. They knew Tang Wei's Second Uncle who had been in a vegetative state due to an accident twenty years ago. But they didn't expect that he had a son outside.

"Big Brother Tang, off you go, quickly!"

Beijing, in a PLA military unit.

Inside an olive-green barracks, the commander of the Special Forces Unit, Tang Ning, was supervising the drill in the shooting range. At this moment, a young man in military uniform ran toward him and handed a mobile phone, saying, "Commander, it's a call for you."

Tang Ning took the mobile over expressionlessly. He then spoke with a deep tone, "Tang Ning speaking."

"Return to the family's ancestral residence at once."

Tang Yunqing's voice transmitted through the phone.

Tang Ning frowned, "Fourth Uncle, I'm still training my team members, what matter could it be that you can't say it on the phone?"

"Your Second Uncle's son has been found and Old Father is bringing him home from Star City now."

"What? I'll go back immediately!"

# Chapter 263: Everyone Gathered at Once

---

Beijing, Fairview Lane.

Tang Ying was standing in front of a big desk, looking at an unfolded landscape painting with a shocked expression. Beside her Mu Wanying was showing a shallow smile, “At first, I didn’t have much hope for this Tang Xiu. The reason he agreed to the contest was that he didn’t want to comply with that bastard’s request. Who would have thought that Tang Xiu would be even more skillful, turning my misfortune into a blessing, getting me such a peerless painting with no cost at all.”

With envy, Tang Ying exclaimed in admiration, “Amongst the many masterpieces and peerless ancient paintings I have seen and admired, none of them can be compared with this painting. If I have the chance, I must ask him to paint one for me too.”

Mu Wanying laughed lightly, “He said he wouldn’t paint that easily, and even though I think his painting technique is godly, he’s really not that enthusiastic about painting.”

Tang Ying said, “You don’t know what he’s thinking! But then, you can help me by telling him something good about me!”

“If something like that worked, it would’ve been good. But... Tang Xiu, that person’s personality... is kinda weird.” Mu Wanying forced out a smile and replied.

“Weird?” Tang Ying was surprised, “In what way?”

Mu Wanying raised her lily-white slender hand and gently spun her beautiful hair down in front of her forehead, showing various kinds of flirting gestures as she smiled, “Do you think I’m beautiful?”

“Beautiful, you’re really beautiful.” Tang Ying was feeling funny and at a loss, “Who doesn’t know you’re hailed as Beijing’s first beauty? Amongst all the handsome princes in the entire Beijing, who doesn’t want to get close and have a beauty like you in their embrace? I dare say that of all men with normal sexual orientation all over the world, there will be none who don’t want to get you.”

Mu Wanying laughed, “Yet, Tang Xiu is the only one who doesn’t think so.”

“What?” Tang Ying stared blankly before shaking her head, “No, I don’t buy it. Unless he’s not a man, otherwise he won’t give a blind eye to you.”

Mu Wanying said, “I did test him, and he gave me a very direct answer. Do you know what he told me?”

“What did he say?” asked Tang Ying curiously.

“That time I asked him whether he has a problem with his sexual orientation, or my beauty doesn’t attract him.” Said Mu Wanying with a smile and continued, “Guess what he told me? He said that he has a normal sexual orientation, and if I’m willing to sleep with him he also won’t refuse. Yet, he said that it would only be a one-

night stand, without any feelings attached, thus it would be very boring, meaningless! Furthermore, he also told me that I'm the type of woman he doesn't feel like bothering."

Tang Ying's eyes stared wide. It was like hearing a joke. However, Mu Wanying's story deeply attracted her, as she couldn't wait to hear of what kind of woman was the said man was too disinclined to bother.

Mu Wanying then continued, "The kind of woman he doesn't feel like bothering is someone like me, a virgin. He said that he doesn't fear anything, yet he fears to be followed with troubles; and for him, it will be very troublesome later if he takes my first time."

"Pfft... hahaha."

Tang Ying couldn't help laughing without her wanting to.

"Damn, he's really way too weird. This is the most unfathomable thing I have ever heard in my life! What man doesn't like pure women giving them their virginity nowadays? This person is truly good. Because he's afraid trouble, he doesn't want to bother touching a pure innocent woman? It's really... damn, I'm speechless."

Mu Wanying covered her mouth as she chuckled, but afterward, she said slowly, "But I could feel that the reason he doesn't want to touch a virgin is not that he doesn't want to, but it's because that he doesn't want to take the responsibility."

“Could it be that he’s an irresponsible man?” said Tang Ying with a surprised expression.

Mu Wanying replied to her, “It’s not like he’s an irresponsible man, I think. It’s because he doesn’t want to take the responsibility, hence, he doesn’t want to bother touching a pure virgin maiden.”

The smile on Tang Ying’s face gradually faded away. After staying silent for a long period of time, she then raised her thumb and exclaimed in admiration, “Damn, I really admire him; perhaps even worship him. Firstly, he’s able to keep his composure in the face of your temptation. From this only, he’s an upright gentleman. Secondly, because he knows that he won’t be able to take the responsibility, he won’t touch a pure maiden. Such a man is definitely a good man.”

Suddenly, a strange expression was revealed on her face as her hand pulled Mu Wanying and circled around her twice, lamenting, “Tsk, tsk, it’s really unexpected that Miss Mu—the dignified first beauty of the capital has been shot by the God of Love! Don’t deny it. I know you. You would never have tried to entice him if you didn’t have the thought, no?”

Mu Wanying’s charming face blushed as she rolled her eyes and snapped, “Don’t spit out such nonsense! It’s just that I couldn’t bear... about his hell-bent attitude to drive me out. Did you think... bah! A girl doesn’t mind being with a man together in the room, yet, he cares about that. And I just wanted to probe him whether he was really for real or just a hypocrite.”

Tang Ying replied to her in a disdainful manner, “Don’t make excuses, girl. I know you since you were a baby until you grew up. How many boys have been trying to do everything they could to court you? How many people do all kinds of ridiculous things merely because they want you to glance at them? But you, you’re always looking at them from the summit and has never even bothered to care about them. Yet, this Tang Xiu is certainly has made you impressed.”

Mu Wanying corrected her once again, “I’m not impressed. It was just out of my curiosity. Don’t tell me that you’re not curious about him? After all, he’s a young man who possesses great abilities, yet his low profile gives people goosebumps.”

Tang Ying hesitated before laughing, “I’m indeed very curious about him after I heard this matter from you. But, it’s way different in essence compared to you. You’re attracted to him, whereas I only heard about him from hearsay. Beautiful girl, you too have heard the saying that, once a woman is curious about a man, that is exactly the prelude of falling in love with that woman.”

"You..." Mu Wanying gaped.

“Ring, ring, ring...”

A mobile’s ringtones sounded from Tang Ying’s bag beside her.

Tang Ying gave Mu Wanying a teasing look. She took her mobile,



connected the call and laughed, “Fourth Uncle, are you looking for me?”

After a moment, Tang Ying’s smile froze as her beautiful eyes stared wide, an incredible light flashing from them. As she listened to the other party, she involuntarily exclaimed out loudly, “You mean, the... the Second Uncle’s biological son has been found and is now on the way to the Capital along with Grandpa? Great, I’ll immediately return to the ancestral residence and wait there.”

After the call ended, Tang Ying quickly stuffed her mobile into her bag as she then looked at Mu Wanying and said, “Wanying, things happened at home, I gotta get back quickly. I’ll see you again after I got more time.”

Mu Wanying raised her brows and asked curiously, “Big Sis Ying, if I remember correctly, isn’t your uncle in a vegetative state since twenty years ago? His son...”

An excited expression glittered from Tang Ying’s eyes as she nodded, “That’s right. Before my uncle fell into a coma, he indeed already had a woman, and the woman also gave birth to a child. Twenty years ago, the elders had sent a large number of people to search them in Star City, but unfortunately, they failed. It’s unexpected that we found him twenty years later. If my Grandma knows about this, she will be pretty excited.”

Mu Wanying suddenly understood, “Then go, quickly! I’ll be here until the start of classes in Shanghai University. You can come here if you have free time.”

“Alright!”

All the directly-related family members of the Tangs in the entire Beijing had all received a call from Tang Yunqing as dozen members of the family quickly went to the Tang Family’s ancestral residence.

The Tang Family’s ancestral residence. It was a manor with a fully enclosed courtyard that occupied a big area in Beijing.

Under the grapevines frames, a silver-haired old lady was holding a pure white Persian cat in drowsiness. In front of her, the tea on the table was cold.

She was Qing Changyue, Tang Guosheng’s wife.

“Mother, why are you sleeping here?”

Tang Yunpeng’s wife, Cai Xinru, carried a bag of fresh vegetables. A nanny of the family followed her as they came to the courtyard.

Qing Changyue opened her eyes and immediately sat a bit straighter upon seeing Cai Xinru. She then waved and smiled, “It’s alright. The weather is hot right now, so I won’t catch a cold. I originally wanted to drink tea here and listen to the songs on the radio. But somehow the radio broke and I almost fell asleep.”

Cai Xinru laughed, “Mother, that is father’s broken radio. Earlier he told me to throw that out, but I forgot about it. Let’s forget it, I’ll buy you a new one.”

Qing Changyue laughed, “That won’t do. This radio is your father’s baby. Even though it has been repaired many times, but you can still fix it every time.”

“Alright then. Do you want to change clothes? This evening our family will have an important event. Look at these fresh vegetables and meat, as well as the seafood. I just bought them from the market with Big Sis Wang. I guarantee that all of them are fresh and delicious.”

“What important thing has happened? What event is worth cooking so many food?” asked Qin Changyue, surprised.

“Grandma, you didn’t know?”

At the courtyard entrance, Tang Wei was half striding as he said aloud.

Qin Changyue was surprised as she watched Tang Wei and Tang Tang coming inside. Then, she asked with a confused expression, “What should I know about?”

Tang Wei said, “Your grandson, whom you’ve been missing for twenty years, has been found, and grandpa is bringing him back! Ah, right. What’s his name? Tang... Tang Xiu! Yes, that’s his

name.”

Qin Changyue was stupefied and her expression changed greatly. Even though she was already old, she had a strong and healthy body, hence, she stood up directly from the chair and asked urgently, “What did you say? Yunde... Yunde's son? My grandson... has been found?”

Tang Tang walked toward her side, grinning. She held her arms as she smiled and said, “Grandma, we’ve found him, truly! I got a call from dad to drag my brother over here.”

An intense excitement could be seen on Qin Changyue’s face. Her body trembled. Immediately after, she saw that her eldest son, Tang Yunpeng, came from outside, followed by her grandson Tang Ning.

“Yunpeng, you also know about it?”

Tang Yunpeng nodded, “Ah, it seems that they have told you, Mom. Actually, I was in Star City accompanying Father to seek treatment when I got the news. The person who cured Father is your own grandson, Tang Xiu. I also had gotten a call that Father and Tang Min are bringing Tang Xiu and his mother, Su Lingyun. And they are on the way to Beijing. Furthermore, I also have sent some people to fetch Second Brother from the rehabilitation center.”

Qin Changyue fell into tears. Her lips quivered as she spoke out of excitement, “Great, it’s so great that we’ve found him. We’ve

found him!”

Immediately after, the other members of the Tang Family arrived one after another.

# Chapter 264: The Rejection from the Heart

---

“Ring, ring, ring...”

Tang Yunpeng’s mobile rang. As he answered the call, he said a few words and then put the mobile away, “Mother, Second Uncle, Tang Dong and Tang Yan are in Beijing Airport, they will arrive an hour later at the latest.”

The smile on Qin Changyue’s face was getting bigger. She then sighed, “Your Second Uncle is staying in Jingmen Island and hasn’t returned for a full five years already. I didn’t expect that because of Xiu’er’s matter, he would also take a special trip here. Finally, our Tang Family have all been gathered together.”

Tang Guoshou at the side snorted coldly, “Hmph, Second Big Brother hid in Jingmen Island all these years and enjoyed a peaceful life, leaving me and Eldest Brother to deal with the terrible mess in Beijing. This time he’s coming to Beijing, so I have to make him bleed and give me a few slaps.”

Qin Changyue laughed, “Third Brother! You and your Eldest Brother are actually well aware inwardly, right? Even though Second Brother lives in Jingmen Island, but he has brought us, the Tangs, many benefits all these years. But alas! You don’t want to give him face. Besides, the waters in Beijing are too deep, so if our Tang Family is defeated one day here, we’ll have Jingmen Island as our retreat point.”

Tang Guoshou was silent for a moment before he forced a smile

and said, "Sister-in-law, I actually understand what you're saying. It's just that, when I think about how Second Brother enjoys life in Jingmen Island while Eldest Brother and I are being kept busy in Beijing, it kinda makes me quite vexed! Bah, let it be. I won't grumble in front of so many juniors."

"Hahaha..."

"Hehehe..."

The other Tangs couldn't help laughing.

Quickly, Tang Guoxing, along with Tang Dong, Tang Yan and the other four or five other family members arrived. Tang Guoxing's body wasn't in a good condition. He was quite frail, looking sick and pale, yet, he was particularly in high spirits when he bickered with his Third Brother, Tang Guoshou.

At the highway intersection in Beijing.

Tang Xiu's Land Rover was stopped by the police because of his license plate's number limit. As a result, the highway police patrol was examining Tang Xiu's driving time and discovered that his length of experience as a driver was in violation of traffic regulations.

"Officer, could you get around the regulations this once?"

Sitting in the driver seat, Tang Xiu asked the traffic police

officer.

The expression of the several traffic police officers was serious. One of them shook his head and said, "I'm sorry, Sir. I'll have to ask you to get off the car."

At this moment, Tang Min, who was sitting in the back seat, slowly opened the rear window. She handed out a credential document and said lightly, "Stretch the rules. We have important matters."

The traffic police took the document. As he eyed it, his complexion changed greatly and immediately saluted toward Tang Min and respectfully spoke, "Hello, Minister Tang, I didn't know that you were in the car, so I hope you can forgive us. Please..."

Having said that, the traffic police officer returned the document to Tang Min.

Tang Min nodded. She then faced Tang Xiu and said, "Let's go! It's alright."

Tang Xiu's eyes swept traffic police officers outside. He started his car and drove toward the two Audis that were parked on the roadside two hundred meters in front. He secretly lamented inwardly: "Authority is really a good thing. If it was ordinary people, perhaps not only would they have to accept fines and have penalty points on their driver's licenses, they also might have to face an administrative detention."



At Tang Family's ancestral residence.

Tang Xiu parked the car as his eyes flashed. Just as he entered the entrance to the lane, he saw four armed security guards standing guard over there. Along the way, at least a dozen or so guards were pacing back and forth in the vicinity, either the ones that were in the open or hidden. At the front door of the Tangs' ancestral residence there were also two guards in military uniform with white gloves and armed firearms.

However, the sight that attracted his attention was not those guards but the dozens of members of the Tang Family that were standing outside the courtyard. The first one who caught his eyes among the crowd was the silver-haired old lady who was in front.

“Second Sister-in-law, Tang Xiu, let's go.”

Tang Min smiled.

Tang Xiu nodded calmly. He then turned around and looked back. He saw that his mother was somewhat restless and anxious. He then spoke to her, “Mom, let's get off!”

Su Lingyun hesitated before she nodded silently.

Qin Changyue's vision had been staring at the three cars. When she saw her husband, Tang Guosheng, she rushed excitedly and asked, “Where's my grandson and my Second daughter-in-law?”

With a smile hung on his face, Tang Guosheng pointed at the Land Rover Tang Xiu and Su Lingyun were getting out from.

Qin Changyue's eyes instantly locked on Tang Xiu. She walked toward them staggering somewhat. As she arrived in front of Tang Xiu, her quivering hands grabbed Tang Xiu's arms with a face full of excitement as tears broke down from her eyes as she sobbed, "Y-you... you're my grandson, my dear grandson?"

Tang Xiu frowned and somewhat had the urge to repel the old lady, as well as rejecting the other Tangs. After a moment of silence, he said slowly, "I am, nominally."

Qin Changyue forcefully hugged Tang Xiu with tears flowing down. She wailed and cried.

Tang Xiu didn't struggle. His expression was tranquil as ever and was quite helpless as he felt Qin Changyue's tears wetting his clothes.

He could really feel the familial affection!

This kind of stirring emotions, this kind of excitement, the feeling of crying tears of joy, it caused him to be in a particularly complicated mood.

Only after a long period of time did Qin Changyue release Tang Xiu after Tang Min persuaded her, yet her hands were still grabbing Tang Xiu's hands tightly. Then, she looked at Su Lingyun

and said excitedly, “You’re Little Yun, the one Yunde said? My Second daughter-in-law?”

Su Lingyun was very emotional. The familial affection shown by the Tang Family touched her heart. She nodded, “Yes. I’m Su Lingyun, Yunde’s wife.”

Qin Changyue’s other hand grabbed her and said with tears flowing down her face, “Child, our Tang Family didn’t do right by you all these years, hence, the both of you—mother and child, have been living outside the family. I believe that you must have endured a lot of pain and hardship. But you can rest assured that after we found you, we—the Tang Family will never let you receive a little bit of bitterness ever again. Whoever dares to bully you later, tell this old woman, then I’ll sacrifice everything in my short remaining life to fight them.”

Su Lingyun’s eyes were also filled with sparkling crystalline tears as she nodded repeatedly and heavily. She enjoyed the feeling of being recognized by her husband’s family as well as enjoying the sudden atmosphere of affection.

Qin Changyue pulled Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu. As she came in front of the other members of the Tang Family, she said, “I’m introducing you to them. They are all part of our Tang Family...”

Tang Xiu abruptly interrupted her and said indifferently, “There’s no need to introduce us. I still have important things to do later on, so take me to see Tang Yunde! If I can cure him then it would be for the best, but if I can’t, that means his fate isn’t good.”

"WHAT?"

Apart from Tang Guosheng and Tang Min, a dozen members of the Tang Family looked at each other in dismay. It was as if they couldn't believe their ears!

This... what was this nonsensical remark?

Tang Xiu finally broke from Qin Changyue's grasp as he spoke to Tang Guosheng, "You should still remember what I've said to you before. You have your Tang Family, whereas we have ours. The Tang Family's distinguished status is not for us—the common people. Thus, you don't need to waste the time and feelings. Take me to see Tang Yunde, otherwise, my mother and I will leave immediately."

Tang Yunpeng shouted out of anger, "Tang Xiu, why did you say that? Even if you think that we're only strangers, but we are still your relatives after all. In the presence of so many of your elders, how could you..."

Tang Xiu waved his hands to interrupt him and said with a cold and detached expression, "Don't use the elders to pressure me. I was born and grown up in the Su Family. If not for my mother insisting on it, I don't even want to be surnamed as Tang. So leave the familial affection out when you talk to me. I'll ask you one last time, where's Tang Yunde?"

"Xiu'er, you shut up!"

Su Lingyun was angry as she scolded him.

For a moment, Tang Xiu was silent. After that, he stepped back and said, “Mom, I respect your decision, but I also hope you can understand my choice. I have no feelings toward the Tang Family members whatsoever. No, not at this moment. And I’m afraid that it’s very hard to have in the future. And truth be told, I actually didn’t want to come to Beijing, but I have given a promise to you and grandmother to cure Tang Yunde, which is also the promise I gave when I attended to his father’s illness.”

At this moment, all Tang Family members’ faces had turned quite unsightly.

Tang Xiu couldn’t care less about them. During the 10,000 years he was in the Immortal World, the only people he remembered were only his mother and maternal grandmother, who occasionally doted on him. People that were tied through blood to him, yet without emotional attachment, were unable to hold him. This time, the reason he chose to come to Beijing was only because of his mother.

Su Lingyun fell into silence. She had experienced very few dramatic scenes and she didn’t know how to deal with the situation at present. Her son refused to recognize the Tang Family, so she was having a complicated and mixed feeling inside, but she also didn’t want to force him.

Tang Guosheng sighed to himself. He then spoke to break the

deadlock, “Tang Xiu, it doesn’t matter if you don’t want to recognize us. I know and understand why you deny these family members inside your heart. But even so, I believe that even if your heart is made of stone, everyone will still be able to melt your heart with our conducts and deeds hereafter. The offspring of the Tangs are the Tang Family’s descendants. We have never cut off our familial affection nor have we ever abandoned and left our own blood behind. Let’s go! Your father should have been sent here, I’ll take you to see him personally.”

Tang Xiu nodded and grabbed Su Lingyun’s hand. On one hand, he wanted to give her courage, and on the other, he also wanted to show the Tang Family that, at present, he had the ability to protect his own mother as well as telling them that he didn’t need anything from them.

A few minutes later, the Tang Family members took Su Lingyun and Tang Xiu to the deepest parts of their ancestral residence. As Su Lingyun looked at Tang Yunde that was lying on the bed, big tear drops fell down from her eyes.

“Yunde!”

Feeling sorrowful and sad, she cried and flew toward the edge of the bed. Her hands that were full of calluses tightly grasped Tang Yunde’s skinny palms.

Twenty years. It had been twenty years thinking every day and night, dreaming of seeing her husband again. Today, the dream finally turned into reality. She cried and wept bitterly. Telling all the thoughts and missing feelings, venting all the grievances and

sorrows she endured all these years.

At this moment, even if she had to die, she'd die with a smile in her face.

Tang Xiu, who stood at the side, looked at the unconscious man on the bed, the skinny Tang Yunde, who looked as though firewood. He sighed inwardly. He had never thought that by the time he saw this man, it would be in this situation. After calmly waiting for several minutes, waiting for his mother's emotions to stabilize, he gently patted Su Lingyun's shoulder and said, "Mom, let me have a look! If I can cure him, you can be sure that I'll do everything I can."

"Alright!"

A strong and intense expectation burst out from Su Lingyun's eyes as she quickly retreated to the side.

## Chapter 265: Cousin

---

Under everyone's watchful gaze, Tang Xiu grabbed Tang Yunde's wrist and his fingers pressed at his pulse, quietly feeling it. What made him rather grateful was that, while Tang Yunde's pulse was rather weak and suffered severe loss of vital energy, it was still sufficient to support his bodily functions.

Furthermore, even in this condition, he could still live eight to ten years more!

Releasing his wrist, Tang Xiu pulled him up and set his body sitting straight. Whilst pressing his five fingers on Tang Yunde's head, he directed his star force and released his spiritual sense.

Brain domain. It was the most mysterious part of the human body. When Tang Xiu became a Supreme in the Immortal World, he had been able to utilize and control 60% of his brain area, whereas the rest 40% he had never been able to develop or use it.

As Tang Xiu examined him, his face turned unsightly. He found that Tang Yunde's brain nerves had been severely atrophied with blood congestions in the neuronal nodes. The congestion had even coagulated, and there were signs that it had blocked the blood supply to the brain. Furthermore, the part of brain ventricles connected to the mind sea had been cut off, leaving a particular ash-grey substance blocking it. It was precisely this ash-grey substance that trapped his consciousness in the mind sea, causing him to be unable to perceive the outside world.



Trapped consciousness-Tang Xiu had experienced it once before.

When a wisp of his soul crossed over to the Immortal World in the past, whereupon it emerged on someone else's body there, it was trapped therein for three months, and eventually came out of the predicament by chance to become the owner of that body.

The feeling of having one's consciousness trapped was very depressing as well as painful! Wanting to rest yet unable to sleep, floating and drifting in the endless darkness, driving one to wish for death. If one's mental constitution was tough, they might be able to persist for a long time, otherwise, they would be driven to insanity, mentally disoriented and devoid of any strength and capability of thinking.

Four or five minutes later.

Tang Xiu slowly retracted his palm and quickly kept his spiritual sense. He would still be able to save Tang Yunde, but the process would be very dangerous. The danger was not just applied to Tang Yunde, but to him as well.

"Xiu'er, how is it?"

Standing at the side, Su Lingyun asked with anticipation.

Looking at his mother's expression, Tang Xiu sighed inwardly. While he had low emotional intelligence, with his superb intelligence, how couldn't he be able to feel his mother's

anticipation at this moment?

“Mom, is he really important to you?”

After staying silent for a moment, only then did Tang Xiu speak.

Resolutely replying, Su Lingyun said, “Very. The both of you, father and son, are very important to me.”

Equals?

Tang Xiu savored her answer inside before he finally made a decision. His gaze turned to Tang Guosheng and spoke in a heavy tone, “I dare not 100% guarantee chance of curing him. But I’m willing to give it a try. Prepare a spacious place where nobody can’t disturb us. Also, find me a set of silver needles.”

Tang Guosheng’s eyes lit up as he asked in a deep tone, “I’ll arrange it immediately. Aside from silver needles, what else do you need?”

“If your Tang Family has the ability, go to the medicinal herb market or herbs shops and buy a lot of Dragonfume Grass. Bear in mind that this herb is extremely scarce and very expensive. However many you can find, buy them.”

Dragonfume Grass?

Tang Guosheng turned and shouted sternly, "You all heard it. All of you look for it; and be quick about it. Within three hours, all that Tang Xiu needs must be found."

"Yes!"

A dozen Tang family members rushed outside.

Tang Guosheng then gave Tang Xiu and his mother a look whilst secretly sighing. Having been silent for a moment, he said mildly, "Tang Xiu, it would perhaps take some time to find the medicinal herb you need. It's night already, so let's have dinner first! Even if you're not hungry, your mother is."

Tang Xiu took a look at his mother who grabbed Tang Yunde's hand as he silently nodded.

"I'll cook. I'll cook for you myself," said Qin Changyue quickly as she hurried to leave the room after saying that.

A warm feeling sprouted inside Tang Xiu's heart when he looked at her back. He indeed rejected the Tang Family's members, but seeing Qin Changyue's actions, he could see that each and every expression and action brought along a deep affection and love within.

He was not someone whose heart was made of stone. Qin Changyue spoke a few words and hurriedly left; it touched his heart. He even began to silently recognize this paternal

grandmother of his for the first time.

“We’re also going out!”

Tang Xiu turned to Tang Guosheng and said.

At the main hall of the residence.

Tang Xiu sat leaning on the sofa and closed his eyes. He had decided to treat Tang Yunde, for which he had to conserve his strength and maintain his spiritual force at the peak.

It was because he’d have to use his spiritual sense if he wanted to clean up the ash-grey substance blocking the brain ventricles and the mind sea. If he was an Immortal and used his spiritual sense, it would be a cinch. But the present him was too weak, not even having the confidence to clear those ash-gray substances in one go as well as clearing the blood congestion and nourishing the atrophied brain nerves along the way.

The human brain was very complex. He was perfectly aware that he only had one chance. If it couldn’t be done at once and in the case that other problems cropped up with Tang Yunde’s brain, it would likely claim Tang Yunde’s life.

If his mother was willing to wait, he’d rather do that. If he was stronger he’d be much more confident. But, he didn’t want to do it. His mother had waited in suffering for her husband for twenty years, waiting to serve him after she saw him.

After nearly an hour.

Qin Changyue entered the main hall in an apron. With an expression full of affection, she looked at Tang Xiu and said softly, "Grandson, the meal is ready. Call your mother and let's have a meal together!"

Tang Xiu opened his eyes and nodded to her amiably. He got up and went to the next room, finding his mother holding Tang Yunde's hand and telling him all her thoughts and feelings in the last twenty years. Tang Xiu once again sighed inside before his hand touched his mother's shoulders, saying, "Mom, let's eat! Eat and drink to the full to raise your spirit, so you can better chat with him."

"Alright!" Su Lingyun turned around with a trace of a smile on her face.

It seems to her that at present, the sweetness of life had come to her after having gone through bitterness. Her two biggest wishes for two decades, one was to have her son to pass the CET smoothly and be successfully admitted to a prestigious university, and the second was to find her missing husband. She got both wishes now, making her quite content. Although her husband was still in a coma at present, if her son could really cure him, she would no longer complain even if she died.

There were only four people on the table for dinner.

Tang Guosheng, Qin Changyue, Tang Xiu and Su Lingyun.

The dining table was full of fragrant dishes as Qin Changyue constantly served the mother and son the veggie dishes. She wore a bright smile on her face, causing Tang Xiu to have a good appetite. He wolfed down two full bowls of rice and also ate a lot of dishes.

At this moment, Tang Xiu could finally feel that the Tangs truly cared about his mother and him as well as clearly felt the atmosphere of familial affection. With only a word from Tang Guosheng, the dozen members of the Tangs, including their daughter-in-laws who were holding children, left their ancestral residence to find Dragonfume Grass.

"This family... is very good." Lamenting inwardly, Tang Xiu put down the chopsticks after eating to the full.

"Grandpa, grandma!"

At this time, a voice came from outside the dining room as a young man strode inside. After he saw Tang Xiu, he fell into a daze, wearing a hard-to-believe expression in his face.

Tang Xiu was also astonished, for he didn't expect that it turned out to be Chu Yi. More so after Chu Yi called Tang Guosheng and Qin Changyue maternal grandfather and grandmother. So to say, that meant he was his... cousin?

"Tang Xiu, how... are you here?"

Chu Yi stared at Tang Xiu with a silly expression as he murmured.

Faintly smiling, Tang Xiu got up and replied, “Surprised?”

“What surprise? It’s a shock! I just can’t believe, that you... you turned out to be my cousin.”

“Please don’t speak about being relatives yet. Are you hungry? Have a meal first,” said Tang Xiu faintly.

The smile on Chu Yi’s face finally faded away as he rubbed his hands and smiles, “I just had a meal. I was managing something in Tianjin City recently so I didn’t know about this. Fortunately, my mother called me, so I hurried back from Tianjin City. Anyways, I’ve sent some people to find the Dragonfume Grass you need. However many they can find, I’ll have them delivered shortly.”

Curiosity hung on Tang Guosheng’s old face as he asked, “You knew each other prior to this?”

Chu Yi chuckled and smiled, “Yes, Grandpa. And we kinda have a strong relationship. Tang Xiu was my brother prior to this, but never would I have thought that he turns out to be my cousin. If Bai Tao and Long Zhengyu knew about this, they would have been shocked.”

Astonishment suffused Tang Guosheng’s eyes. He knew very well

about his grandson's personality. Intelligent, sensible, thoughtful, as well as prudent and possessing keen foresight. Ordinary people simply wouldn't enter his eyes. He didn't know as to how would this grandson of his know Tang Xiu.

Qin Changyue, however, didn't notice nor mind this. She just smiled upon seeing Chu Yi's arrival, yet her vision was reluctant to part from Tang Xiu.

After hesitating for a moment, Tang Guosheng then asked again, "How did met him?"

Chu Yi smiled, "I was in Star City with Bai Tao. The famous young master of the Long Family in Star City, Long Zhengyu, is our friend. We met Tang Xiu through him. Grandpa, you don't know that this cousin of mine possesses superb abilities, even Bai Tao and I truly admire him."

Staying silent for a moment, Tang Guosheng then said, "I had arranged people to investigate him, yet we only know that he did have a friend called Long Zhengyu, but we actually never thought that you also know him. He's indeed very capable; my asthma has been cured by him."

Chu Yi grinned, "Grandpa, he's not only amazing in the medical field! He..."

"Chu Yi!"



Tang Xiu frowned and growled at him.

Even though Tang Guosheng did send someone to investigate Tang Xiu, but after all, the time was too tight, so the information was not thorough and complete. Therefore, when he heard his grandson's remark, he became more curious, "Chu Yi, tell me! I really want to know what other aspects this grandson of mine has!"

## Chapter 266: Addressing Name

---

Chu Yi was stunned, giving Tang Xiu a ruminating look. Yet he still spilled it out, “He’s very capable in many aspects. Good academic performance; top scorer of the science subjects in the entire Shuangqing Province; martial arts expert that even eight to ten people wouldn’t be able to fight against; superb painting skills with nobody in the world being his match; skilled businessman that made even me worship him—simply a money-making machine. And what’s so superb about him is his personal network of contacts which makes me feel inferior.”

Tang Guosheng was silent yet again before he asked the question he was most concerned with, “Personal contacts? What contacts?”

“Grandpa, I believe you also know what I do in Star City, right?” said Chu Yi.

Nodding, Tang Guosheng said, “I do know a little from your mother.”

Chu Yi pointed to Tang Xiu and said, “Our big moves in Star City were all because of Tang Xiu. The Big Boss of Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical, Chen Zhizhong, is his apprentice. In short, he’s an amazing figure.”

Tang Guosheng was deeply shocked inside. He knew that his grandson was very outstanding, yet he didn’t think that he would be excellent to this extent. He heard the news about the collapse of the Zhang Family in Star City, but never would he have thought

that it was Tang Xiu who led it. He also knew about Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical. It was regarded as a major company in the country, mainly operating in the medicinal herbs business as well as research and development of many drugs. He also heard about Chen Zhizhong, the big boss of the Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical. A man of courage, bold as well as a powerful figure. But unexpectedly, the said person was the apprentice of his own grandson.

“He’s the son of the Tangs, so naturally he’s amazing.”

A bright smile appeared on Tang Guosheng’s old face as he exclaimed in praise.

Stared at by Qin Changyue, Tang Xiu himself was rather uncomfortable by Tang Guosheng’s remark. He was also disinclined to refute him. Nominally, he was indeed his grandson, and no matter how many times he refuted, he still couldn’t deny that he was of their blood and flesh. As long as his mother wasn’t bullied by the Tangs, he didn’t care.

After an hour, a lot of people had returned. What made Tang Xiu disappointed was that they only found a few Dragonfume Grasses despite using their vast connections. After counting, there were only 12 strains in total.

“Grandpa, I found eight strains of Dragonfume Grass.”

Outside the room, a light and lively voice sounded. Tang Ying strode into the door, carrying a black suitcase.

Eight?

The Tangs looked at each other with a hard-to-believe expression. They had asked to their friends and connections to inquire the whereabouts of the Dragonfume Grass, even offering a high price to buy it. As a result, they could only buy 12 strains despite there being so many people at it, yet Tang Ying alone bought eight of them?

Tang Guosheng asked out of curiosity, “Tang Ying, where did you find that many?”

“I sent a message in the WeChat group of my circle of friends saying that I’m looking for Dragonfume Grass. It just happened that one of my friends was in possession of eight strains and gave them all to me. My friend said that burning the Dragonfume Grass can raise one’s spirit. Even tired people will regain their spirit after inhaling the fragrance of the fumes. However, it also has very strong side effects, for it can cause excessive dizziness and nausea, and in severe cases, will make people unconscious.”

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes as he looked at Tang Ying, asking, “Few people know about the Dragonfume Grass. Your friend is kinda amazing. Might I know who she or he is?”

Tang Ying turned to Tang Xiu. Hesitating for a moment, she didn’t answer him, instead asking back, “Can you answer my question before I answer yours?”

Tang Xiu nodded before thinking for a moment.

“The friend who gave these Dragonfume Grasses said that she knows a strange person. But the said person is undeniably capable and is a master painter, the best in the world! In Tianjin City, that strange person gave my friend his painting for free and also had sold some calligraphies for a sky-high price. The name of that strange person is Tang Xiu. Do you have any relationship with that person?” asked Tang Ying.

Tang Xiu said lightly, “So it’s Mu Wanying. That’s right. I was indeed the one who gave her that painting as well as sold several calligraphies.”

Surprised, Tang Ying replied, “You’re really the weirdo Mu Wanying spoke about? Seems like my guess is right, after all. Cousin, since we will become closer later, I’ll tell you that Mu Wanying and I are sisters from childhood, genuine best friends. If you need my help, just tell me, I assure you that I can help you pursue belle.”

"..."

Tang Xiu rolled his eyes. He felt so funny as well as amused. He was disinclined to pursue Mu Wanying. Even the thought of pursuing the belle had never crossed his mind. But, this female cousin of his was truly interesting. However, to think that she would sell her best friend to him in an instant.

Qin Changyue, who sat at the side and listened to their

conversation, was rather astonished. She then smiled, “That Mu Family’s girl is a good child, she’s a match for our Xiu’er. Ying, since you already said it, you have to help your younger brother. To be honest, I also like that girl of the Mu Family.”

Tang Ying laughed, “Grandma, I’m afraid that he doesn’t need my help in this. She has a little crush on him already. But, this younger brother of mine is really amazing. Mu Wanying desperately adores him, wishing to give her heart to him.”

"That's good!"

A smile blossomed on Qin Changyue’s face.

Sometimes, enthusiasm is also a burden.

Tang Xiu could feel the enthusiasm as well as cordiality from the Tangs, causing the majority of indifference as well as the cold and detached feeling he felt for them almost fade away.

He suddenly realized what Tang Guosheng had said prior to this was right:

“Tang Xiu, it doesn’t matter if you don’t want to recognize us. I know and understand as to why you deny us inside your heart. But even so, I believe that even if your heart is made of stone, everyone will still be able to melt your heart with our conducts and deeds hereafter. The Tangs’ offspring are the Tang Family’s descendants. We have never cut off our familial affection nor have we ever

abandoned and left our own blood behind.”

It was these words.

Prior to this, Tang Xiu couldn't care less and somewhat held disdain and contempt toward them. But at this moment, all sorts of feelings mixed inside him as his mood turned particularly complicated.

The thought to sever the relationship and return unceasingly mixed up.

While waiting, the Tangs chatted livelily and jokingly, most of which revolved around Tang Xiu and Su Lingyun. The praises, goodwill and affectionate words they showcased made Tang Xiu finally accept them silently.

Finally, when all Tangs returned, Tang Guosheng put all the Dragonfume Grasses in front of Tang Xiu and said, “Here's a total of thirty-six strains of Dragonfume Grass.”

Tang Xiu didn't speak for a moment before slowly saying, “It already exceeded my expectations to be able to find this many. It's sufficient! However, when I'm in the middle of treatment, everyone is strictly forbidden to make any disturbance. Even if the sky is collapsing, no one is to disturb us.”

In all seriousness, Tang Guosheng solemnly replied, “I'll mobilize the guards immediately to seal up the entire courtyard. Whoever

dares to disturb you will be shot to death.”

Nodding, Tang Xiu took the Dragonfume Grasses and went to a spacious hall. Aside from the bed, there was nothing else in the entire hall. Tang Yunde was lying on the bed still in a coma as his mother, Su Lingyun, sat on the bed, whispering something.

“Mom, you need to go out too.” Tang Xiu said in a low voice.

Su Lingyun stood up and said, deeply concerned, “Xiu’er, you must do everything you can. He’s your father, and blood is thicker than water.”

“Rest easy, Mom!” said Tang Xiu with a nod.

For awhile, Su Lingyun was silent. She looked at Tang Guosheng who was standing outside the door as well as the other Tang family members. With a look of hope, she said, “Xiu’er, before you treat your father, can you do one thing for me?”

“What?”

Tang Xiu was puzzled.

Su Lingyun said with all seriousness, “I want to hear you call him father.”

"..."



Tang Xiu fell into silence. The word was otherworldly strange to him.

Su Lingyun said bitterly, “Xiu’er, Mom knows that you don’t want to. But do it for me, please! He disappeared all of a sudden in the past because he suffered heavy losses and has been in a coma. I believe that if he’s well, he will never leave or abandon us, absolutely. Your father is not in the wrong, it has always been Mom. If in the past I had the courage to bring you to the Tang Family to see him, I believe that you could see your Dad since you were a child.”

Tang Xiu slowly turned around as his eyes landed on Tang Yunde’s thin body. He knew that his mother was right. Perhaps if Tang Yunde didn’t fall into a vegetative state suddenly, he wouldn’t have abandoned them.

He had never been in the wrong!

But that word, was actually very difficult for him to say.

“Xiu’er!

The longing and anticipation on Su Lingyun’s face increased.

Tang Xiu sighed inside. He looked at Tang Yunde on the bed and called out, “Father...”

Instantly, a bright smile bloomed on Su Lingyun's face along with a thick excitement. Glistening tears filled her eyes as she grabbed Tang Yunde's hand, tremblingly saying, "Yunde, did you hear it? Your son called you father! So you must be strong for me and your son. You must wake up."

At the room's door...

Tang Guosheng and the Tangs also showed joyful smiles. Since Tang Xiu called him father, it explained that the relationship between him and the Tang Family was undeniable.

Tang Xiu took a deep breath as he put his hands on Su Lingyun's shoulders and said, "Mom, I need to start the treatment. If I can save him, you'll be able to tell him when he wakes up!"

"Alright."

Su Lingyun loosened Tang Yunde and hurriedly walked toward the door.

"Let Chu Yi inside. I need his help in the treatment," said Tang Xiu.

Chu Yi squeezed out from the crowd as he rubbed his hands and smiled, "Cousin, what do you want me to do?"

Cousin?

Once again, Tang Xiu heard him call himself with such a remark. But he didn't correct his address, instead, said serenely, "I will start the treatment. If I don't finish the treatment within six hours, you come inside and lit a Dragonfume Grass. Do remember, after you lit the first one, you have to come inside and lit another one every half an hour and leave after you lit it."

"Isn't it better if I stay here?" asked Chu Yi.

Tang Xiu shook his head, "The fragrance of the Dragonfume Grass's smoke will be harmful to you. You'll fall unconscious if you inhale it too much."

"It's so potent?"

Although Chu Yi also heard Tang Ying say that, but he didn't expect that the effect would be so potent. He could doubt Tang Ying, but he'd never doubt Tang Xiu.

"Rest easy! I'll do it according to your instructions."

Tang Xiu nodded. After all the Tangs left and the door was closed, he took off his shoes and got on bed. Then he supported Tang Yunde to sit cross-legged in front him.

## Chapter 267: Exchanging Life for Life

---

Tang Xiu was well aware that treating Tang Yunde would heavily consume his mental force. In particular, the removal of those ash-gray substances blocking his mind sea and the brain ventricles, as well as the mass of coagulated blood, would require the complete coordination of his star force and spiritual sense. He was required to stay focused all the time, controlling the input of his star force and spiritual sense. All in all, the task was an enormous demanding necessity in itself.

Success meant that Tang Yunde would wake up and survive, and failure would result in his death.

Disappointing his mother was something that he never wanted. After all, for twenty years she had been suffering, and the good days she had always been painstakingly hoping for, had approached. Even if he had to brave the danger, Tang Xiu had to go all out.

Instantly piercing the silver needles on the acupoints in the middle of Tang Yunde's head, Tang Xiu's fingers pinched the needles and carefully inserted his star force into the acupuncture point. Along with the injection of star force, he guided his star force to enter Tang Yunde's brain. The coagulated blood must be cleared out first, and the nourishment to repair Tang Yunde's brain nerves must also be commenced afterward. Then he could eliminate that ash-grey substance slowly.

A thread, silk-like star force, under Tang Xiu's spiritual sense control, slowly seeped into the coagulated blood. It pierced and

recovered as the process repeated itself. Every time he took back his star force and spiritual sense, a trace of coagulated blood was extracted out.

Time passed by.

Tang Xiu's mental force had been concentrated to the limit, carrying the coagulated blood time and time again. An hour passed and one-fifth of the coagulated blood had been removed. Immediately after, Tang Xiu recovered his star force and spiritual sense and quickly pulled out the silver needles on top of Tang Yunde's head. He then released his spiritual sense to seep into the brain once more, wrapping the coagulated blood and extracting a little more.

Subsequently, he pierced the silver needles again in an instant, commencing the same previous procedures, and clearing up a little bit of the coagulated blood. Yet, along with the increase of speed, the cleaning of the coagulated blood congested inside Tang Yunde's brain had consumed a full four hours. Repairing Tang Yunde's brain nerves was as slow as before. While star force had a strong nourishing function, yet, Tang Xiu had spent another two full hours and could only repair 60% of the atrophied part of the brain nerves.

“It's about there!”

Thick sweat beads rolled down Tang Xiu's forehead, yet he didn't notice it. At this time, he could feel a burst of intermittent fatigue in his soul, causing him an enormous burden. However, he knew very well that the more critical the moment, the more he couldn't

relax. It was because the removal of the coagulated blood and the repairing of the brain nerves would lead to enormous burden to Tang Yunde's brain if his consciousness couldn't be released as fast as possible. The problems created in the past 20 years would bring about that heavy burden to the brain due to the sudden change.

Suddenly, a wisp of fragrance drilled into Tang Xiu's nose. Quickly, his spirit startled. He knew that Chu Yi had lit the Dragonfume Grass. As his spirit slowly recovered, he began to slowly remove the ash-gray substance that blocked Tang Yunde's mind sea and brain ventricle veins. These ash-gray substances were much more troublesome to clean up compared to the removal of the coagulated blood. It was inherently thicker, stickier and viscous. The process of removing these substances would require more effort and multiply the amount of mental force.

Half an hour later, Tang Xiu's complexion had already turned paler, as though a paper, while the removal of the ash-gray substances was less than one-twentieth done.

The door was gently pushed open as Chu Yi came inside soundlessly. His vision landed on Tang Xiu as his complexion slightly dazed, along with an aghast expression. Prior to this, although he saw that Tang Xiu looked to be straining a bit when he pinched the silver needle on the top of Tang Yunde's head to treat him, however, he didn't look as he was right now. Sweating all over his face, pale, lips turned purple and brows knitted together.

Having been silenced for a moment, he lit the Dragonfume Grass again and left the room.

Half an hour later, when Chu Yi came inside again, he found that Tang Xiu was not only sweating, looking pale again, even his body was somewhat shivering now. Worry and concern instantly grew inside his heart and could be seen on his face.

After he kindled another Dragonfume Grass, he left the room. At the outside, the members of the Tang Family were still waiting. Despite the tiredness that could be seen on their faces, yet no one left to rest.

As Tang Guosheng saw Chu Yi come out and readily shut the door, he asked with a heavy tone, "How is it?"

"I don't know, but..." Chu Yi hesitated for a moment and replied with an astringent expression.

"But what?" asked Tang Guosheng. His complexion slightly changed.

"Tang Xiu's condition is quite bad. He has sweat all over his face, he's pale and his body is trembling. It is as if he's in a very uncomfortable state," answered Chu Yi.

Instantly, all Tang Family members showed a look of worry and concern.

Su Lingyun asked hurriedly, "Xiu'er, he... he isn't in a dangerous state, right?"

“I don’t know,” shaking his head, Chu Yi replied.

Time fled by quickly.

Four hours later.

After Chu Yi lit the eleventh Dragonfume Grass, Tang Xiu’s slightly hoarse voice entered his ears, “Lit a strain for every ten minutes later.”

Chu Yi didn’t answer, but he firmly remembered it. This time his worry for Tang Xiu was raised to the extreme. At present, Tang Xiu hadn’t just sweat covering his face, there was no longer any rosiness on his complexion. The veins on his forehead protruded and his lips were no longer purple as there were a few cracks on them; there was even blood seeping from it. The trembling of his body was twice worse than before, looking as if he would fall into a coma at any time.

After hesitating, he quietly took out his mobile, taking a picture of Tang Xiu and Tang Yunde before he left the room quietly.

“It’s not finished yet?”

Tang Guosheng asked with worry all over his face

Shaking his head, Chu Yi took his mobile and said, “Grandpa, this is the picture I just took. Have a look at it!”



Tang Guosheng took the mobile. His body trembled as he saw Tang Xiu's appearance, disbelief appearing in eyes.

It was a very wretched and miserable appearance!

Never would he have thought that Tang Xiu would fall into such a miserable state in order to cure his son. In particular, blood was also seeping from Tang Xiu's dry and cracked lips, causing him to be slightly distressed.

"Let me see!"

Su Lingyun quickly grabbed the phone. When she saw Tang Xiu's appearance, it was as though her heart was pierced by a knife. Two lines of tears couldn't help rolling down. She wanted to rush inside and stop her son to stop the treatment, for fear that she would lose her son.

However, a wisp of reason told her to not to be impulsive. If she were to disturb her son, not only could her husband not be saved, her son would also be implicated.

The mobile was passing to the others Tang Family members. As they saw the picture, each and every one of them fell into silence. At the beginning, they showed approval for Tang Xiu because he was one of their blood. But speaking about familial affection, truth be told, there was not that much.

However, they no longer had such a thought at the moment. The reason as to why Tang Xiu asked them to find the Dragonfume Grass in advance, was perhaps because he already knew that he would face such a situation. Yet, he didn't hesitate to treat Tang Yunde with everything he got. This in itself showed that he was a genuine descendant of the Tang Family with heavy affections.

“Grandson!”

Seeing the picture, tears couldn't stop flowing from Qin Changyue's eyes. Her heart was as if twisted by a knife. 20 years had passed with this grandson of hers missing and she finally could see him, but never would she ever expected that he would fall into such a state.

Inside the room.

Tang Xiu had cleared up four-fifths of the ash-gray substances inside Tang Yunde's brain. However, he also had reached the limit as his mental force had been consumed. If he persevered, his mental force would be greatly implicated in a detrimental way. Yet, his tenacity and will had been tempered for 10,000 years, causing him to insist and persevere as before.

It was either he didn't do it or completely finish it, there was no other choice!

Tang Xiu bit the tip of his tongue. The tingling pain made him sober up again. However, the speed for the removal of the ash-gray substances would be slower later.

When Tang Xiu had treated Tang Yunde for about 27 hours, there was only one-tenth of the ash-gray substances left. At this very moment, he found that Tang Yunde's consciousness had broken through into his mind sea and regained control of his body.

“Don't move yet.”

With a hoarse and weak voice, Tang Xiu spoke to him.

At this moment, Tang Yunde felt that he was in a dream. He didn't know how much time had passed in the outside world. What he felt was that he had been trapped inside the endless darkness for a very long time. So long a time that he had forgotten how long, even nearly forgetting who he was. All these years, there had only been one obsession holding him together, supporting him as not to let his consciousness break apart and disperse, turning it into a mass-energy inside him.

The voice he heard, was a voice from a very young person!

The moment he opened his eyes, he saw Tang Xiu in a particularly miserable appearance sitting cross-legged in front him. As his eyes turned, he also saw the scene inside the room.

“Who are you?”

Tang Yunde's throat wriggled a few times as he spoke in a weak voice.

"Shut up!" Tang Xiu's hoarse voice sounded again.

Tang Yunde went silent. Even though he didn't know Tang Xiu, but he also realized that he was treating him. The endless darkness he had woken from was also the merit of the young man in front of him. Grateful, he kept silent and sat motionlessly.

32 hours passed.

The moment Tang Xiu cleared out the last remaining ash-gray substance, he finally couldn't suppress the flaring up blood inside as a mouthful of blood spurted out crazily. At the same time, all of his mental force and star force were thoroughly consumed. Blackness enshrouded his consciousness as his body fell to side the moment after and fell into a coma.

"You..."

Tang Yunde's clothes were stained red with Tang Xiu's blood. Yet, he was more worried about Tang Xiu's safety. After all, this person was the one who had saved him. He wanted to help support Tang Xiu, but his body was rigid, causing his movement to be very slow. This sort of weak feeling coming from his soul also made him feel quite dizzy and blackout.

Finally, the moment he touched Tang Xiu's arm, darkness filled his mind as he also fainted.

Outside the room.

The Tangs were finally unable to wait any longer. Some of them had gone to rest elsewhere, whereas some others sat directly on the bench, asleep. Tang Guosheng had rested for a while, and his eyes, that had been through the weather and storms of life, stared at the door. But at the side, Su Lingyun, who hadn't rested for more than 32 hours, had her eyes turned scarlet, looking very miserable. However, she still waited and prayed.

“Grandpa, shall I go inside again?”

Chu Yi squatted beside Tang Guosheng. He was also waiting in anxiousness and finally couldn't bear but ask.

After staying silence for a moment, Tang Guosheng nodded, “Remember, do not interrupt him.”

"Alright!"

Nodding, Chu Yi got up and rubbed his numb legs. Then, he walked toward the door. When he gently opened the door and saw the situation inside, his complexion changed instantly. He swiveled his head and said, “Grandpa, it's not good!”

## Chapter 268: His Life is not Guaranteed

---

Tang Guosheng quickly stood up from the chair with a pale complexion. He ran to the door and asked, “What happened?”

Chu Yi pointed inside and said tremblingly, “The treatment seems to have been finished, but Tang Xiu, he...”

Looking at the direction Chu Yi’s finger pointed at, Tang Guosheng saw that both Tang Yunde and Tang Xiu fainted on the bed. His heart pounded as he rushed into the room. After hearing it, Su Lingyun’s heart and throat were also stumped as she also rushed into the room, as did several other Tang Family members.

“He fell into a coma?”

Seeing Tang Xiu’s appearance, even though Tang Guosheng had a firm will, sparkling tears still fell down his eyes. The miserable condition Tang Xiu was in, it extremely distressed him.

“Xiu’er, Xiu’er, what has happened to you?”

Su Lingyun dashed to the bed, involuntarily bursting into tears.

The Tang Family members were also restless upon seeing that Tang Xiu had fallen into a coma. Never would they have expected that because Tang Xiu treated Tang Yunde, the both of them would fall into the same predicament. However, recalling how the treatment had lasted for more than thirty hours, admiration

towards Tang Xiu surged in their hearts.

Suddenly, Tang Guosheng turned around as he shouted sternly, “Invite Master Chen, quickly!”

Instantly, two members of the Tang Family ran outside.

Having a moment of silence, Tang Guosheng then stared at Chu Yi and asked, “Do you have Chen Zhizhong’s number?”

“Yes!” said Chu Yi quickly.

“Call him. I’ll talk to him personally,” said Tang Guosheng.

Star City.

Chen Zhizhong was accompanying several clients to a meal. Recently, the medicinal herbs business had been on fire, which made him quite happy every day. What made him happier was that his cultivation had been progressing rapidly.

“Ring, ring, ring...”

As his mobile rang, he grabbed it. Seeing that the caller was Chu Yi, he immediately let out a smile to his business clients and spoke, “All of you please have a drink first, I need to pick up this call.”

Having said that, he stood up and picked up the call, laughing, “Chu Yi, do you need something from me?”

“Tang Guosheng from Beijing’s Tang Family is speaking here.”

Tang Guosheng of the Tang Family?

Chen Zhizhong was stupefied and his complexion changed greatly. He strode out of the box and spoke in a respectful tone, “Old Sir Tang, I’m Chen Zhizhong. Do you have any instructions for me?”

“I heard that you’re Tang Xiu’s apprentice, yes?” asked Tang Guosheng in a low, deep tone.

“That’s right!” replied Chen Zhizhong.

“If you can, I hope you can rush to the capital immediately. My grandson fell into a coma after treating and curing a patient. His physical condition appears to be in a bad state. You run a medicinal herbs business, so I think I may need your help later,” said Tang Guosheng.

"Your grandson?"

Chen Zhizhong replied in a confused tone. How would his Master be related to Tang Guosheng’s grandson? Could it be that his Master’s elder was looking for him?



Tang Guosheng spoke in a deep tone, “Tang Xiu is my grandson. My biological grandson.”

“What?” Chen Zhizhong’s pupils contracted as he exclaimed without him realizing it. A disbelieving expression was cast on his face as his heart pounded and his heartbeat accelerated.

Tang Xiu is Tang Guosheng’s biological grandson? Heaven!

That said, is Tang Xiu then a descendant of the Tang Family from Beijing?

“Is there a problem?” asked Tang Guosheng in a deep voice.

Awoken from his shock, Chen Zhizhong quickly replied, “I’ll rush to the capital immediately. The matter with my Master is more important than mine!”

Hanging up the phone, Chen Zhizhong ran to the box. Looking at his several business partners, he said, “Gentlemen, I really apologize. Some private matters arose and I need to leave for Beijing in a hurry. It’s of the utmost importance and grave matter as it involves someone’s life. All of you please have a drink here, and wait until I have dealt with this matter. I’ll treat you again later to make up for this time.”

They nodded after hearing him.

On the way to the airport, Chen Zhizhong dialed Long Zhengyu and Ouyang Lulu's numbers. He knew that the both of them were Tang Xiu's best friends. As for Kang Xia, Chen Zhizhong didn't tell her, for he thought that she should have known the news about Tang Xiu's situation.

Star City, the Long Family's residence.

Long Zhengyu was accompanying his family for lunch. After receiving a phone call from Chen Zhizhong, even though he was shocked, worry about Tang Xiu filled his heart. He spoke to his parents and hurriedly rushed to the airport.

Jingmen Island.

Ouyang Lulu was in her sojourn in the Everlasting Feast Hall. Eating cakes and pastries in the pavilion, she happily watched Gu Xiaoxue play the zither in front of her.

"Ring, ring, ring..."

Her mobile rang and interrupted Gu Xiaoxue's zither play.

Ouyang Lulu knitted her brows in displeasure. Giving Gu Xiaoxue an apologizing expression, she then took her mobile. Seeing that it was Chen Zhizhong, most of the displeasure on her expression disappeared, laughing after picking up the call, "Uncle Chen, are you looking for me?"

A moment after, Ouyang Lulu hang up the phone with a blank expression, dazed.

Smiling, Gu Xiaoxue said softly, “What happened? You suddenly picked up the phone, how come you’re looking just like you just lost your soul?”

Ouyang Lulu shuddered. She suddenly jumped up from the stone bench and quickly called out, “It’s Tang Xiu! He has been injured and seem like that he has fallen into a coma. I gotta go to Beijing, now!”

Shocked, Gu Xiaoxue stared blankly before also standing up immediately. Her figure flashed toward Ouyang Lulu and asked anxiously, “What did you say? How is Grand Master injured and in a coma? Where is he right now?”

Suddenly, Ouyang Lulu remembered that Tang Xiu was also Gu Xiaoxue’s Grand Master. Without any hesitation, she quickly replied, “He’s in Beijing. Chen Zhizhong just called me, saying that Tang Xiu fell into a coma after having saved someone. That’s right. He’s also Tang Guosheng’s biological grandson of Beijing’s Tang Family.”

Tang Guosheng?

Gu Xiaoxue felt that the name was somewhat familiar, but she couldn’t care less about it. What concerned her the most was the safety of her Grand Master. Immediately, she spoke, “Lulu, let’s go to Beijing together.”

In Beijing.

The entire Tang Family was shocked due to Tang Xiu falling into a coma.

All Tangs contacted everyone in their network one after another as well as invited a lot of medical experts. But those medical experts could only shake their heads after examining Tang Xiu. Even the renowned sage Chinese medical doctor, Grandmaster Chen Tianhe, could only figure out the cause of Tang Xiu's coma due to him using and greatly consuming his mental force.

“Master Chen, you have to save my grandson. No matter how great the price, the Tang Family will pay it.” Suppressing his sorrow, Tang Guosheng stared at the gray-robed old man in front of him.

Chen Tianhe forced a smile and replied, “Old Tang, I know what you're thinking. But I can't do anything about his condition. His qi is been too weak and his vitality is also leaking out. If it continues like this... he will only live for a day at the most.”

“Is there anything else to alleviate it?” asked Tang Guosheng urgently.

For a moment, Chen Tianhe fell into silence, before he slowly said, “I do have a method of using acupuncture needles with moxibustion to stimulate his vital potential and arousing his qi. But this method is but only a temporary solution and can't

eliminate the root problem. At best, it will only allow him to live for two days more. If we can't find a solution in three days, I'm afraid..."

Tang Guosheng was about to speak as rapid footsteps outside the room came approaching. Then, Tang Yunpeng rushed into the room and shouted, "Father, Yunde has awoken."

"What?"

Tang Guosheng shuddered. But a trace of joy couldn't surpass the bitterness and pain inside his heart. His son had woken up at the price of exchanging the life of his own grandson. This was a price he could never afford. He turned around, looking at Su Lingyun that had fainted. He truly felt that this mother and son had truly lost for far too much.

"Master Chen, if we can keep him for two days then let's do it. I will find a way to cure my grandson no matter what it takes."

Chen Tianhe gently nodded. He took the silver needles and quickly started injecting them into Tang Xiu.

Sure enough, after executing the method, Tang Xiu's leaking out vitality slowed down.

Inside another room.

More than a dozen Tang Family members looked at the

awakening Tang Yunde with excited expressions. Qin Changyue had fallen to tears, pulling Tang Yunde into her embrace and didn't want to release him.

“Mother, I'm really fine. Please don't cry anymore. You can see that I'm awake now!” Tang Yunde squeezed out a smile. He slightly his body and could feel that his body was a lot better now.

Tang Min's eyes turned very red as she spoke in a low voice, “Second Big Brother. You've woken up. It's great, really great.”

At this time, Tang Yunde already knew that he had been in a coma for twenty years. Even though he felt that it was rather a miracle that he was awake, the excitement from his family members filled him with happiness. Suddenly, he recalled the young man who had saved him and quickly asked, “Ah, right. When I woke up, I saw the young man who saved me vomiting a mouthful of blood and fainting. How is he right now?”

In an instant, the Tang Family members looked at each other in dismay, but nobody knew how to respond.

Qin Changyue wept yet again for a while. She wiped her tears and sobbed, “Son! D-Do you know that the person who has saved you is your own son? B-but he... he's in a very very bad condition now.”

“What? He's... my... my son?”

Tang Yunde recalled. He remembered that his wife had been

pregnant before he fell into a coma. But never would he have dreamt that the first person, the young man he first saw after he woke up from his coma turned out to be his son.

“Mother, h-he... what happened to him?”

Tang Yunde asked with a somewhat shivering voice.

Tang Min replied instead of his mother, “Our family has invited a lot of well-known doctors, yet they are also helpless about his condition. They said that... due to excessive consumption of his mental force, his life is in grave danger.”

"Take me to see him."

Tang Yunde struggled to stand up.

Two minutes later.

Being propped by his relatives, Tang Yunde came to the room where Tang Xiu fell into a coma. When he heard from his father, Tang Guosheng, and the sage Chinese medical doctor, Chen Tianhe, about the situation his son was in, he wept into tears. He also hugged the fainted Su Lingyun along with tears that couldn't stop flowing from his eyes.

In Beijing, all the big respected families, all the rich and powerful great figures, even those who were at the topmost pyramid of power and authorities, had all received the news that the Tang

Family had just found the grandson they had been missing for 20 years. Just as they were amazed that the Tang Family secretly added another member to their ranks, a heavy news spread out yet again: The descendant of the Tang Family who was a divine doctor working at the Star City Chinese Medical Hospital, had rescued his own father who had fallen into a coma for 20 years, and now he himself fell into a coma while his own life was also in question.

Right at this time, those in the topmost of power in the country, one after another, had all contacted Tang Guosheng to inquire about Tang Xiu's condition, conveying their condolences and comfort. At the same time, a lot of top-famous doctors across the country had also received invitations from the Tang Family to rush over to Beijing.



# Chapter 269: Martial Arts Master

---

Beijing, Tang Family's residence.

Full of expectation, Tang Guosheng welcomed the famous doctors that came one after another, yet disappointment covered his face as he sent them off later, including sage Chinese medical doctor, Chen Tianhe.

In the courtyard of Tang Family's residence.

Chen Zhizhong and Long Zhengyu looked at the eager yet restless expression on the faces of Tang Family's members. The sight made them sigh inwardly. After they arrived, they finally learned everything, that Tang Xiu had just recently discovered his identity as a descendant of the Tangs.

At this time, Su Lingyun had already awakened and tightly walked arm in arm alongside Tang Yunde. A tense and restless expression could be seen on her face. Inside her heart, she was deeply regretting letting her son treat her husband. If not for her son treating her husband, he wouldn't have fallen into such a grave danger, while her husband, even though he was in a coma back then, but at least he would still be alive.

“Continue spreading the news that whoever can cure my grandson, my Tang Family will give a reward of one billion Yuan.” Tang Guosheng pinched off the cigarette butt as he shouted with a heavy tone.

All the Tang Family members who were inside the courtyard had solemn expressions. No one dared to go against Tang Guosheng's words. Even they themselves thought that if they had to choose between one billion yuan and Tang Xiu's life, they would also choose the latter.

At the lane's entrance in front of the courtyard.

Gu Xiaoxue and Ouyang Lulu's car was intercepted. Four soldiers in military uniforms and fully armed were looking at them with an extremely cold and indifferent expression.

"We're Tang Xiu's friends. Please open and make way for us quickly." Ouyang Lulu stood in front of the four soldiers and cried out in anger.

"I'm sorry, Miss. No one can enter without the chief's order!" One of the soldiers shook his head and replied coldly.

"Then why don't you quickly rush inside and tell them that we're Tang Xiu's friends. We must see him!" said Ouyang Lulu.

Coldness flashed inside Gu Xiaoxue's eyes. She didn't want to lose time. Even if the people in front were from the army, she couldn't care less. Her figure flashed and appeared in front of two soldiers. Her palm struck out as though a blade. The two soldiers could only see blackness in front of them, fainting in an instant.

"Motherf\*cker!"

The other two soldiers reacted very fast upon seeing Gu Xiaoxue move. They immediately opened the bolt. Just as they were about to pull the trigger, Gu Xiaoxue had already flashed in front of them and hit their foreheads lightning fast, causing them to faint.

“Enemy assault!”

In the alley, the complexions of the other two soldiers in uniform changed greatly. Flashing toward Gu Xiaoxue and Ouyang Lulu, they loaded bullets into their guns and aimed the muzzles at the two women.

However, even though the distance between these two soldiers and the other two fainted ones were more than ten meters, darkness also befell unto them, instantly making them faint. Yet, their roars alarmed a lot of guards nearby. Within just a few breaths, more than ten security guards quickly rushed there.

“Get lost!”

In between the turn of her hands, a soft sword suddenly appeared in Gu Xiaoxue’s hand. Along with the movement of her footsteps, she moved unceasingly. Her soft sword moved in a trajectory and speed that surpassed the ability that naked eyes could capture. It moved as though a spirit snake, striking at the guards’ wrists. By the time their wrists were scratched, the guns in their hands were also seized by her as she threw them into the distance.

"Bang, bang..."

Dozens of shots were fired.

Inside the courtyard.

Tang Guosheng's complexion changed greatly as everyone else in the courtyard was also shocked. Never did they expect that someone would dare to make a ruckus in the Tang Family's residence, even making the guards outside fire their guns.

"Yunpeng, see what's happening."

Tang Guosheng looked grim and shouted sternly.

Tang Yunpeng complied and ran toward the outside. As he came to the front courtyard, he saw two guards in military uniform flying into the courtyard from the outside as their bodies smashed down heavily on the hard concrete floor.

"I'm Tang Yunpeng, who are you?"

Gu Xiaoxue snorted coldly. Her figure vanished instantly. As she appeared again, she was in front of Tang Yunpeng. Her onion-white slender fingers grabbed Tang Yunpeng's throat and said in a cold voice, "No matter who you are, take me to see my Grand Master immediately. Otherwise, I'll kill without mercy!"

Tang Yunpeng, who had his throat grabbed, was horrified and

panicked. A chill struck his heart. The girl was twenty meters away from him, but she was able to move in a flash, appearing in front of him. It was like god's ability in the myths-Teleport.

“Y-you... who is your Grand Master?”

Knitting her brows, Gu Xiaoxue replied in a cold voice, “Tang Xiu!”

Tang Yunpeng could feel the power in her hand reduce a lot and quickly said, “Tang Xiu is your Grand Master? I'll immediately take you to see him!”

For a moment, Gu Xiaoxue was still. She then released Tang Yunpeng, waving toward Ouyang Lulu who was running toward the entrance, “Let's go! They will never be able to hurt you.”

"Alright!"

It was the first time Ouyang Lulu saw Gu Xiaoxue act. Her lightning fast speed and ruthless actions had greatly shocked her. She knew that Gu Xiaoxue was a martial artist, yet she had never thought that Gu Xiaoxue would be this fearsome.

This... was just like the martial arts masters in the TV series.

“Clomp, clomp, clomp...”

Rapid footsteps approached quickly as dozens of armed soldiers in camouflage uniforms rushed into the courtyard with dark muzzles aimed at Gu Xiaoxue and Ouyang Lulu.

Tang Yunpeng took a deep breath and shouted in a heavy tone, “DON’T SHOOT!”

An officer ran toward Tang Yunpeng and saluted, “Chief, we did poorly in protecting you. They broke into the courtyard. Please punish us!”

Tang Yunpeng had seen how fearsome Gu Xiaoxue was. Despite there being dozens of soldiers armed with guns pointing at her, yet he still didn’t have the slightest sense of feeling secure. After staying silent for a moment, he growled, “Go out and continue standing guard. As for you two, please follow me!”

Quickly, Gu Xiaoxue and Ouyang Lulu followed Tang Yunpeng to the backyard.

“Ouyang Lulu? How are you here?”

Seeing her, Long Zhengyu was astonished and greeted her.

With a bit of worry on her face, Ouyang Lulu quickly asked, “Zhengyu, how is Tang Xiu? I heard he’s injured. How is he now? Where is he?”

Looking at her anxious expression, Long Zhengyu turned and

looked at Tang Guosheng, saying bitterly, “He’s still in a coma and have yet to come out from danger.”

Seeing the two girls coming inside, Tang Guosheng’s brows wrinkled as he growled at Tang Yunpeng, “What happened outside just now?”

A slightly wry and forced smile appeared on Tang Yunpeng’s face. He glanced at the cold and detached Gu Xiaoxue and said, “It’s because of the both of them. They rushed inside forcefully, wounding a dozen guards.”

What?

Right at this moment Tang Guosheng thought that his ears were having problems. Everyone else in the courtyard also looked at each other in dismay, disbelief on their faces.

These two belles so outrageously broke inside and also injured a dozen guards?

What joke was this?

How could it be possible that such delicate and weak-looking girls were able to injure dozens of guards? One must know that those guards were armed with guns, and the series of gunshots just now had absolutely scared them!

Gu Xiaoxue’s cold and detached vision swept over at everyone,

saying with a cold voice, “Tell me, where is my Grand Master?”

Grand Master?

The complexion of a dozen Tang Family members changed as the astonished and shocked expression on their faces turned thicker.

Chen Zhizhong’s expression changed and quickly replied, “Who are you? I’m Chen Zhizhong, Tang Xiu’s disciple.”

Gu Xiaoxue’s brows pricked. A slightly respectful expression emerged on her face as she cupped her fist and said, “Xiaoxue sees Martial Uncle.”

“Your Master is?” puzzle, Chen Zhizhong, asked.

Shaking her head, Gu Xiaoxue said, “If Grand Master has yet to tell you, it’s not in my rights to say it. Where’s Grand Master now? I need to see his condition.”

Chen Zhizhong turned to Tang Guosheng.

Although Tang Guosheng didn’t understand why Chen Zhizhong acknowledged Tang Xiu as a Master as well as was clueless as to how Gu Xiaoxue became his grandson’s grand disciple, yet he still replied in a deep tone, “Tang Xiu is in the side hall. I’ll take you to see him. Everyone else, you are to wait outside.”



Ouyang Lulu quickly said, “I’m going too.”

Glancing at her deeply, Tang Guosheng then nodded.

A moment after, Tang Guosheng along with Gu Xiaoxue and Ouyang Lulu arrived at the side hall. As the two woman saw Tang Xiu lying in a coma on the bed, Ouyang Lulu quickly rushed to the bed and shouted, “Tang Xiu, wake up!”

“Don’t shout, it’s useless!”

Tang Guosheng shook his head and spoke whilst suppressing the sorrow inside his heart.

Grabbing Tang Xiu’s wrist, Gu Xiaoxue checked his pulse. Half a minute later, her complexion turned unsightly, “Exhausting his mental force and excessive consumption of his spiritual force. His vitality and qi are also leaking out.”

“Miss, you learnt medical skills?” eyes turning bright, Tang Guosheng asked quickly.

Gu Xiaoxue was silent for a moment and then said, “All of you go out and do not let anyone disturb me. Do remember that nobody is allowed to come inside before I go out.”

“Understood! We’ll immediately leave,” said Tang Guosheng quickly on hearing it.

Ouyang Lulu hurriedly asked, “Sister Xue, can you heal Tang Xiu?”

“It shouldn’t be a problem,” replied Gu Xiaoxue serenely.

A pleasantly surprised expression immediately appeared on Ouyang Lulu’s face as she then followed Tang Guosheng out.

Outside the room.

Tang Guosheng shouted in a heavy tone, “Listen up everyone. Without my order, no one is allowed inside. Only that young lady is allowed there. She’s going to treat my grandson.”

“Can she treat him?” Su Lingyun suddenly sat up and asked nervously.

“I don’t know, but she said that it won’t be a problem for her,” shaking his head, Tang Guosheng replied.

Clenching her fist tightly, Su Lingyun’s tears fell again. She was praying inwardly for the blessing of God. If her son could awake and recover, even if she had to die, she was willing to accept it.

Suddenly, her eyes landed on Ouyang Lulu. She then probed, “Miss, what’s the relationship between you and my son?”

Son?

In an instant, Ouyang Lulu knew who Su Lingyun was. Her face blushed as she hurriedly bowed, “Hello Auntie! I-I am... Tang Xiu’s friend. We have a good relationship.”

Nodding and giving her a grateful look, Su Lingyun said, “Thank you for being able to come over. My son is really blessed to have a friend like you.”

She didn’t notice that everyone else in the courtyard looked somewhat strange upon seeing Ouyang Lulu’s appearance. Just now, they clearly saw Ouyang Lulu acting like a daughter-in-law.

## Chapter 270: Awakening

---

Inside the room, Gu Xiaoxue took off her shoes and sat cross-legged behind Tang Xiu, putting her hands on his back and transferring her True Essence into his body.

“Huh, what happened?”

After transferring her True Essence energy for half a minute, Gu Xiaoxue retracted her hands. Tang Xiu’s body was actually repelling her True Essence energy. Originally, she wanted to use True Essence to heal Tang Xiu. But not only it had been ineffective, it even backfired, worsening Tang Xiu’s condition.

“Could it be that Grand Master’s cultivation technique doesn’t cultivate True Essence? But if it’s not True Essence, how can I save him? By using the Blood Sacrifice Art on him?”

Gu Xiaoxue’s complexion changed constantly as an hesitating expression flashed in her eyes. The Blood Sacrifice Art could indeed treat Tang Xiu, but it would be greatly detrimental to her. Not only would it reduce her lifespan, her cultivation speed would also be affected.

After pondering for a while, Gu Xiaoxue finally made up her mind and used the Blood Sacrifice Art to treat Tang Xiu. After all, Tang Xiu was her Grand Master and the person her Master cared the most.

“Heaven and Earth bestow the profoundness. Devour the blood

to revive life.”

Biting her fingertips, Gu Xiaoxue's ten fingers made several finger seals. Forcing out a drop of blood essence from her body, she imprinted the blood along with the finger seals onto the spot between Tang Xiu's eyebrows. A profound and mysterious aura arose between the Heaven and Earth as it fused into the drop of blood essence forced out by Gu Xiaoxue and seeped into the middle of Tang Xiu's eyebrows.

Immediately, her body floated in midair and instantly appeared on top of Tang Xiu's head. Along with the turning of her body upside down, her palm pressed on Tang Xiu's top of the head as a thread of her innate qi was as though crossing over into Tang Xiu's body.

After doing all these, her complexion turned a bit pale. Her figure instantly flashed and appeared in front of Tang Xiu. Sitting cross-legged, she closed her eyes and adjusted her breathing. At present, she had surpassed the path of the Golden Core but had yet to break the core and birth a Nascent embryo. However, forcing out a drop of her blood essence and using the Blood Sacrifice Art was rather a great loss for her because, at the least, more than ten years of her lifespan had been reduced.

At this time, Tang Xiu's life force that had been leaking out suddenly had a mass of strong life force burst out from his heart. Gu Xiaoxue's life force from her drop of blood essence contained a huge energy and was much stronger than all the energy from Tang Xiu's cultivation.

Thump!

Thump, thump!

As the strength of his heartbeat was getting stronger, the force of the stars and the sun from the distant blue dome of heaven began to drift away from all directions and fused into his body. The originally dried up star force began to condensate a bit as Tang Xiu finally recovered little by little.

Yet, the profound and mysterious aura rapidly left the drop of life and blood essence and fused into Tang Xiu's mind sea. Right at this moment, Tang Xiu's consciousness, that had fallen into the darkness, finally woke up from the chaos. As his consciousness recovered and proliferated throughout his body, he found the drop of lifeblood essence, his complexion suddenly changing.

He knew perfectly well about the condition of his body.

But that drop of lifeblood essence came from the outside, and he knew that someone had used the Blood Sacrifice Art to save his life. Not having enough time to ponder on whom had saved him, his consciousness began to settle down as Tang Xiu silently circulated his cultivation technique, the "Heavenly Art of Cosmic Genesis".

Time fled and three days had passed.

When Tang Xiu's eyelids jittered and he opened his eyes, he saw

one person sitting cross-legged in front him, holding her chin without blinking an eye-Gu Xiaoxue.

Was she the person who had saved him?

Tang Xiu's facial expression slightly moved. His face was somewhat still pale, but he showed a slight faint smile and blinked at Gu Xiaoxue. Speaking in a hoarse voice, he asked, "Did you use the Blood Sacrifice Art to save me?"

Seeing Tang Xiu opening his eyes, Gu Xiaoxue dazed a bit. When she saw Tang Xiu blink and speak, she immediately called out in pleasant surprise, "Grand Master, you've finally awoken? I thought it'd take a long time for you to wake up! Yes. I did use the Blood Sacrifice Art because I found that Grand Master's body refuses True Essence energy."

It was really her!

Secretly sighing, Tang Xiu then smiled, "My cultivation technique is somewhat special so it will reject the others' True Essence energy. Thus, it would be useless for you try to heal me with True Essence energy. Xiaoxue, I really have to thank you for this time. If you didn't use the Blood Sacrifice Art to treat me, I might have died already."

Raising her small face, Gu Xiaoxue smiled, "This is what I'm supposed to do, Grand Master!"

Tang Xiu nodded and looked at the surrounding, realizing that he was still inside the side hall Tang Guosheng provided him for the treatment. But at the moment, there was no trace of Tang Guosheng. The smile on his face faded away as he asked in a low voice, "Where are we now?"

"Beijing, Tang Family's residence," answered Gu Xiaoxue.

Tang Xiu asked in astonishment, "How did you find me?"

"The Tang Family spread the news all over the country, inviting numerous doctors to treat you. They promised to pay no matter the cost whoever was able to heal you. The Chen family head, Martial Uncle Chen, called Ouyang Lulu. At that time she was sojourning in the Everlasting Feast Hall, hence I also got the news."

The Tang Family...

Tang Xiu's browed knitted as it then smoothed a moment after.

They would pay whatever the price?

Such a commitment was truly heavy!

Despite Tang Xiu still having some feelings of rejection toward the Tang Family, but at this moment, he had to admit that the Tang Family had indeed treated him as a genuine family member. Now, he finally believed that everything that Tang Guosheng had



said was truly true, that they had indeed attempted to find them.

“It’s a pointless insistence, and no longer makes sense.

Since the Tang Family really treats mother and me as family members, then let nature take its course.

It’s too short a time to tell, but I’ll see it later on.

It doesn’t matter what we call each other, the most important thing is to see how we get along in the future.

I shouldn’t make Mom feel awkward and embarrassed.”

"..."

Ideas crossed Tang Xiu’s mind one after another. After getting out of the bed and wearing his shoes, he looked at Gu Xiaoxue and asked, “How did you and Ouyang Lulu come here?”

“Via Lulu’s private jet,” answered Gu Xiaoxue.

Tang Xiu asked again, “Ouyang Lulu? Where’s she now?”

Shaking her head, Gu Xiaoxue said, “I don’t know. I never left this side hall on these three days. However, she’s very worried about you, so she should still be in this Tang Family’s residence.”

Tang Xiu nodded. When he opened the door along with Gu Xiaoxue, in an instant, dozens of Tang Family members gathered ecstatically. Su Lingyun rushed over and flew herself to him as she fell into tears out of extreme happiness.

“Mom, I’m fine,” slightly smiling, Tang Xiu patted her back gently and comforted her.

At the side, sitting in a wheelchair as his mobility was still somewhat inconvenient, a look of excitement emerged on Tang Yunde’s face. His eyes tightly locked on Tang Xiu, observing him closely. Nobody had a more complicated mood than he had. All sorts of feelings, all joys and sorrows of life, all of them bubbled up and filled his heart and mind.

However, as emotional as he was, Tang Yunde was mostly feeling ashamed and guilty.

He had never been a father. He didn’t raise him up!

If it was merely this, that was it. But in order to save him, his son almost lost his own life. As tough as he was, he couldn’t speak even after opening his mouth a few times.

Standing at Tang Yunde’s side, Tang Guosheng patted his shoulder. As his vision shifted from Tang Xiu to the slim Gu Xiaoxue, he said gratefully, “Miss Gu, I truly have to thank you for everything. You have saved my grandson’s life. No matter what you wish for, the Tang Family will absolutely fulfill it as long as it

is within our abilities.”

“Saving my Grand Master is my duty. I don’t wish for anything, and the Tang Family need not repay me,” Gu Xiaoxue replied serenely.

Tang Xiu pushed Su Lingyun away gently, wiping the tears from her face. He then looked at Tang Guosheng and Tang Yunde. His sight finally landed on the excited and tearful Qin Changyue, “Grandma, I’m hungry. Please ask someone to cook something for me!”

Grandma?

Qin Changyue was stunned. A hard-to-believe expression appeared in her tearful eyes, but in an instant, it was replaced with an ecstatic expression. It was the feeling of being in a dream for her, since her grandson—Tang Xiu, who had always rejected recognizing the Tang Family unexpectedly called her 'grandmother'.

“Alright, G-grandma... grandma will cook for you myself.”

The other Tang Family members also showed pleasantly surprised expressions. This represented Tang Xiu’s willingness, finally accepting the Tang Family and recognizing all of them and himself as a Tang Family member.

As Qin Changyue left, Tang Xiu then looked at Tang Yunde and

said calmly, “Father, since you have woken up, let’s go back to Star City after dinner! Mom has waited for you for twenty years, I hope you won’t disappoint her later.”

Being called ‘father’ by Tang Xiu, a warm feeling filled Tang Yunde’s heart as tears streamed down his face. Nodding heavily, he replied with all seriousness, “Rest assured, son. I’ll use the rest of my remaining years in life to compensate you and your mother.”

Half an hour later, Tang Xiu and Gu Xiaoxue had eaten and drunk enough.

Qin Changyue, who sat beside him, looked quite satisfied as she saw that the food she cooked had nearly been cleaned up by Tang Xiu. The moment Tang Xiu put his chopsticks down, she quickly asked, “Grandson, are you full already?”

“Yes, grandma!” Tang Xiu nodded.

Pleased, Qin Changyue nodded in satisfaction and smiled, “If you like grandma’s food, I’ll do the cooking for you every day later.”

Tang Xiu shook his head, “Grandma, I still have important things to do. I need to go to Jingmen Island and following that, I’ll also go abroad. I’ll be back here when Shanghai University’s classes have started.”

Qin Changyue was surprised, “You will go abroad?”

Tang Xiu nodded and didn't give more explanation. He then turned toward Tang Guosheng, "Grandpa, we'll go first."

"Can it be delayed?" asked Tang Guosheng.

Tang Xiu asked back, "Is there something else?"

Tang Guosheng said, "Since you're here, I already planned to let you pay homage to the ancestors tomorrow as well as include you and your mother in the family tree. If you have something thing to do, you can leave after paying homage to the ancestors tomorrow."

Pondering for a moment, Tang Xiu then slowly nodded, "Alright! I will have to trouble you to arrange rooms for Xiaoxue and Lulu."

"No problem!"

Tang Guosheng replied immediately with a happy expression.

At night!

Tang Xiu, Gu Xiaoxue, Ouyang Lulu, and even Zhizhong and Long Zhengyu were all staying in the Tang Family's residence. But Tang Yunpeng himself booked a dining hall in an upscale restaurant nearby and prepared eight tables to celebrate Tang Yunde having regained consciousness as well as Tang Xiu's safety and speedy recovery.

# Chapter 271: Settling Placement

---

The next day.

Tang Guosheng personally presided over the process of ancestors' veneration for Tang Xiu and Su Lingyun, arranging the ancestors' worship position as well as recording the names of both of them in the Tang Family tree.

Immediately after, Tang Xiu took his parents to board Ouyang Lulu's private jet and directly flew to Star City. Chen Zhizhong and Gu Xiaoxue were also coming together with them. But Tang Xiu and Long Zhengyu drove his Land Rover SUV back to Star City at high speed while Tang Xiu drove all the way to Qinghe County toward the Su Village, checking on his grandmother and fetching Su Ben and Su Quan, then going back to Star City again.

South Gate Town.

When Tang Yunde entered the grand villa, he was shocked. Although he knew from his wife that his son, Tang Xiu, made a lot of money and now lived in a large villa, but he was still stupefied, because he had never imagined that the villa would turn out to be so luxurious.

"Grandma!"

Gu Yin was sitting on the sofa in the living room, listening to music. As she saw Su Lingyun entering the living room, she was pleasantly surprised and quickly removed her headset and ran

over.

At the opposite side of the sofa, Kang Xia was also there. She was reading a financial magazine when she heard Gu Yin's shout and was also surprised. She knew from Gu Yin that the one she called grandmother was none other than Tang Xiu's mother.

Looking ahead, Kang Xiu realized that a lot of people were entering the living room.

Smiling, Su Lingyun loosened her hands pushing the wheelchair. She directly hugged Gu Yin, "Yinyin dear, have you been a good girl?"

"Of course, Yinyin is always a good girl. Grandma, I missed you," Gu Yin laughed.

Su Lingyun stroked her hair, smiling. After that, she put her down on the floor. Pointing at Tang Yunde on the wheelchair, she spoke, "Yinyin, he's your Master's father. You may call him Grandpa."

Gu Yin was stunned, observing Tang Yunde curiously. She then called out in a well-behaved manner, "Grandpa, have you been good? I'm Gu Yin, you can call me Yinyin."

Tang Yunde had long since learned about Gu Yin and replied with a smile, "Hi, Yinyin. Later on, we're all one family."

Gu Yin looked up and then gazed back at Su Lingyun.

Su Lingyun nodded to her and then greeted Kang Xia. It was her first time seeing Kang Xia. After hesitating for a moment, she said, “And you are...”

Recalling what had happened and the relationship between her and Tang Xiu, Kang Xia was felt somewhat disturbed. However, at this moment, she also saw Ouyang Lulu and Gu Xiaoxue behind, her mood turning complicated. She knew that Ouyang Lulu liked Tang Xiu, but she had never thought that aside from her, there was also another more fairy-like woman. Slightly hesitating, she quickly calmed herself and put away her complicated emotions, replying with a smile, “Hi, Auntie. Hi, Uncle. I’m Kang Xia.”

Su Lingyun suddenly understood and seized her hands quickly as she smiled, “Ah, so you’re Kang Xia! Xiu’er and Yinyin often tell me about you, but I’ve yet to see you. You’re truly beautiful and thoughtful. My son told me that you’re the one who manages the business, making you very busy. It’s really laborious for you, isn’t it?”

Feeling Su Lingyun’s amicable demeanor, Kang Xia’s smile got brighter. “This is what I’m supposed to do, Auntie!”

“About the business issues, it’s your and Xiu’er’s matter. But we’ve left Star City for so many days, while you’re apparently also taking care of Yinyin. In this regard, I really can’t thank you enough.”



Kang Xia modestly returned the pleasantries.

Immediately after, Su Lingyun also introduced her to Ouyang Lulu and Gu Xiaoxue. When she learned that Kang Xia and Ouyang Lulu already knew each other, she no longer said anything.

Originally, as Kang Xia saw that Su Lingyun had come back, she was ready to leave. But then, after Su Lingyun learned that she was having her day off, she insisted on her staying. With such intimate and warm manner, Kang Xia was unable to refuse it.

In the afternoon, Tang Xiu had returned to South Gate Town and found that aside from Chen Zhizhong, everyone else was in his home. After chatting with everyone for a while, he then called Kang Xia to his bedroom on the second floor.

“Boss, I’m not happy with you.”

As Kang Xia closed the bedroom’s door, she spoke with a bit of dissatisfaction on her beautiful face, pouting as though a young girl.

“How so?” asked Tang Xiu, puzzled.

“I already know that you treated Uncle Tang, and you almost lost your life. But the others, including Ouyang Lulu, knew about it, but I heard nothing.”

Shaking his head, Tang Xiu smiled, “It was too sudden a matter,

whereas you yourself have a lot of things to manage in Star City. Hence, they didn't tell you. But anyways, I'm okay now, so you can put down your worry."

Kang Xia scoffed. She then came to Tang Xiu's side, held his arm and said, "Later on, you're not allowed to encounter any dangers again. Even if you don't care, but please do it for me... for the sake of our Magnificent Tang Corporation also. You're the Big Boss, what will happen if you got on an accident? How will I manage it?"

Tang Xiu and Kang Xia had gotten into an intimate relationship, so he didn't reject her intimacy. Instead, he patted her arm and laughed, "Rest easy! I'll certainly pay attention to my safety in the future. Anyways, the reason I called you is that I need to tell you something."

"What?" asked Kang Xia curiously.

"Firstly, I'll be going to Jingmen Island and then abroad directly from there. If all goes well, I'll be back within 10 to 15 days. If there are special circumstances, I'm afraid it'll have to wait until September 1st for the Shanghai University starting classes," said Tang Xiu.

Kang Xia had already known that Tang Xiu was going to the private island he had bought. Thus, she nodded, "Don't worry, I'll take good care of the company, Auntie and Uncle. I'll be there if there's anything they need."

Nodding, Tang Xiu then asked the matter he wanted to know the

most, “What about the winery? Is Scarblade Qiang done with the winemaking?”

Upon hearing it, Kang Xia’s eyes turned bright immediately and said happily, “He’s done brewing, and the taste is better than the previous ones. That good wine... absolutely can be called the world’s finest. Also, I’ve thought of the brand name for the wine. It will be called “Gods’ Nectar”. The other company leaders and I have also discussed the fixed price for it, 18888 yuan per bottle.”

Tang Xiu laughed, “The price is just. We have just set up the winery. The scale is too small and the wine production will be limited. Thus, we have to take the high-end route. In addition, of our company’s several products, the drinks will be the most profitable products entering the market. As for the promotion, marketing and sales, it will be yours to manage.”

Hearing that, Kang Xia also laughed happily, “Anyways, by September 15th this year, a three-years event of domestic Wine Tasting Conference will also be held in Shanghai, so I’ll be taking our Gods’ Nectar to participate in the event. I’m sure that it will be a sensational blockbuster. Also, I’ve decided to set the sales date for the Gods’ Nectar on September 18th.”

Whilst walking toward the cloakroom, Tang Xiu then said, “You call the shots for this decision.”

Having gotten Tang Xiu’s approval, Kang Xia felt happy and sweet. She followed him to the cloakroom. As she saw that Tang Xiu was about to change clothes, she quickly asked, “Boss, when will you go to Jingmen Island?”

“After the dinner. I’ll also bring Yinyin with me. Ah, right. I also have brought along Su Ben and Su Quan from my hometown, Qinghe County. Put them to work as security guards on the winery first. I grew up with them so I know their personalities. Su Ben is an upright and honest, consistent and diligent person. He’s a good candidate to be trained as a Security Captain. As for Su Quan, he’s a smart, creative one. Place him in the security corps first. After a period of time, transfer him to the company’s Sales Department and let him start from the bottom. If his performance is good, promote him properly.”

"Understood!" replied Kang Xia with a nod.

Tang Xiu swiftly picked a few pieces of underwear and a casual jacket and stuffed them into his suitcase as well as putting a few pairs of shoes and socks into it and pulled the zipper. He then turned around to look at Kang Xia, saying, “If there’s nothing else, you can go down! I wanna take a bath and change my clothes.”

A smile was revealed on the corner of Kang Xia’s mouth. She moved away from the door and asked, “Do you want me to rub your back for you?”

“You wanna bath with me? No problem. Buy some clothes for changing over, so when you want to have a couple’s bath, then come to find me,” said Tang Xiu with an odd expression.

“Bah... who the hell wants to have a couple’s bath with you?”

Kang Xia's attractive face blushed as she quickly turned around and left.

In fact, she was indeed tempted. After they had slept together, that taste of climaxing kept appearing inside her. However, there were Tang Xiu's parents, Ouyang Lulu and Gu Xiaoxue downstairs. Even if her skin turned thicker, it was impossible for her.

At evening, Tang Xiu and everyone else had dinner at home. Then, he took Gu Yin along with Ouyang Lulu and Gu Xiaoxue to Star City Airport and boarded Ouyang Lulu's private jet to Jingmen Island.

Counting the days, he hadn't been back to Jingmen Island for about one or two months, and he also didn't see Yan'er in this period of time. Sitting comfortably on the private jet's couch, Tang Xiu looked through the windows the dark sky outside. An eager and anxious mood suddenly emerged inside his heart as he wanted to see Gu Yan'er as well as accompanying her to chat.

It was 9PM when the private jet landed at Jingmen Island's Airport.

Having exited from the Airport, Tang Xiu suddenly stopped. Looking at Ouyang Lulu, he then said, "Lulu, thanks for going to the Capital to see me. I won't say anymore thanks, but I will treat you to a meal after getting back from abroad."

After hesitating, Ouyang Lulu suddenly asked, "Tang Xiu, what is the relationship between you and Kang Xia?"

With a serene expression, Tang Xiu replied, “It’s just a relationship between a boss and his employee.”

Even though Ouyang Lulu somewhat didn’t believe it, but she still nodded. Her mood was quite bad since she saw Kang Xia in Tang Xiu’s home in South Gate Town. She always wanted to find an opportunity to ask about it but held it back until now, as she then finally asked him.

After having parted ways.

A car from Everlasting Feast Hall came to fetch them. When Tang Xiu, Gu Yin, and Gu Xiaoxue had boarded, Gu Xiaoxue then spoke with a strange expression flashing in her eyes, “Grand Master, Lulu likes you.”

## Chapter 272: The Feelings Between Master and Disciple

---

Whilst hugging Gu Yin and gently stroking her supple beautiful hair, Tang Xiu calmly said, “A lot of women have crushes on me. Don’t tell me that you don’t know that an outstanding man will attract women just like flowers attract bees and butterflies?”

"Pfft..."

Gu Xiaoxue was amused. She suddenly found that this enigmatic and profound Grand Master of hers unexpectedly had a humorous side.

Tang Xiu looked through the window and slowly asked, “What Ji Chimei did recently? I had ordered her to find some herbs to concoct the Spirit Condensation Pill, how’s the progress?”

Holding back her smile, Gu Xiaoxue replied, “All the herbs needed have been gathered. Elder Ji is about to refine the medicinal pill. If all goes well, she should have refined that Spirit Condensation Pill by now.”

Tang Xiu’s face flickered. He nodded and said, “The Spirit Condensation Pill has a great effect on me, Yan’er and Ji Chimei. It will even have a good effect on you. Also, I have prepared a list of medicinal ingredients, with a total of 3650 types of herbs, of which I’ll hand over to you later. You have to find all these herbs with your every power. However much you can find, buy them all. I also told Chen Zhizhong about this. He’s running a medicine business,

so you can contact him after you get the list.”

Surprised, Gu Xiaoxue asked, “Grand Master, with so many medicinal herbs, would it all be used to concoct pills?”

Nodding, Tang Xiu replied, “Those 3650 kinds of medicinal herbs altogether can be refined into seven types of pills. Each type has a wonderful effect for all of us. One of which is the Nascent Amassare Pill. It will help you to break your Golden Core, breaking through to the Nascent Origin Realm.”

Nascent Origin Realm?

Gu Xiaoxue’s eyes turned bright. She firmly decided inwardly that she must find all the necessary medicinal ingredients needed to refine the Nascent Amassare Pill. She determined to refine the pill as fast as possible and breakthrough to the Nascent Origin Realm.

“By the way, did the people I sent have arrived?” asked Tang Xiu suddenly.

“You mean, the Wolf Head team?” asked Gu Xiaoxue back.

Nodding, Tang Xiu said, “It seems they are here in the Everlasting Feast Hall.”

“They had already arrived before I went to Beijing. I already arranged for them to stay there and wait for your arrival. But



Grand Master, I don't understand. Our Everlasting Feast Hall has a lot of experts, yet why did you still recruit Wolf Head and his team, these retired soldiers?" asked Gu Xiaoxue

"How many people do we have? Don't forget. One day I'll return to the Immortal World, and the enemies that I'll be facing are the Supremes. Although they don't feel like deliberately training their henchmen, then how many hundreds of millions powerful lackeys do they have around them? Who amongst them don't have troops of Immortal legions to guard their territories?" said Tang Xiu calmly.

Gu Xiaoxue held her breath and immediately understood Tang Xiu's intention.

Indeed! These Supreme Immortals were beings at the apex who stood at the summit and presided over trillions of Immortals. It would be strange if they didn't have a large number of subordinates.

Sighing, Tang Xiu continued, "Once, I also thought that my own strength was sufficient enough. That no one could shake me until I was... But from thereafter, only then did I understand one tough truth; a pair of fists will never be able to face four hands. Having formidable strength is no doubt important, but having a group of loyal, devoted and powerful subordinates around you is no less significant. That time in the past, if I had a group of loyal subordinates to protect me, even if my enemies wanted to get rid of me, they wouldn't have been able to do so so easily!"

With a dignified expression, Gu Xiaoxue replied, "Grand Master,

I understand your thoughts. The Everlasting Feast Hall only trained twenty well-qualified children in the last decade. It appears this number is far from enough.”

Surprised, Tang Xiu asked, “Twenty children?”

“For the last ten years, every year I left the Everlasting Feast Hall for a period of time, going outside to broaden my experience as well as looking for some well-qualified children. All of them are orphans from the streets who are suitable to learn cultivation techniques and were selected by me. I adopted them when they were very young; the oldest one is only six years old while the youngest is one or two years old.”

Frowning, Tang Xiu asked, “You teach them cultivation techniques?”

Shaking her head, Gu Xiaoxue replied, “No. I don’t teach them cultivation techniques. I teach them only basic Body Tempering techniques for cultivation. On one hand, it can help them to change their physique; on the other hand, it will also make them accumulate their foundation from an early age. Hence, by the time they reach the peak of Body Tempering Stage, I can pick out the outstanding candidates and teach them more advanced cultivation techniques. Actually, this is also on behalf of Master’s orders.”

Tang Xiu suddenly understood, “If so, I’ll teach cultivation techniques to the experts trained by the Everlasting Feast Hall after I have some free time later. Anyways, put their names on a list and give it to me later. Do remember, I don’t care if they have a heaven-defying aptitude nor do I require them to be powerful.

What I care about are their nature and loyalty.”

"Understood!" replied Gu Xiaoxue with a nod.

The big guy from the Everlasting Feast Hall who was driving the car was crazily startled upon hearing Tang Xiu and Gu Xiaoxue's conversation. A longing and surprised expression burst intensely from his eyes.

They were all orphans and lone children Gu Yan'er had brought up. They had been through brutal training by experts. Having an absolute loyalty toward Gu Yan'er, they would even immediately draw their blades to commit suicide or break the enemy lines if Gu Yan'er willed it. Likewise, they also knew that neither Gu Yan'er or Gu Xiaoxue were ordinary people. The path they had taken was the bloody and thorny one, however it also was the path for them to become extremely powerful experts.

In particular, he could hear clearly the conversation between Tang Xiu and Gu Xiaoxue. The most shocking to him was the place mentioned by Tang Xiu, the Immortal World.

The Supremes of the Immortal World, as well as the hundreds of millions of Immortal Legions.

This was a world he had never once imagined existed, making him passionate and not being able to wait to become a super-strong expert immediately. He wanted to go to the Immortal World, experience the grand, magnificent scene of the Immortal World as well as fight with the powerful experts there.

“About those twenty adopted children you have trained, take me to see them once we’ve arrived in the Everlasting Feast Hall. I’ll bring ten of them with me,” said Tang Xiu.

Surprised, Gu Xiaoxue asked, “Master, where do you want to take them?”

“I bought a private island and am preparing to develop it into a blessed land for cultivation. Thereafter, it will be our main headquarters. Anyways, there are two guys I remember, Mo Āwen and Mo Āwu. I’ll also take them with me! I’ll give the place to both of them to manage,” said Tang Xiu faintly.

“Alright!” replied Gu Xiaoxue with a nod.

At the Everlasting Feast Hall.

After the car entered the parking lot, Tang Xiu took Gu Yin out and then looked at Gu Xiaoxue, saying slowly, “I’ll see her now.”

Gu Xiaoxue nodded. She motioned several security guards that greeted them and then walked toward the sea along with Tang Xiu and Gu Yin.

“Master, it’s the sea.”

Even though Gu Yin was more mature than her peers. But she

was, after all, still a child. Seeing the gleaming reflection of the sea waves in the sunlight, she was immediately excited.

Faintly smiling, Tang Xiu lifted her up and jumped onto the boat anchored to the shore, whereas Gu Xiaoxue floated midair as the boat automatically sailed toward the sea.

“Open it!” said Tang Xiu.

Gu Xiaoxue nodded and unceasingly pinched her fingers, forming seals. The seawater in front of them separated, revealing a passage leading to the seabed.

“Wow! It’s so magical!”

Gu Yin’s eyes stared wide as she exclaimed.

Smiling, Tang Xiu said, “If you practice hard, you can also do this later.”

Wearing a dignified look, Gu Yin nodded heavily and said seriously, “Master, I must cultivate seriously. I have to be as powerful as Martial Niece Xiaoxue.”

Martial Niece?

A helpless feeling rose inside Gu Xiaoxue’s heart as her mouth twitched. She was indeed a Martial Niece to Gu Yin according to

seniority. However, it was Gu Yin's age that made her rather depressed.

After the blue sea opened, Tang Xiu and them came to the seabed. Whilst looking at the exquisite pagoda that effused golden light, Tang Xiu spoke, "Open it!"

"Alright!"

Gu Xiaoxue quickly made a seal and shouted in a deep tone:

"Of the Heaven and Earth Profound Emperors, Only I Alone Am the Sole Revered Sovereign!"

The golden light bloomed over and the pagoda's door slowly opened.

Handing over Gu Yin to Gu Xiaoxue, Tang Xiu said, "Her cultivation is still low and cannot withstand the chilling atmosphere inside. Use your True Essence to protect her."

Two minutes later, Tang Xiu arrived next to the ice bed on the seventh floor. He looked at the coma induced Gu Yan'er laying on top of it. His expression turned soft as he lifted her up gently and hugged her silently.

Seeing her yet again calmed Tang Xiu's heart. Either the good and bad emotions he experienced after meeting his grandmother or paying homage to the Tang Family's ancestors, all of them

disappeared at this moment.

Mentioning about affection, Tang Xiu also had received a lot of apprentices, but the one that was very close to him was Gu Yan'er. She was like a daughter to him, for he personally brought her up, teaching her martial arts and directing her to the cultivation path. In the past, his mother was the person he had always been missing, this was the reason as to why he devoted himself to take care of her after his mother, shifting all the affection he had toward Gu Yan'er.

“Yan'er. Master is seeing you again.”

Caressing her beautiful hair that covered her face, Tang Xiu said softly.

At the side, Gu Yin looked at Gu Yan'er with a curious look. Clever as she was, she realized that her Master really cared about Gu Yan'er and was rather feeling at a loss inwardly, but she stood still beside Gu Xiaoxue, waiting in silence. She had already guessed that the woman in the arms of her Master was her Senior Martial Sister.

For Gu Xiaoxue, she actually felt contented and satisfied at this moment.

She could feel the concern and affection Tang Xiu had toward her Master. Prior to this, she thought that her Master had suffered so much for her Grand Master that she felt it wasn't worth it.

Yet, at present, she finally understood. She realized that the feelings and affection that her Master and Grand Master had toward each other truly came from their true nature, for every word and deed was just following the genuine intention inside their hearts.

“Master, please wake up quickly! Xue’er has found Grand Master. You’ll certainly be very happy after you see him!”

Gripping her fist, Gu Xiaoxue prayed secretly inside her heart.

Turning and looking at Gu Yin, Tang Xiu said, “She’s your Senior Martial Sister, Gu Yan’er. Because of me, she has suffered a lot of hardships. She is seriously injured now and continuously falls unconscious from time to time. Later on, you must respect your senior sister just like you respect me.”



## Chapter 273: Strength Demonstration

---

It was dawn. The sparkling, gleaming waves reflected under the sunlight when the first ray of sunshine rose from the east. Tang Xiu, Gu Xiaoxue, and Gu Yin emerged from the seabed, returning back to the small boat as the split sea closed again.

After returning to the shore.

Ji Chimei had been waiting for a long time, standing on the shore. She then saluted Tang Xiu.

Nodding to her, Tang Xiu asked, "How's the refining of the Spirit Condensation Pill?"

Turning her hands, Ji Chimei took seven jade bottles and replied, "All the medicinal ingredients have been used and refined into seven bottles of Spirit Condensation Pill."

Receiving three of them, Tang Xiu then said, "Take a bottle and give it to Yan'er. You and Xiaoxue also take one each. As for the last one, give it to Xiaoxue for future needs."

"Understood!"

Ji Chimei gave three bottles to Gu Xiaoxue and kept one for herself. After putting it away, she said, "Venerable Lord, I got news yesterday that there will be an auction in Hong Kong tonight. I also found an item on the auction list which looks like a Soul

Tranquilizer Stone, so I intend to leave for Hong Kong and participate in the auction.”

Soul Tranquilizer Stone?

Tang Xiu’s expression changed and almost without hesitation, he replied in a deep tone, “Soul Tranquilizer Stone is a not an ordinary matter. The more of it you can find, the more time we can give Yan’er. So I’ll go with you.”

Ji Chimei nodded.

Looking at Gu Yin, Tang Xiu thought a bit and said, “Xiaoxue, I had planned to bring along Yinyin to the private island and let her have some fun there. But the plan has to change now because I don’t know how much time will it take. Thus, I’ll leave her with you and let her play here for a few days. After that, have someone escort her back to Star City.”

“No problem,” replied Gu Xiaoxue with a smile.

Pouting her lips, Gu Yin didn’t utter a word. She wanted to follow Tang Xiu, but remembering she had to attend her course, she could only give up.

Having finished breakfast, Tang Xiu let Gu Xiaoxue take Gu Yin to rest as he returned to the exquisite pagoda in the seabed. Accompanying Gu Yan’er gave him peace of mind. He sat in meditation until morning and not only didn’t he feel tired, he was

full of energy.

After Gu Xiaoxue used the Blood Sacrifice Art for him and he rested for one or two days, his mental force and star force that had been completely consumed had recovered; now there was even faint signs of improvement.

He had prepared to refine an interspatial ring in taking a trip to Jingmen Island this time. He brought the precious ores here and was prepared to refine the ring. After all, it was inconvenient to carry a baggage each time he went out without an interspatial ring.

After lunch, Tang Xiu saw Wolf Head and his team. The serious expression on their faces made him secretly amused. He could see that Wolf Head and his team's attitude was somewhat different than before. Perhaps, after they had gone through the battle in Star City back then as well as seeing the many experts from the Everlasting Feast Hall stimulated the huge changes in their proud attitude.

“Tell me what you think,” having carefully observed the twelve men for a while, Tang Xiu said lightly.

Wolf Head said, “Boss, I’m a bit puzzled here.”

"Say it!"

“It’s just that you obviously have a lot of experts under you, Boss. Why would you still accept us? Either those twenty experts in Star

City or the guards from the Everlasting Feast Hall, nobody is weaker than me. For the past two days ever since I arrived here, I had compared notes with several guards here, and lost miserably.”

“Do you really think that the experts under me are really many?” asked Tang Xiu lightly.

“Isn’t it so?” asked Wolf Head with doubt.

Sneering, Tang Xiu answered, “This means that you know nothing. How could it be called many? Countless in number, endless and exhaustible. That is what the so-called having experts as many as clouds are. The Everlasting Feast Hall may have a lot of guards, but it’s far pitiful a number to me. It’s far from sufficient. The people I want to cultivate are the elites among the elites; the strong among the strongest. Let alone you, even the guards from this Everlasting Feast Hall are just ants in my eyes.”

Wolf Head had indeed seen how strong Tang Xiu was. Yet, listening to as how Tang Xiu regarded the guards of the Everlasting Feast Hall as ants, it somewhat left him quite vexed and irritable inside. He thought that Tang Xiu was too arrogant. The other eleven men also had the same thought as they looked at Tang Xiu with a different expression.

Tang Xiu’s brows slanted and said indifferently, “You don’t believe it?”

“Boss, I admit that you’re indeed very strong. But how could these guards of Everlasting Feast Hall be weaker than you? If they

were ants, nobody in this world can be called as a powerful expert.”

Tang Xiu frowned. He then turned his head to Ji Chimei at the side and said lightly, “What do you think about her strength?”

Staring blankly, Wolf Head was surprised and laughed involuntary before he immediately said, “Boss, could the elderly also be a martial arts expert? She might not even be able to beat us, right?”

Answering in a cold voice, Tang Xiu replied, “Ji Chimei, those few trees a hundred meters away outside are nuisances to my eyes.”

Ji Chimei finally looked up. Her cold eyes swept Wolf Head and the others. She waved the walking cane in her hand higher and swept toward the woods a hundred meters away outside. Along with a suffocating aura bursting out from her body, invisible blade waves straightly flew toward the dozen trees that were as thick as a waist and cut them off.

“Bam, Bam, Bam...”

Dozens of big trees crashed to the ground loudly, creating a wave of dust.

"WHAT?"

Wolf Head and his team were dumbstruck and aghast, looking at the dozens of trees a hundred meters away that were cut. Their bodies shivered violently. They horrified and shocked to the extreme. As they turned to look at Ji Chimei, it was as if they were looking at a fearsome monster.

Retracting back her aura, Ji Chimei put away her walking stick and said indifferently, “The Venerable Lord’s power is not something ordinary people like you can ever fathom. Although I can destroy the entire Jingmen Island with a fist, but compared to the former Venerable Lord’s power, I’m nothing but lower than an ant. You coming across the Venerable Lord and he valuing you, that’s your good luck. Do remember. Whoever amongst you dare to doubt the Venerable Lord again, I’ll kill him first.”

Inadvertently releasing her killing intent, Ji Chimei made Wolf Head and his team turn deathly pale. Their bodies were shrouded by a chilling-cold aura in the air as they wanted to retreat, yet losing their abilities to move and act. It was as though their bodies were no longer in their control anymore.

Terror! This elderly was too terrifying. Could she be still a human being?

Wolf Head and the others shifted their visions toward Tang Xiu. At the moment, their thoughts of Tang Xiu being too arrogant vanished instantly. Seeing Tang Xiu lifting his head, they suddenly felt their bodies becoming lighter as they regained their control over their bodies.

“You... you just said that you can destroy the entire Jingmen

Island with a punch?” asked Wolf Head, shivering.

Letting out a mocking laugh, Ji Chimei said, “The entire Jingmen Island? Is this place even big enough to be in my palm? If for not because of scaring you, let alone destroying Jingmen Island with only a punch, I can even blow this whole planet and come out unscathed.”

“How could this be?” Wolf Head exclaimed in fright.

With an indifferent expression, Tang Xiu said, “She said correctly. A lot of people are able to destroy a planet with a snap of their fingers. You’re just ordinary people, there’s a lot of things you don’t know of. For now, you don’t need to understand it. But remember my words. Perform well. If you do, I can train you so that in the future you can step into the air and traverse the universe.”

Wolf Head swallowed his saliva desperately. If not because Ji Chimei showcased such unfathomable might just now, they would have never believed Tang Xiu and Ji Chimei. But seeing is believing, and they finally realized that they were probably much weaker than ants in front of them.

Loyalty and performance!

Only now did Wolf Head and his team feel clear about this. They heard that Tang Xiu could make them very strong, but they had never seen him showcasing such an unfathomable method. But through Ji Chimei, they could see it at the moment.

This was the true ability they wanted to learn from Tang Xiu. To learn such fearsome power that no ordinary person could ever have. For this, they were willing to pledge their loyalty to Tang Xiu as well as working for him loyally.

“Good. I will no longer speak on this matter anymore. Everything you saw today, I want it to rot inside you, to never be disclosed to anyone else,” Tang Xiu ordered. “In addition, as I’m leaving for Hong Kong, the twelve of you will go directly to that private island I bought! I’ll text the coordinates to Wolf Head’s mobile. Remember, you are free to find a place to settle there before I arrived. I’ll contact you later after I get there.”

"Yes, Sir!"

Wolf Head and the others saluted respectfully.

The twelve men left. Looking at the Mo brothers, Tang Xiu said lightly, “Follow me. We’re going to Hong Kong for the auction. All the issues there will be under you two brothers to take care of. I’ll send someone else by September.”

"Yes!"

Mo Āwen and Mo Āwu replied respectfully.

Tang Xiu then looked at Ji Chimei and lightly said, “Let’s go! We can’t be late for the auction. That’s right, did you bring money?



I'm tight on money right now."

"The young lady gave me 10 billion. If it's really the Soul Tranquilizer Stone, she will transfer more if it's not enough," answered Ji Chimei.

10 billion?

Lifting his brows, Tang Xiu asked curiously, "How much funds does the Everlasting Feast Hall have currently?"

Ji Chime shook her head, "I don't know. I never ask about business issues."

Tang Xiu smiled and boarded the car directly.

Four people boarded two cars and quickly drove toward Jingmen Island Port. They must travel by water from Jingmen Island to Hong Kong since the two places were quite near in distance and could be reached within a few hours. What surprised Tang Xiu was that Everlasting Feast Hall didn't have a private jet, but had a super-luxurious cruiser. Even though the cruiser was not larger, but it could board hundreds of people on it.

"Boss, Little Boss bought this since she usually explores the nearby islands every two years," Mo Āwen, who was following at Tang Xiu's side, explained in a low voice as he saw his astonished expression.

“This cruiser is quite good. Let’s go! I want to reach Hong Kong as fast as possible.” said Tang Xiu with a nod.

"Alright!"

Mo Āwen led the way to board the cruiser.

## Chapter 274: The Mansion in Hong Kong

---

Hong Kong Island was one of the most prosperous cosmopolitan cities in the world and was known as the Pearl of the Orient. Along with the passing time and development, it had become an expensive place, the haven of the world's gourmet, a shopping paradise and the cradle of dreams.

Luxurious cruise ships anchored in the Victoria Harbor and attracted a lot of eyes on the shore. After all, the price of this luxurious liner surpassed most of the other luxurious cruisers in this port.

“Boss, the car is here.”

After making a phone call, Mo Āwen was following Tang Xiu toward the shore as he whispered.

“The Everlasting Feast Hall has people in Hong Kong?” asked Tang Xiu in surprise.

“We have a branch here. The Everlasting Feast Hall has a total of five branches in the country. Apart from Jingmen Island's branch, we also have branches in Hong Kong and Macau. Before coming to Hong Kong I called the head of the restaurant here,” replied Mo Āwen.

“I see!” Tang Xiu nodded. Considering that the Everlasting Feast Hall had such a huge amount of funds, it indicated that their business was not only limited to Jingmen Island. After a moment

of silence, he asked, “Aside from the restaurant business, what else do we have?”

“Jewelry, antiques, and real estates,” answered Mo Āwen.

“We have so many businesses? Does Xiaoxue manage all of them?” asked Tang Xiu in surprise.

Mo Āwen laughed, “No, Boss. The Little Boss only controls the overall management. Each business of our Everlasting Feast Hall is managed by a special head. Such as the one in Hong Kong, Macau, Beijing and Shanghai, Tian Li is the one who manages them, whereas Hao Lei takes care of the jewelry business and Chen Shaohua takes care of the antique business management. As for the real estate business, it’s being managed by Jin Cheng.”

Quickly, Tang Xiu saw Tian Li, the head manager for the restaurant business. She wore a professional blazer, an elegant loose long hair, was wearing gold-rimmed glasses and looked to be in her 40s. All in all, she gave off the aura of an accountant.

“Hi, Boss.”

Whilst Tang Xiu was looking at her, Tian Li also did the same. But she was quite shocked since Tang Xiu was so young.

Tang Xiu nodded lightly, “Work hard. First, arrange accommodations for us! We will be staying here today and leaving tomorrow.”

“The mansion has been arranged, Sir.”

Tian Li opened the car's door for Tang Xiu and replied respectfully.

“Ah, Chief Tian?”

Suddenly, a surprised voice sounded nearby, followed by a middle-aged man suddenly running over followed by several men and women behind him.

Tian Li turned around and her brows slightly slanted when he saw the man. It was Hongfeng Advertising big boss, Hong Fu, and also a Hong Kong's Everlasting Feast Hall's regular patron. She smiled slightly and nodded, “Hello, Boss Hong.”

Hong Fu laughed, “It's quite unexpected that I'd bump into Chief Tian here. Yesterday, I invited you to play golf, but it's a pity that you had no time. Anyways, these people are...”

Turning around and looking Tang Xiu in the eyes, Tian Li hesitated before she replied, “Boss Hong, this is my Boss. As for playing golf, we'll talk about it later. My Boss has just arrived in Hong Kong and is tired, so I can't accompany you. Let's talk later.”

Hong Fu was stunned as his eyes landed on the calm Tang Xiu. He knew a lot about the Everlasting Feast Hall, but he didn't expect that its Boss turned out to be such a young man. A few seconds

later, he promptly pulled out a business card from his pocket as he approached Tang Xiu and smiled, “Hello, I’m Hong Fu. The owner of Hongfeng Advertising. I’m honored to meet you today... might I know the gentleman’s surname?”

Tang Xiu took the card and swept his eyes over it, saying faintly, “I’m surnamed Tang. I apologize, I have no business card.”

The smile on Hong Fu’s face froze before his expression went back to normal instantly. He was a business veteran and believed that Tang Xiu must also have a business card. This excuse meant that not only the other party didn’t want exchange business cards, but he also didn’t want to associate with him.

“It’s alright. Mr. Tang is the boss of the Everlasting Feast Hall and is quite a mysterious figure in our business circle. For a long time now we’ve wanted to know who the owner of the Everlasting Feast Hall is, but I didn’t expect that you’d be so young. Since Boss Tang just arrived in Hong Kong then I won’t disturb you. But if you have free time later, you can call me and have some drinks,” with his smooth personality, Hong Fu said with a smile.

“Alright!”

Tang Xiu nodded and then quickly boarded the car.

The two-car started and quickly disappeared at the far end of the road.

The several men and woman behind Hong Fu arrived as one of the middle-aged men looked at him and said indifferently, “Old Hong, that young man is crazy! He’s just the little boss of the Everlasting Feast Hall, why did you need to be so polite to him?”

Hong Fu turned around and forced a smile, “Do you really think that he’s just the little boss of a restaurant? Hahaha, the Everlasting Feast Hall is not your ordinary restaurant!”

The middle-aged man was confused, “What’s unusual about it?”

“The headquarters of the Everlasting Feast Hall is on Jingmen Island. I’ve been in Jingmen Island for many times and also visited the headquarters. Speaking of the restaurant, the Everlasting Feast Hall also has an upscale villa there. They also have branches in Hong Kong, Macau, Beijing, and Shanghai. So, the annual income is huge.”

That middle-aged man said, “But even if the Everlasting Feast Hall is not a small enterprise, but it couldn’t be bigger than your Hongfeng Advertising, no?”

Shooting him a glance, Hong Fu shook his head, “Did you not hear what I said, that the boss of the Everlasting Feast Hall is very mysterious? Do you really think that he only has a culinary business? I have learned about this culinary enterprise and found that this Everlasting Feast Hall also has deep relations with Grand Fortune Jewelries. In other words, the two enterprises belong to the same owner. Do you think my advertising company can be compared to Grand Fortune Jewelries?”

"What?"

The middle-aged man's face slightly changed as even the other men and women were also surprised.

They knew about the Grand Fortune Jewelries. The enterprise had billions of assets at least. Its head was Hao Lei, a renowned businesswoman. A lot of businessmen in Hong Kong were curious about the secret boss of the Grand Fortune Jewelries whom the famous Hao Lei worked for.

"If the boss of the Grand Fortune Jewelries and the Everlasting Feast Hall is the same person, that means the identity of that young man is rather extraordinary," said the middle-aged man who had just spoken said with a change in tone and attitude.

Hong Fu sighed, "China is a big country and has numerous generations of powerful figures hidden. A lot of them are not open to public yet have a lot of power. It's kinda a pity though. That young man surnamed Tang is reluctant to have a close relationship with us!"

The middle-aged man laughed, "It's kinda a given, though. It's our first time meeting, after all. The more frequent we see him, the more chances we have to establish a friendship. Anyhow, let's go to my place and have an afternoon tea. We also have to attend the auction tonight!"

"OK, let's go!"



Hong Fu turned his head and replied with a smile.

Qianshui Bay Road 13, Hong Kong.

Here lied a grand and luxurious mansion, covering an area of 18,000 square feet that was valued in the hundreds of millions. Aside from the three-storied main building villa, there was also an independent warehouse, gym, teahouse, sauna room, and indoor swimming pool.

When two luxurious cars arrived in front of the courtyard front entrance, two security guards in black uniforms saluted and opened the electric gate with a remote control.

In front of the main building's door.

In addition to a garden, there was also an outdoor swimming pool. Ten men and women stood at both sides along the wide pathway leading to the main villa as they focused their attention on the coming cars.

“Boss, we’ve arrived,” Tian Li, who was sitting on the co-pilot seat, got off and opened the rear door and respectfully spoke.

Out of the car, Tang Xiu saw the standing men and women on both sides and asked slowly, “Where’s this?”

“This is the real estate bought by Little Boss in Hong Kong. She came to Hong Kong twice in the recent years and stayed here. Yesterday I received news that Elder Ji will come to Hong Kong, so I tidied up this place in advance. Except for the maids who are in charge of daily maintenance, there’s no one else living here,” replied Tian Li respectfully.

Tang Xiu nodded and walked toward the villa’s main building.

The villa was luxurious and had an impressive interior decoration. Looking around, Tang Xiu quite liked this villa since this was more luxurious than his villa in South Gate Town.

“Do you want to rest or is there anything else you need, Boss?”

Following beside him, Tian Li asked softly.

Tang Xiu sat down on the sofa and lightly replied, “I’ll take a rest and go to the auction later. You can go busy yourself, I’ll call you if there’s anything I need.”

“Understood!” Tian Li nodded and turned away.

Looking at the standing Ji Chimei and the Mo Brothers at the side, Tang Xiu said lightly, “Chimei, there’s still time. Teach cultivation techniques to the both of them! I’ll take a rest first, call me when it’s the time to go.”

“Yes, Lord!” Ji Chimei nodded respectfully.

Joyful expressions burst out from Mo Āwen and Mo Āwu's eyes. The brothers suddenly felt fortunate of having Tang Xiu as their Boss. Perhaps, if they were to follow their original life, they probably wouldn't be taught cultivation techniques for a short period of time.

"Thank you, Boss!"

The two knelt and couldn't repress the excitement on their faces.

Tang Xiu shook his head, "No need to thank me. You know what I think. Loyalty is of the utmost importance. Xiaoxue has told me about your performances as well as how dedicated you have been all these years. She's very satisfied and I hope you can make me satisfied later."

"Yes!" The two answer solemnly.

Waving his head, Tang Xiu motioned the three to manage their business as he went to the second floor. As he came to the main room, he found that the decoration inside had a feminine touch. There were also a lot of woman's clothes inside the cloakroom, which made him realize that Gu Xiaoxue should have used this room before.

Immediately after, he looked for another room next door and took the documents of the purchased private island from his suitcase. All the legal and relevant documents had been taken care of and given to him when he bought the island, but he had yet to

read it carefully due to a lot of matters. Thus, taking the time before he went out, he decided to familiarize himself with it thoroughly so he could have a better understanding of the situation there.

## Chapter 275: Traffic Accident

---

After taking out the documents, the first thing Tang Xiu took out was a stack of photos. He didn't read the documents in a hurry but instead picked up the stack of photos and looked at them carefully.

In the photos was a very large island amid a blue ocean, along with intertwining hills and lush trees. It was very beautiful to behold. There lied a magnificent European style castle on the central peak of the island, along with a flat and smooth road that branched out to three directions. One was leading to the castle, one to the parking lot nearby and the last one to the aircraft apron.

Nine hills were spreading toward the sea along with a European small pavilion on each hill. A road lied downhill toward the sea area whereby some cruisers were anchored on the private pier.

“It's a Nine Dragon Island. The Nine Dragons Spitting Pearl!”

He gazed at the pictures. The more he looked at them, the more content he felt. The blessed land he used to cultivate in the Immortal World was called the “Nine Dragons Spitting Pearl Secret Area”. Merely looking at the exterior landscape, it was similar to the one inside his mind. The only difference was that the Nine Dragons Spitting Pearl in the Immortal World was a hundred times bigger than the Nine Dragons Island.

“After I have fully taken over this Nine Dragons Island, the first thing I must do is to contact the closest real estate company and develop it as fast as possible. It's a pity that the Long Family's real

estate company doesn't operate in the region, or else it would've been easier," after sighing inwardly, Tang Xiu then read the detailed information. However, he didn't trust the reliability of the information since the documents themselves were not too detailed.

"Knock, knock, knock..."

Whilst reading the documents and analyzing them, the door was knocked.

"Come in!"

Tang Xiu put the documents down and spoke lightly.

The door was opened as Ji Chimei spoke to him, "Venerable Lord, it's time to go."

Nodding, Tang Xiu replied, "Wait for me. I'll be there shortly."

"Yes, Lord!"

After Ji Chimei left the room, Tang Xiu packed up the documents and put them into the document holder. He then went to the bathroom to wash his face and then came to the villa's courtyard. To his surprise, the two cars parked there were not the previous ones Tian Li used to pick him up, but a Rolls-Royce limousine and a Hummer.

“Where are the cars we came in?” Tang Xiu asked in surprise.

Mo Āwen who stood in front of the Rolls Royce limousine’s door, replied with a smile, “They are parked in the garage. A few years ago, the Little Boss liked to collect all sort of cars; I ordered it from abroad.”

“How many cars are in the garage now?” asked Tang Xiu.

“Four. Except those two there are also two sports cars,” answered Mo Āwen.

“Taking this car is kind of exaggerated, no?” Tang Xiu forced out a wry smile.

Mo Āwen laughed, “Boss, this is Hong Kong, there are a lot of luxurious cars here.”

The wry smile on Tang Xiu’s face immediately disappeared. Upon thinking about it, expensive places such as Hong Kong had a lot of rich people. It was even reported in the news, on the internet and TV that the rich in Hong Kong were also particularly fond of buying all sorts of luxurious cars.

“It looks like the richest man, Li Juren, is also in Hong Kong.”

The thought crossed Tang Xiu’s mind as he boarded the car through the door opened by Mo Āwen. This was his first time riding on a Rolls-Royce limousine. The interior design was super

luxurious and was especially comfortable to ride on. There were sofas, small tables, LCD TVs and a refrigerator inside.

“The life of the rich is truly extravagant!” Tang Xiu sighed in his heart.

Twenty minutes later, as Tang Xiu was feeling drowsiness, he suddenly felt the car shaking and its body quickly swayed to the side, hitting the fence on the roadside.

"What happened?"

Tang Xiu woke up suddenly and growled.

Mo Āwen had stopped the car at this time. He turned around and smiled, “It’s a few sports cars; one of them crossed over despite the red light and hit our car.”

Tang Xiu looked through the window and saw a red car nearby that had also hit the curb. A young man and woman came out from the car. The young man was wearing earrings and had his hair dyed purple, looking handsome, and had an angry expression on his, whereas the girl was wearing sexy clothes and looked a bit pale.

“Creak...”

At the moment, three other sports cars stopped in the vicinity. Even though nobody came down from the three sports cars, but



they were honking their horns.

Looking at Mo Āwen and knitting his brows, Tang Xiu said, “Go out and see them. We have limited time, we can’t be delayed here.”

"Yes!"

After he got off, the purple-haired young man angrily raised his arm and shouted, “What the hell is wrong with you? Do you feel so awesome driving a Rolls-Royce that you dared to block my car? Do you know who I am?”

"Who are you?" Mo Āwen looked grim as he asked.

The young man slapped the cover of the Rolls-Royce and loudly said, “Jiang Yu. Have you heard of me?”

Mo Āwen replied in a cold and detached manner, “Never heard of you. It was you who hit my car. This matter will be taken care of by others and you’ll have to discuss the compensation with them.”

Having said that, he dialed Tian Lie’s cell number.

Jiang Yu sneered, “I must compensate you? What damn joke is this? Who are you people? What great person is inside, hah? Come out and see me.”

Mo Āwu and Ji Chimei came out from the Hummer. The short

tempered Mo Āwu snorted coldly and growled, “I’ll give you a chance to get the fuck out of here. I don’t give a damn who you are, some people will check on your identity later and they will take care of the compensation matter with you.”

Jiang Yu frowned. He knew that he mustn’t fight if the odds were against him. However, he couldn’t accept being scolded by others. Immediately, he waved to the other sports cars to stop by.

“A Yu, you can’t solve such a trivial matter?”

Three young men hugging a sexy girl each came to Jiang Yu, smiling. They glance at the Mo Brothers before their eyes finally landed on Ji Chimei. One of the youths mocked, “A Yu, like I said, you’re too careless. Our car’s speed is fast, isn’t it? When you were driving, were you kissing your pretty girlfriend? Hahaha... take a look, the old woman is so old, it’s your fault if you scared her.”

Jiang Yu sneered and pointed to the Mo brothers, saying, “These two fellas offended me. I’m kinda unhappy with it. Whoever among you help me teach them a lesson, I’ll take you to have a ‘blissful’ time tonight.”

The young man rolled his eyes and cursed, “You damn idiot! Don’t you know a smart man doesn’t fight when the odds are against him? Take a look at them! They are so damned sturdy and tough. You’re only courting trouble if you fight them. Alright, I’ll take care of this; some people will take care of them later. We gotta go hurry! In case the traffic cops come here, we will spit out some bullshits again later.”

Whilst pointing at the Mo Brothers, Jiang Yu stepped back and roared, “You two wait. I’ll remember you! Wait for this father, I, to make you kowtow and apologize to me!”

“What a big tone!”

Tang Xiu got off the car and swept over the several youths with a cold and detached look and said indifferently, “Did the two of just hear what he said? For such a rampant kid, don’t tell me that he’s unworthy to be cleaned first and kowtow to you?”

The Mo brothers were startled for a moment. Then, Mo Āwu smiled widely and moved in an instant as he appeared in front of Jiang Yu and fiercely slapped him.

Just with a slap in the face, he sent Jiang Yu flying for four to five meters before he hit the ground outside heavily, whereas Mo Āwen fluttered and kicked the young man who had just spoken.

Shaking his head, Tang Xiu turned and walked toward the Hummer. He didn’t want to waste his time on these trivial silk pants.

“FUCK! STOP IT!”

The other two youths’ faces changed greatly as one of them roared loudly.

Mo Āwu shot a grim smile, punching him and sending him to the ground as he stood still there and asked in a stern tone at the pale youth, “Tell me, who are these bastards?”

The youth’s legs were somewhat trembling, but he still growled, “You’re in bad luck. Jiang Yu is the eldest son of the Jiang Group’s boss, Chen Fei is the heir of Wanyuan Real Estate, and Du Yang is the young master from Du Kang Winery. Whoever you are, you just hit the three of them, you will pay a terrible price for this.”

“And you? Whose family’s young master are you?” Mo Āwen asked and mocked.

The youth stepped back unconsciously and growled, “I-I didn’t offend you, so you don’t need to hit me. I-I am from the Qis, Qi Changqing.”

Glancing at him with cold and detached look, Mo Āwen said indifferently, “Count yourself tactful enough. Take them and get the hell out of here. If any of you appear before me again, you’ll end up worse than this. Tell the elders of that surnamed Jiang that he must pay compensation for hitting our Boss’s car.”

Having said that, he, Mo Āwu and Ji Chimei turned around and walked toward the Hummer.

Shortly after, the Hummer started and left, leaving the Rolls-Royce there. As for the aftermath of the matter, Tian Li would rush here later, they didn’t need to take care of it.

Qi Changqing and the four sexy girls supported Jiang Yu, Chen Fei, and Du Yang up. Qi Changqing shook his head and said, “Jiang Yu, Chen Fei, you were really too rash this time. The price of this Rolls-Royce limousine is at least tens of millions of Yuan and I’m afraid that the people who own such a car are not simple. However, I have never seen that young man in Hong Kong before. If my guess is right, he should be coming from outside Hong Kong.”

Jiang Yu’s cheek was swollen. There was also a bloodstain on the corner of his mouth. He was thrown and had his head hit the ground heavily. He covered his swollen cheek and roared with hatred, “I don’t give a fuck about who he is. Daring to hit me-they must prepare for retaliation. If I don’t make them kowtow and apologize to me, I’ll change my surname to his.”

With the same hatred and anger, Chen Fei also shouted, “There are a few untouchable people we can’t afford to mess with in Hong Kong. But that kid is absolutely not one of them. I will send some people to find and kill him.”

## Chapter 276: Malicious Intention

---

The accident was but only a small episode for Tang Xiu. With his current strength, he was fearless even if the enemy was of a great force. If the other party pay compensation sincerely then all was well, but if they dared to provoke him again, he didn't mind cause them injuries that they would remember for the rest of their lives.

“I didn't like your performance just now,” seating on the Hummer's rear seat, Tang Xiu spoke in a cold and detached expression. “I never provoke others, but I'll strike whoever dares to attack me. Do remember these words as well as the following. Whoever dares to be unbridled in front of us, strike them to death, force them to apologize, hit them to kowtow and admit their mistakes. Do this regardless of their identities.”

Overbearing! Tyrannical!

At this moment, Tang Xiu showed the domineering manner that was engraved deep into his bones.

Mo Āwu replied in a deep tone, “We'll engrave your words in our hearts, Boss.”

Looking at Mo Āwen, Tang Xiu said indifferently, “Call Tian Li later to investigate those kids' backgrounds. Looking at their attitudes, they won't let this go. Be prepared in a timely manner, and counterattack if they still dare to provoke us.”

“I'll inform her immediately,” said Mo Āwen.

Sitting at Tang Xiu's side, Ji Chimei hesitated for a moment before asking, "Venerable Lord, do you want me to take care of those kids' families personally?"

"No." Tang Xiu shook his head, "Your task is to participate in the auction. If that thing is really the Soul Tranquilizer Stone, obtain it no matter what the cost. After that, return to Jingmen Island as fast as possible."

"I understand," said Ji Chimei.

Rainbow Auction House.

It was one of the largest auction houses in Hong Kong. Either in terms of size and fame as well as the auctioned goods, this auction house enjoyed a good reputation over the past decades. Apart from the wealthy and powerful in Hong Kong, there were also a lot of those from the mainland and abroad that took their time to come to the Rainbow Auction House in Hong Kong, hoping to buy and obtain goods they liked.

According to Tang Xiu's knowledge, the Rainbow Auction House had a lot of shareholders, and they were the renowned, super-rich people; even Li Juren also possessed shares of this auction house.

"Please show the invitation."

Eight guards in black suits stood on both sides of the styled

entrance of the auction house, whereas two beautiful females in cheongsams checked the guests' invitations.

Walking with her stick, Ji Chimei handed the invitation over. After it had been checked, the four got their seat numbers and passed the door smoothly. The welcoming lady inside then led them to the auction venue inside. The venue was large enough to accommodate nearly a thousand people.

At this time, the number of guests that had arrived already reached the hundreds, yet a steady stream of guests was still coming in. The four then sat on a sixth-row seat in the auction venue according to their seats' numbers.

"How long until it starts?" Turning to look at Ji Chimei, Tang Xiu asked.

Looking at the time, Ji Chimei replied, "It will begin at 6 PM. It's 5:38 PM now, so it will start 22 minutes from now."

Tang Xiu nodded. He had once participated in the auction in Jingmen Island before and spent a lot of money there. He also had seen how those wealthy people competed over the goods they liked, as well as saw how they went all out to throw money.

Binhe Road, at the corner of the Zhu's residence.

Jiang Yu, Chen Fei, and Du Yang were smoking with grim expressions with more than twenty burly men scattered around.



They had been beaten and lost face, so they didn't want to let the matter stop there.

“Qi Changqing, if you don't want to join us then quickly scram. What the fuck are you watching here for? This Young Master is in a damn bad mood, you'd better get the fuck out to avoid being beaten by me,” Jiang Yu blew out a smoke, cursing at Qi Changqing who was leaning on the Porsche in front of him.

Staying silent for a moment, Qi Changqing slowly shook his head and said, “Jiang Yu, I know that you're angry, but I gotta tell you to investigate these people first before retaliating. You too know that knowing your enemy will grant you victory, these words are not meant to be taken lightly!”

“SCRAM!”

Chen Fei scolded him with a cold expression.

Looking at his three buddies, Qi Changqing suddenly felt that they were really retarded. At this moment, he also felt that he was also an idiot for fooling around with them for so many years. He had a faint feeling that the owner of that Rolls-Royce was not an ordinary man. Thus, he didn't want to get involved in this. In the case that it would lead to trouble, his position in his family would also be greatly affected.

After a moment of silence, he waved toward two big men and entered his Porsche. Starting the car, he quickly left.

However, he didn't really leave, and instead turned around the building in front for a half-turn and then parked near the building. After he entered the building, he and the two big men entered the room and looked down through the glass windows, watching Jiang Yu and the others.

Gloomy and grim, a cold glint flashed in Jiang Yu's eyes as he spoke in a sinking tone, "That surnamed Qi has left. After this, he's no longer one of us. Whoever dares to have a relationship with him later will have a fallout with me, Jiang Yu."

Chen Fei sneered, "That fucker just wanna look decent and proper eh. But he's just as coward as he used to be. I knew that he was a timid one, but I never expected that he'd be this damn cowardly. After we finish that kid, we gotta look for an opportunity to push Qi Changqing into the pit later. We gotta let him know that he's nothing but a fart if he doesn't join us brothers."

The solemn and traumatic Rolls-Royce event hovered inside Du Yang's eyes. He had sent someone to check on the owner of the car, yet there was no news until now.

He had a very keen intuition about the danger, of which he obtained when he was eight years old after being kidnapped. The same feeling arose inside his heart when he saw that young man. Being beaten was humiliating, but he probably wouldn't want to join in this if he hadn't been beaten.

"I think we gotta fully investigate their backgrounds before we retaliate. The three of us are indeed quite powerful in Hong Kong,

but still, it's hard to say if we can become the real masters of our three families in the future. If we make a mess this time, our positions in our families will be greatly affected. Especially for you, Jiang Yu. Even though you are the eldest son of the Jiang Group, but your old man favors your younger brother more," Du Yang extinguished his cigarette butt and spoke in a heavy tone.

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yu fell silent immediately.

He may be arrogant, egotistical and unruly, but he was not a fool. The person who could own a Rolls-Royce, if he hadn't rented it or wanted to show off, that person probably really possessed a big power. His current position at home was rather awkward. So, if he really poked a big basket, perhaps it would be his younger brother that would take over the position as the head of his family.

After staying silent for half a minute, Jiang Yu slowly said, "You're right. But I absolutely can never let go of today's matter. Didn't that kid said he'd send someone to deal with it? Let's wait and see who will take care of this matter. Also, Du Yang, haven't you already called someone to investigate the owner of this Rolls-Royce? How long till you get the news?"

"I'm not sure. It should be fast, though," said Du Yang while shaking his head.

Just as these people were having a chat, three Audis stopped near the Rolls-Royce. The cars' doors opened as Tian Li, looking cold and grim, got off the car along with six big men in black suits.

Looking at the three youths coldly, Tian Li walked straight to them and spoke, “Who hit my Boss’s car?”

Upon seeing Tian Li, the Jiang Yu trio were slightly surprised for a moment. They often visited Hong Kong’s Everlasting Feast Hall to meals, thus they naturally knew who Tian Li was. Every time they saw her, she always greeted them with a smile. This was the first time they saw her looked so indifferent and cold.

“Tian Li, you’re saying that the owner of this Rolls-Royce is your boss?” Jiang Yu felt relaxed at this moment. In his eyes, the Everlasting Feast Hall was but only a simple, pure restaurant business. Even if its business was very good, but it paled in comparison to the Jiang Group.

Tian Li said coldly, “Tell me. Who hit my Boss’s car?”

“It was me. What do you want to do now?” Jiang Yu snorted coldly out of anger.

Hearing it, Tian Li strode in front of him. Without saying a word, she fiercely slapped his face. Her force was quite heavy as the other side of Jiang Yu’s swollen cheek became red and swollen. The latter staggered backward a few steps before heavily falling on the ground.

“Tian Li, you’re looking for death!”

Chen Fei was shocked and instantly became furious. He swiftly

motioned the big men around him and shouted to the back.

Tian Li snorted coldly. Her figure instantly flashed in front of Chen Fei. She raised her hand and fiercely slapped his face. The force she used this time was even greater as Chen Fei was directly sent flying.

“Kill this slut!”

Jiang Yu crawled up from the ground with difficulty and angrily roared.

In an instant, more than twenty big men around and the six brought by Tian Li clashed. At the same time, they also wielded knives and sticks they were carrying on their waists and sleeves.

“Idiots!”

Retreating two steps, Tian Li held her arms and glanced at the fighting around, cursing in disdain.

Coldness flashed in the six big men’s eyes she brought. Their wrists fluttered as sharp daggers appeared in their hands. Almost without hesitation, they quickly greeted the twenty big guys.

“Bam, bam, bam...”

“Puff...”

The six big men of the Everlasting Feast Hall moved extremely fast. Their martial arts were many times stronger compared to those twenty big guys. In just half a minute, they had completely steamrolled them to the ground.

Sweeping the swollen Jiang Yu and Chen Fei who had a shocked expression on their faces, Tian Li's eyes finally landed on Du Yang, saying coldly, "Originally, I thought you and Qi Changqing were the most intelligent amongst the four of you. But now it seems that he's smarter than you as he doesn't mix with you in this incident."

## Chapter 277: Bidding

---

Tian Li's imposing manner was especially overbearing and powerful at the moment. She always had a smiling face, welcoming guests from all over the world, because those people came to spend their money. But now, offending her Boss was a more serious implication, offending her.

She was an elite that had been trained by Gu Yan'er personally. She was once sent abroad and had gone through a life and death training. It could be said that the people she had killed exceeded three digits. Her usual amicable appearance was only a camouflage.

"I'll give you a chance to scram now. Ask your elders to apologize to my Everlasting Feast Hall, otherwise, your fate will not be much better off than either of them."

A frightened and alarmed expression hung on Du Yang's face. He desperately swallowed his saliva, watching the fallen twenty big men. He looked at the six big men brought by Tian Li. After staying silent for a moment, he then said slowly, "Since I had already messed up big time today, I'm afraid that only the elders of my family can come forward. As to whether they'll come to apologize, I can't say it for sure. I bid you farewell for now."

Inside the building nearby, Qi Changqing was dumbstruck as he looked at more than twenty big men that had been beaten savagely. He looked at Jiang Yu and Chen Fei who had been beaten yet again. He also knew who Tian Li was, but never had he ever expected that she actually possessed such a grim side. Those six big

guys, he also had seen them as the security guards of the Everlasting Feast Hall.

It's just that he didn't expect that these six security guards would have such powerful skills.

How much time did they spend just now? It was only half a minute and mostly only a minute!

Six people had actually knocked out more than twenty people in just half a minute. Were they all retired soldiers from army's special forces?

Suddenly, Qi Changqing felt that he was quite fortunate inwardly as he didn't involve himself in this matter. Otherwise, wouldn't he also get beaten savagely by now?

"However, Tian Li dared to beat Jiang Yu and Chen Fei. Wasn't the Everlasting Feast Hall afraid of the retaliation from the Jiang Group and Wanyuan Real Estate? Everyone knows that these two forces are much stronger than the Everlasting Feast Hall," Qi Changqing was somewhat puzzled.

On the street nearby.

"Take them both. If the rest of you can still get up, go back immediately to find your employers. Tell them to come to my Everlasting Feast Hall within two hours. Otherwise, I can't guarantee that these two chaps' limbs will still be intact by then,"



said Tian Li in a cold and detached tone.

Having said that, she looked at the distance and waited calmly. She then waved toward two traffic police officers who had just arrived.

“Hello, Ma’am.”

The two traffic police hesitated a bit, but they eventually chose to come.

“I believe that you will also investigate this traffic accident clearly. Do remember to not act as if you don’t know. Don’t even think treating us unfairly because you know the background of these two kids. Now, call someone to take the car. I’ll send someone to contact the police authorities later,” said Tian Li indifferently.

“Understood, Ma’am!”

The two traffic police subconsciously looked at the six big men and nodded in consent.

6 PM.

Inside the Rainbow Auction House’s venue. Hundreds of guests had already come to attend tonight’s auction. The front entrance was closed as most of the lights inside were being turned off, leaving only the bright light shining on the auction block.

“Good evening, ladies and gentlemen.”

A young woman with light makeup and dressed in cheongsam walked casually to the auction block. With a bright smiling face, she spoke, “Does everyone think that me being the auctioneer presiding over for tonight’s auction is rather accidental? Actually, while I’m a singer, I was also an auctioneer in some auction houses abroad for half a year. I... am certified!”

"Hahaha..."

"It's so unexpected that a big star would preside over tonight's auction. It seems the auction house has spent a lot of money!"

“Wow! So eye-catching! The longer I look at this girl the more beautiful she looks!”

"Ah, the auctioneer is unexpectedly her!"

"..."

In the following seat, Tang Xiu was a bit surprised as he didn't expect that he would come across an acquaintance while attending this auction.

This acquaintance had once borrowed his mobile and owed him some money which-Zhang Xinya. Undeniably, Zhang Xinya was

very beautiful tonight; even comparable to Ouyang Lulu, Kang Xia, as well as Mu Wanying.

Wearing a smiling expression, Zhang Xinya gently raised her white-gloved palm and laughed, “I know that everyone wants to snatch the valuable goods tonight. So, without further ado, I announce that tonight’s auction starts now! The first item to be auctioned is a tea set of ceramic ware from the Royal Kiln of the Ming Dynasty. It is confirmed that this ceramic tea set was once used in the Royal Palace, making this a collection item for everyone who loves tea parties.”

“The reserve price is 5 million, with the bid increment of at least 100 thousand. Now, let the auction begin.”

Immediately, a lot of people began to bid:

“5.1 million!”

“5.5 million!”

" ... "

In just a few minutes, the price of this ceramic tea set from the Royal Kiln of Ming Dynasty had risen to 8.8 million. Eventually, the ceramic tea set was bought by an old man with a bid of 8.8 million yuan.

Zhang Xinya laughed, “Congratulations to the #0246 gentleman.

You can now go to the backstage to carry on the transaction, or you can wait for the auction to end before going there. Next, we'll auction the second item. It is..."

Under Zhang Xinya's auspicious ceremony, the auction was carried out in full swing. She possessed excellent eloquence and was good at inciting everyone's emotions. So almost every item had been sold at a very high price.

Two hours later.

After having auctioned an antique calligraphy and painting, Zhang Xinya said with a smile, "The next item to be auctioned is a mysterious ore. This mysterious ore is very unusual, even our appraiser experts were unable to identify it. What I can tell everyone is, this ore has a magical effect for whoever wears it. It will have a kind of peaceful and serene feeling and even make them feel comfortable. Originally, our auction house's Big Boss wanted to keep this ore, but this item belongs to the consignor who entrusted us to auction it, after all. Hence, we can only do what the client wants. So, if the Big Boss wants it, I'm afraid that you'll have to buy it through the auction."

"The reserve price is 1 million, with a bid increment of at least 100 thousand yuan for each bid."

At this moment, Tang Xiu had released his perception and quickly wrapped the ore on the tray held by Zhang Xinya. Along with his sensing, he already determined that this ore was indeed the Soul Tranquilizer Stone and also of the best quality.

“Earth certainly has a deep connection with the Immortal World, or else it’d be impossible to have so many valuable treasures from there.”

Thinking and sighing inwardly, Tang Xiu immediately bided. He had once participated in an auction and knew perfectly well that if someone really wanted to buy something they liked, they would only begin to show their capital later.

“1.1 million!”

"1.2 million!"

After the bid from two visitors, the venue went quiet.

Seeing this situation, Zhang Xinya didn’t lose heart and rather smiled, “Well, as the ancients said, jade can nourish people. Our auction house’s appraiser experts believe that this ore is also able to nourish and keep people healthy. So, I hope everyone bids enthusiastically. After all, the things that can bring good benefits for us are really scarce and rare.”

“2 million!”

As she finished speaking, someone immediately bid.

“2.5 million!”

“2.8 million!”

" ... "

"8 million!"

In just a few minutes, the price had raised to 8 million. Eight times more than the floor price. Finally, the people participating in the bidding were far fewer and there were only two to three people still raising the price.

Tang Xiu turned and nodded to Ji Chimei. Then, she raised her placard and spoke in a deep tone, “10 million.”

“11 million!” a voice sounded.

“20 million!” Ji Chimei lifted her placard again.

“50 million!”

The other party voiced his bid again in a deep tone. At the same time, the old man who just bid in the front row turned his head to look at Ji Chimei.

As indifferent as always, Ji Chimei lifted her placard again and said, “100 million.”

The old man's complexion changed slightly, looking upset. After staying been silent for a moment, he lifted his placard and said, "200 million!"

"500 million," Ji Chimei lifted her placard and bid.

Suddenly, the whole venue burst into an uproar, all looking toward Ji Chimei. Originally, they couldn't care less about a piece of ore as the reserve price was only 1 million. But in just a short time, its price had risen to 500 million. This kind of capital was the first time to occur in this auction until now. The most incredible fact was that the current bidding was no longer within hundreds or millions yuan increment in the bids, but soared to hundreds of millions!

"Ah, it that stone really a treasure?"

Many people secretly guessed.

At the moment, the old man showed a forced and wry expression. A lot of people knew him. He was one of the rich big bosses in Hong Kong. The entertainment bigwig, Gu Weidong. He was also one of the shareholders of the Rainbow Auction House. He didn't expect that that for such a bizarre, mysterious ore, someone would spend so high a price to compete with him.

500 million was nothing to him, but he could see that the other party's manner was to absolutely win it. Hence, he was perfectly aware that even if he increased the bid, the other party would bid

higher. And perhaps, because of this auction, he would have a fallout with them.

Then let it be! It looked like he wasn't fated with that piece of ore!

Gu Weidong shook his head and gave up.

At this time, Zhang Xinya's eyes didn't lock on Ji Chimei but looked at the direction of the voice as she saw Tang Xiu sitting there. She didn't expect that she would see Tang Xiu here.

When she discovered that Tang Xiu was also looking at her, the smile on her face turned more brilliant. Unnoticed, nodding slightly at Tang Xiu, she said with a smile, "It seems that someone has a keen perception to identify a pearl! The #0125 lady has bidden 500 million. Is there someone else who wants to bid higher? If not, this precious ore will belong to the #0125 lady!"



## Chapter 278: Successfully Obtaining the Items

---

The several hundreds of guests in the auction venue fell silent. They thought it wasn't worth it buying a piece of ore for 500 million.

Everyone looked at Ji Chimei with a slightly strange expression.

Even many people libeled inwardly, "Is this the extravagance of multi-millionaire people?"

On the other hand, as the auctioneer, seeing that nobody wanted to increase the bid, Zhang Xinya immediately smiled and said, "Since there's no one amongst the ladies and gentlemen that wants to increase the bid, then this ore will go to the #0125 lady. Are you going to carry out the transaction in the backstage or wait until the auction ends?"

"I'll go now!"

Ji Chimei stood up, nodding slightly toward Tang Xiu she then straightly left.

However, her action made most people's eyes turn toward Tang Xiu.

Even Zhang Xinya was flabbergasted. She had asked Ouyang

Lulu, her boudoir friend about Tang Xiu. Even though Ouyang Lulu didn't tell much about him, but what she did tell was enough to shock her secretly.

The auction thereafter was carried out as per usual.

A few minutes later Ji Chimei returned with the Soul Tranquilizer Stone. After she handed it over to Tang Xiu, she whispered, "Venerable Lord, we've successfully obtained what we need to buy. Shall we leave or continue bidding?"

Pondering for a moment, Tang Xiu replied, "You go first and take this Soul Tranquilizer Stone! Take Āwen with you. I'll stay here to see if there's anything else good enough to buy."

"Understood, Lord!"

Ji Chimed complied as she looked at Tang Xiu as he observed the Soul Tranquilizer Stone before giving it to her. As though recalling something, she quickly took out a bank card and handed it to him, "Lord, there's still 9.5 billion yuan in this card. If you see something you like, you can buy it freely."

Tang Xiu didn't refuse it since he really didn't have money. After taking it, he looked at the departing Ji Chimei and lamented that she was really thoughtful and sensible.

Money, wealth... it was merely worldly possessions.

He cared not about wealth, however, he was in a shortage of resources for his cultivation. He wanted to train a group of trusted subordinates immediately. Subsequently, it would need a lot of resources. If he had no money, it would indeed be difficult for him to handle a lot of matters. Had it been before, he would feel awkward to take the money from the Everlasting Feast Hall. But now, he didn't have this kind of feeling since he also had given the ingredients to Ji Chimei to refine pills, which itself was a priceless treasure.

However, just two minutes after Ji Chimei left, Zhang Xinya, at the auction block, said with a smile, "The next item to be auctioned is a millennium ginseng. As far as I know, there was an auction held in Jingmen Island that also auctioned a millennium ginseng. So, adding this piece now, we have two cases emerging this year, whereas we hadn't seen such an item being auctioned in our country within the last three years. This strain of millennium ginseng will be sold at the reserve price of 100 million, with a bid increment of no less than 5 million. Now, let the auction start."

A burst of light shot out from Tang Xiu's eyes. He hadn't read the auction catalog before so he didn't know anything else that this auction would sell apart from the Soul Tranquilizer Stone. When his perception enveloped the strain of millennium ginseng on the tray, his expression changed slightly.

"It's a three thousand years old wild ginseng?"

After an instant judgment, Tang Xiu quickly grabbed his mobile and dialed Mo Āwen's number.

“Yes, Boss!” Mo Āwen’s voice came through the phone.

“Tell Ji Chimei to come back,” said Tang Xiu in a deep tone.

"Yes!"

After ending the call, his eyes firmly locked on the three thousand years old wild ginseng.

"150 million!"

After ten seconds of silence, someone directly raised the price by 50 million. Many knew that person, the Eyeglasses Magnate of Hong Kong, Ke Zhentao.

“160 million!”

Even though many people knew Ke Zhentao, but a lot of them were also determined to obtain this millennium wild ginseng. Hence, they also didn’t want to back out this time.

“200 million!” Ke Zhentao increased the bid.

“210 million!”

“250 million!”

“260 million!”

“270 million!”

"..."

More than a dozen of people increased the price constantly and the millennium wild ginseng's price continued rising. In just five to six minutes, it had exceeded 350 million. Yet, the one who was bidding the price was still Ke Zhentao.

Looking at Ji Chimei who had just returned, Tang Xiu said lightly, “A wild ginseng is being auctioned now. No matter how high the price is, we must buy it. It will greatly benefit Yan’er.”

Ji Chimei's expression changed and she asked quickly, “Lord, what's the price now?”

“350 million!”

She nodded, raised her placard and called out, “500 million!”

"Wow..."

The entire auction venue turned into turmoil yet again by Ji Chimei's call. Several hundreds of riches that came to the auction talked in whispers.

“Who’s that old lady? She just spent 500 million to buy a stone and now she increased the bid by 150 million at once. Does she want to burn her money?”

“The value of that strain of millennium ginseng is at most 1.2 billion, right? But it’s rather extravagant to spend 500 million on this thing!”

"What is her identity and how have I never seen her before?"

“Send someone to investigate her. We must know her background before the auction ends.”

“Tonight there is really a good show to see! But wanting me to spend 500 million to buy a millennium wild ginseng is a big no no! I can only give up!”

"..."

"600 million!"

In the back corner of the hall, a man wearing reading glasses and dressed in a Chinese tunic suit suddenly raised his placard. When everyone’s eyes shifted to him, their expressions changed greatly.

Li Juren?

Nobody thought that the one who increased the bid turned out to

be Li Juren. They didn't know when Li Juren had arrived at the auction venue!

Tang Xiu turned his head. When he saw Li Juren, his brows wrinkled slightly. He didn't know much about the super billionaires in Hong Kong, but he knew who Li Juren was. After all, this person was the legendary richest man in Asia, and he often saw his photos.

Ji Chimei turned around to look at the back. She raised her placard once again and called out in a deep tone, "1 billion!"

"What?"

The guests in the entire venue were all dumbfounded. They didn't expect that Ji Chimei dared to compete with Li Juren for the strain of millennium ginseng, even raising the price by 400 million.

In the back row, Li Juren himself was astonished. He never thought that someone would raise the bid to 1 billion. He originally believed that after he bid 600 million it would be a sure shot that the millennium wild ginseng would be his.

He was silent for a moment before he raised his placard again and lightly said, "1.1 billion."

"2 billion!"

Ji Chimei didn't care about money. Even if she had to burn it, she had to obtain that more than 3,000 years old ginseng strain. After all, there were only a few things that could give benefits to her master. Once she found one, let alone spending money, even if she had to rob it forcefully and kill, she would still go all out.

Li Juren was stunned. He then shook his head. He was indeed a rich man and 2 billion was but only a small change to him. But it wasn't worth spending it to buy the millennium ginseng.

He was a businessman. He standards spending money. He wouldn't compete to buy things that were not worth to buy.

Hundreds of riches in the auction venue were at a loss and didn't know what to say. They only looked at Ji Chimei with strange expressions.

Nobody thought that Ji Chimei would dare to compete with Li Juren. More so that she even raised the bid by 900 million all of a sudden, so the millennium wild ginseng's price reached 2 billion yuan.

At this moment, Zhang Xinya also was shocked. She never thought that the price of this millennium wild ginseng would actually reach 2 billion yuan. Originally, she thought that a price of 500 million yuan would be its limit. But now, it seems that it was 4 times higher than she expected!

However, she still felt happy inwardly. According to the agreement between her and the auction house, she would get one



thousandth commission fee for each item sold in the auction. If the auctioned items could reach ten times the reserve price, she would get a commission fee of two thousandths.

“For tonight’s commission fee, it wouldn’t be less than 8 digits, right?”

Zhang Xinya couldn’t help but feel happy inside.

Immediately after, she noticed that Li Juren didn’t seem to want to increase the bid again as she said, “Is there any higher bid? If not, this strain of millennium wild ginseng will belong to the #0125 lady.”

After asking for a few more times and having nobody call out, Zhang Xinya knocked the wooden mallet and said with a smile, “Congratulations to the #0125 lady. You’ve won this strain of millennium wild ginseng. Might I ask whether you want to go to the backstage to carry out the transaction or wait until the auction ends?”

“I’ll go now!”

Ji Chimei stood up as she nodded again toward Tang Xiu before she left.

As for the next auction, Tang Xiu no longer followed.

10 PM.

The auction had ended. The guests had gotten up and were ready to leave. Smiling, Zhang Xinya put off her white gloves as she appeared in front of Tang Xiu. Her gaze swept away from Ji Chimei and then shifted toward Tang Xiu. She then said with a smile, "Hello, Mr. Tang. We meet again."

Whilst nodding at her, Tang Xiu realized that a lot of people around were looking at her. He then immediately replied, "Has your family member gotten well? I heard from Chen Zhizhong that he already found the medicine you need."

Zhang Xinya nodded solemnly and replied gratefully, "He's already fine. Anyways, thank you, Mr. Tang. If not because of you, I..."

Raising his hands to interrupt her, Tang Xiu then turned around as he looked at Ji Chimei and said, "Āwen will escort you to Victoria Harbor! Immediately go back to Jingmen Island and take this wild ginseng. Wait for me to come back before giving the medication to Yan'er."

"Understood!"

Showing respect on her old face, Ji Chimei complied and left with Mo Āwen, whereas Mo Āwu was left standing beside Tang Xiu as though a spear.

Surprised, Zhang Xinya looked at the leaving Ji Chimei, astonished. When she looked back to him, she asked curiously,

“Tang Xiu, you know that old lady? Listening to your conversation with her, it seems that you...”

“She’s my subordinate,” said Tang Xiu calmly.

## Chapter 279: Li Juren's Invitation

---

Shocked, Zhang Xinya looked at Tang Xiu tongue-tied as she could hardly believe what she heard. Her heart throbbed faster than before.

His subordinate?

The elderly who bid billions of yuan that shocked the audience and even didn't give Li Juren face turned out to be Tang Xiu's subordinate? In other words, she buying that piece of ore and wild ginseng was in fact for her master, Tang Xiu?

Looking at her, Tang Xiu felt funny. He found that her dumbfounded expression was quite cute, especially her bright black eyes and her charming fazed look was as if a cute kitty.

Suddenly, Tang Xiu's face flickered as he smiled and asked, "Do you have anything else to do later?"

Swallowing her saliva and waking up from her daze, Zhang Xinya then shook her head and said, "After presiding over this auction, I got nothing to do."

"Are you familiar with Hong Kong?" asked Tang Xiu.

"Of course! I'm a native here!" answered Zhang Xinya.

“If so, do you have time now? It’s my first time in Hong Kong and I must leave tomorrow. The night is still young and I haven’t had time to stroll around here, so how about finding a place and have some snacks?” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

“You’re leaving tomorrow?” surprised, Zhang Xinya asked.

“Yea, I’m going abroad to take care of something,” said Tang Xiu

“Please wait a while, I’ll go get my bag! Hong Kong is well-known as the gourmet paradise. I’ll take you to taste the local unique delicacies.”

Tang Xiu squinted as he saw some people behind Zhang Xinya.

Though Li Juren was elderly, his body was still healthy and vigorous and didn’t need a helper. His pace was still steady and calm. But beside him, two middle-aged bodyguards that looked like bouncers accompanied him.

“Little Brother, may I ask your surname?”

“It’s Tang. Tang Xiu!”

Li Juren nodded slowly as he stood before Tang Xiu. Smiling, he asked, “If my guess is correct, you should know the old lady who competed with me for the wild ginseng, or you should have a deep relationship with her, yes?”

“Your guess is correct. She’s my subordinate,” said Tang Xiu lightly.

Li Juren stared blankly for a moment. He didn’t expect that that old lady turned out to be a subordinate of the young man before him. He immediately smiled, “Little Brother Tang, it seems like you’re a very interesting young man, a really rare one at that. If that’s true, then you might have abused her—the elderly—since she’s old already. She should have been in her retirement and enjoying life, no?”

Shaking his head, Tang Xiu replied, “How about you? Does Li Juren himself wants to retire and enjoy the rest of his life?”

"Uh....."

Stunned and staring blankly for a second, Li Juren laughed involuntarily the moment after, saying, “Little Brother Tang is truly interesting. Anyways, do you have time to have a dinner together?”

“I’m sorry. I just invited her,” Tang Xiu shook his head.

Yet again, Li Juren got surprised for a moment, for he didn’t expect that Tang Xiu actually would refuse him.

Aside from the dear beauty Kang Xia who also rejected his invitation, it had been many years that nobody refused him.

At this time, Zhang Xinya was also shocked since she had never imagined that Li Juren would come here personally. More so that his purpose was to invite Tang Xiu to dinner, and the most shocking thing was the latter actually rejected it. Recalling how powerful Li Juren was, she quickly asked, “Mr. Tang, it’s fine with me!”

After being silent for a moment, Tang Xiu said lightly, “Since you don’t mind, let’s have dinner together! You’re the local host here, so it’s your call.”

Zhang Xinya looked at Li Juren, silent. The latter then said with a smile, “Well, Little Brother Tang is not a native of Hong Kong. In that case, might I play the host? I went to Beijing a few days ago and my old friend gave me some good tea. How about we taste it together?”

“Please lead the way!” said Tang Xiu calmly.

At this time, a voice came over as Ke Zhentao arrived before them and said with a smile, “Uncle Li, Little Brother, may I join you?”

“Zhentao, since you couldn’t buy that wild ginseng then you want to know the buyer’s identity, huh?” Li Juren laughed.

Being seen through, Ke Zhentao looked awkward, but in a moment after, his expression turned normal and smiled, “Yea! Spending 2 billion yuan for a wild ginseng made me very curious

about the buyer.”

Toward Ke Zhentao, Tang Xiu also didn't have a suspicion at all because it was an auction after all; the highest bidder would win. Whereas Li Juren and he had also spent more than a billion.

Turning and shaking hands with Tang Xiu, Ke Zhentao then said with a smile, “I'm Ke Zhentao.”

Accepting his handshake, Tang Xiu then said, “Shall we go?”

A car had been waiting outside as they went out of the auction house. There were still a lot of guests that had yet to leave as they chatted in small groups of two or three. Seeing Li Juren and Ke Zhentao coming out, they approached to greet them. Li Juren himself greeted them cordially and responded to everyone with a smile. After they boarded the car and left, the crowd that greeted Li Juren and Ke Zhentao broke into chatter:

“The young man that was followed Li Juren and Ke Zhentao, who's he? I recall he was the one seating with the old lady who bought the wild ginseng at the auction.”

“What's that young man's identity? How could he leave with Li Juren?”

“That famous singer—Zhang Xinya seems to have a rather unordinary relationship with that young man. They just boarded the same car.”



“Have you seen that young man before? From which family he comes from?”

" ... "

Deepwater Bay 79, Li Juren's mansion.

As five cars arrived slowly at the mansion's entrance and parked in the interior parking lot, Tang Xiu and Zhang Xinya got off from the Hummer. Tang Xiu was somewhat curious about Li Juren's mansion. After all, his mansion had always been very mysterious all these years as no one amongst the paparazzi in Hong Kong was able to take a picture of its interior.

“Little Brother Tang, is my place good enough?”

Greeting them into the main hall, Li Juren then sat in the sofa of the first floor's living room and asked with a smile. He could feel an extraordinary bearing exuding from Tang Xiu. Such an aura could only be seen from those who had high status. Hence, he was very curious about him.

“It's good. The construction, the style of interior design and decoration, the furniture's placement-the most particular and important thing is, the Feng Shui here is excellent. You should have asked someone to manage it for you, no?” said Tang Xiu calmly.

Surprised, Li Juren stared blankly for a moment as he asked in astonishment, “Little Brother Tang actually knows about Feng Shui?”

“I know a little about it,” Tang Xiu laughed.

A profound respect immediately revealed itself on Li Juren’s expression. He firmly believed in Feng Shui, and those masters who had knowledge about Feng Shui had a high status either in Hong Kong or all over the world.

“May I know who Little Brother Tang’s teacher is?”

Shaking his head, Tang Xiu answered, “I apologize, I can’t say. It’s kind of inconvenient.”

A tinge of regret could be seen on Li Juren’s face as he then put the thought to the back of his mind. This time he invited Tang Xiu over in order to find out what uses did Tang Xiu had for that wild ginseng for him to spare no expense to buy it.

“Where are you from, Little Brother Tang? Listening to your accent, you shouldn’t be a native, right?”

“Shuangqing Province,” said Tang Xiu.

“The development in the Mainland is very fast now. I had traveled to Shuangqing Province before and it has a lot of wealthy families there. But I’ve never heard... about a Tang Family there.

Yet, being able to come with such a huge amount of money to buy the ore and the ginseng, I presume that it should be a family with a profound background, no?”

“Ring, ring, ring...”

Tang Xiu’s mobile suddenly rang. As he took it out and saw the caller’s number, his brows slightly furrowed as he pressed the answer button and spoke, “Tang Xiu speaking.”

“Boss, it’s Tian Li. A huge number of people showed up near our restaurant in Hong Kong. If my guess is correct, they should be related with the Jiang Group, Wanyuan Real Estate, and Du Kang Winery. Hao Lei has already brought the Grand Fortune Jewelries’ guards here. What do you command, Boss?”

A killing intent glinted from Tang Xiu’s eyes as his expression turned cold and replied in a deep tone, “I’ll be there shortly. If they dare to attack the restaurant before I get there, fight them back.”

"Yes!" said Tian Li respectfully.

After hanging up the phone, Tang Xiu looked at Li Juren and Ke Zhentao who looked surprised and said, “Gentlemen, I have a small matter to deal with. If there’s an opportunity, we’ll gather again later! Also, about the question from Mr. Ke, I must tell you that it’s better to rely on oneself rather than rely on the heaven and place. If you have some time in the future, please visit and look after my enterprise here, the Everlasting Feast Hall.”

Having said that, he turned to Zhang Xinya and said, “It seems that having you as a tour guide tonight must be canceled. I’ll contact you again the next time I visit Hong Kong.”

“I’ll go with you,” Zhang Xinya said quickly.

Staying silent for a moment, Tang Xiu then nodded.

Getting up and looking at Tang Xiu, Li Juren said with a bit of surprised expression, “Little Brother Tang, I know about the Everlasting Feast Hall. Its headquarters is on Jingmen Island. But I have never imagined that you’d turn out to be the big boss of the enterprise though. That call before, there seems to be some trouble in the Everlasting Feast Hall, yes? I have some connections in Hong Kong, would you like me to lend a hand?”

Tang Xiu shook his head, “No, I’ll resolve it myself.”

Li Juren and Ke Zhentao watched as Tang Xiu and Zhang Xinya got on the car and quickly left. Li Juren then turned around and said to a big bodyguard, “Send someone to investigate Tang Xiu’s identity. Also, find out about what’s happening there.”

“Understood!”

The big bodyguard replied and left.

“Uncle Li, you seem to value Tang Xiu? It’s not like your style.” Ke Zhentao said with a smile.

“I just feel that this young man is very mysterious. He has an aura of someone that has been in a high position for a long time. I find it hard to believe that a young man in his early 20s can actually develop such an imposing manner; unless, he has been in a superior position above anyone else since childhood and has a huge power and privileges. Hence, I’m a bit curious about him.”

## Chapter 280: The Shocking Past Events

---

Nodding, Ke Zhentao replied, “He spent 2.5 billion in tonight’s auction. Despite my knowledge, it’s my first time seeing a young man in his 20s who can do something so extraordinary. That Everlasting Feast Hall seems very mysterious and also has a deep relationship with the Grand Fortune Jewelries.”

Laughing, Li Juren said, “Actually, the Grand Fortune Jewelries is one of the Everlasting Feast Hall’s industries.”

“What?”

Ke Zhentao’s expression changed and looked shocked.

The smile on Li Juren’s face disappeared, replaced by a slightly dignified expression as he slowly said, “You might not know, but I had been to Jingmen Island 20 years ago. At that time, I had some problems with my business and was in need of a fleet of ships to transport a number of goods. At that time, the Everlasting Feast Hall already had a sizeable fleet and a very mysterious woman surnamed Gu was the sole owner of the enterprise. I sent someone to investigate her, however, not only there were no results, even the people I sent disappeared out of thin air.”

Shocked and aghast, Ke Zhentao replied, “Uncle Li, you mean... those people you sent had been done in by the Everlasting Feast Hall’s people?”

“No, they did not die, but they were captured and escorted to a

mining area somewhere in Africa and became coolies there. That time, the owner of that mining area was the former owner of the Everlasting Feast Hall. She complied with my pleas that time, but I had to promise her two things in exchange.”

Listening to the behind the scenes secret story of that year, Ke Zhentao asked, “What did you promise?”

With all seriousness, Li Juren solemnly said, “First, she forbade me to investigate the Everlasting Feast Hall further, otherwise, I and my company group would disappear from Earth. Secondly, she wanted me to help her find someone surnamed Tang—Tang Xiu.”

Ke Zhentao suddenly said, “So, it turned out that the reason why you invited him over is that he’s someone that the Everlasting Feast Hall wanted you to find him!”

“No. I didn’t recall that matter at first. It’s just that I felt that he’s very special; thus, I invited him over. But, when he said he’s the Boss of the Everlasting Feast Hall, then I remembered what happened that year.”

Smiling, Ke Zhentao said, “Uncle Li, you are really someone with keen perception! However, the Everlasting Feast Hall seems to be kinda very arrogant to even dare to threaten you.”

“Zhentao, remember my words. You must never become an enemy of the Everlasting Feast Hall!” said Li Juren solemnly.

“Your meaning is... the Everlasting Feast Hall is very powerful; even on par with the current you?” Ke Zhentao asked in astonishment.

Falling into silence for a moment, Li Juren then slowly said, “Perhaps the wealth of the Everlasting Feast Hall is on par with me, but they possess fearsome power, for which I can never able to contend with! For the rest of my life, I’m afraid that I can never forget the scene 20 years ago when I shipped those cargos and was attacked by pirates.”

“What scene?” asked Ke Zhentao quickly.

Overlooking the Dongsha Islands, Li Juren said word by word, “The Black Shark Pirates had once been a scourge in Dongsha Islands for decades and they were all composed of vicious and ruthless pirates. They boasted of more than 200 heavily armed pirates and their military strength was very strong. Yet, those 20 guards from Everlasting Feast Hall who were protecting the ships destroyed them. Completely.”

“What?” Ke Zhentao involuntarily cried out in fright.

Taking back his vision, Li Juren looked at him deeply and said, “You didn’t hear it wrong. Those pirates were completely annihilated by those guards without using firearms. They only carried a dagger each, disappearing and appearing mysteriously near those pirates. More than 200 pirates were killed, but only six men got minor injuries and one was heavily injured amongst those 20 guards; no deaths.”



"Hiss..."

Ke Zhentao shivered and couldn't help but take a cold breath.

Gently patting him on the shoulder, Li Juren seriously said, "So, remember my words. Do not become an enemy of the Everlasting Feast Hall; they are too fearsome and horrifying. Even if my guards are very powerful and I train a lot of powerful individuals, but I can never be compared with them."

"I'll bear that in mind, Uncle Li," Ke Zhentao nodded heavily as different color glinted in his eyes.

Hong Kong, Kowloon Bay.

The Everlasting Feast Hall covered a very wide area whereby four antique towering restaurants with five floors each stood, along with a seven-story towering pavilion that was located between the four restaurants. Normally, the center restaurant of the Everlasting Feast Hall was not opened to the public unless a VIP visited the venue, which it then would be opened officially.

Each of the four restaurants had its own manager, whereas Tian Li was the General Manager.

"Chief Tian, what should we do now?"

On the third floor window of the northern restaurant building, a gentle middle-aged man who was standing beside Tian Li softly asked. He was Deng Zhen—the manager of the North restaurant.

“Boss will be here shortly. If those people dare to attack the restaurant, we’ll fight back immediately. But don’t kill them, it’s fine disabling them.” Tian Li said in a cold and detached tone.

“Understood!”

Though Deng Zhen was curious about the fabled Big Boss, he didn’t dare to show it. Becoming a manager of the North restaurant of the Everlasting Feast Hall in Hong Kong was already considered as a high-level position, yet he still only saw the small Boss before and had never seen the Big Boss.

Behind them was the sexy Hao Lei, nesting on the sofa lazily with a cigarette between her fingers. She smirked, “It seems that our new Boss is kind of a ruthless figure too! Is it because Elder Ji is with him?”

Turning her head to her, Tian Li said calmly, “Elder Ji left Hong Kong half an hour ago to return to Jingmen Island.”

A tinge of astonishment could be seen on Hao Lei’s face as she puffed out and said, “Tian Li, how much do you know about our new Boss.”

Looking at her, Tian Li shook her head, “I’m afraid I know less

than you.”

Rolling her eyes, Hao Lei hummed, “Hmph, you’re playing modest huh? You did intelligence in the past and it seems that aside from getting news and all, you’re also the strongest amongst us. Come on, hurry and tell me what you know!”

“Boss is very easy going and young. Elder Ji told me when she left that Mo Āwen and Mo Āwu’s opportunity came; and its due to the order from Boss.”

Opportunity?

Hao Lei was stunned and suddenly jumped from the sofa with glittering lights in her eyes, growling, “You mean that they have learned...”

With slight envy in her eyes, Tian Li said, “That’s right. Hence, we can also take our chances. If we could get it, then, we will ascend; but if not, we may have to wait for a very long time.”

Hao Lei took a deep breath and replied in a heavy tone, “I gotta take this opportunity. Even if Boss wants me to serve him, I’ll sacrifice everything.”

"Pfft..."

Tian Li couldn’t help laughing as she glanced at her and humorlessly said, “We only need to do one thing in front of our

Boss.”

“What is it?”

“Obedience. Absolute obedience. Even if Boss wants us to die, you must never shrink back,” said Tian Li with a revered expression.

Rolling her eyes, Hao Lei sat back on the sofa as she moved her leg on top of the other and said, “You still need to say that? The former Big Boss in the past... in any case, our lives belong to Big Boss, same for the new Big Boss.”

Standing beside Tian Li, an intense curiosity budded out inside Deng Zhen’s heart when he listened to their conversation. He was clueless about the meaning of their conversation, but he had already guessed that the opportunity they talked about should be the core secret in the Everlasting Feast Hall.

Others may not know how strong Tian Li and Hao Lei were, but he knew perfectly well about it. When Tian Li rescued him in the past, the military strength shown by her could be called as terrifyingly fearsome.

‘They said they could get an opportunity. Could I get it also?’

Secretly, Deng Zhen lamented and was also full of expectation.

As he turned his head and looked out of the window, he suddenly shook and said in a deep tone, “Chief Tian, those Bosses are

coming.”

Turning her head, Tian Li looked down and immediately saw more than ten black cars approaching quickly, stopping in front of the North restaurant. More than 20 big men also got off, whereas three people came out from three cars. She had seen those three men; the Big Boss of Jiang Group—Jiang Ba; the Big Boss of Wanyuan Real Estate—Chen Jianye; and the Du Kang Winery’s Big Boss—Du Changze. Following them was Du Yan whom she had beaten before.

“Deng Zhen, let’s greet and take them to the second floor’s hall.”

"Yes!" replied Deng Zhen as he nodded with a tinge of worry inside.

Though he knew that the Everlasting Feast Hall possessed many powerful soldiers, however, they had provoked three big forces this time. He was worried that the Everlasting Feast Hall wouldn’t be their opponents if their faces were really torn.

Turning her head and looking at Hao Lei, Tian Li said, “Let’s not be idle waiting for them on the second floor. If they don’t settle the account today, no matter what, we’ll slaughter them.”

Hao Lei replied with a smile, “We really know each other, eh. If the Boss really order us to slay them all, you’ll snatch this chance from me. All these years, I could only grab some time every year to move my hands and feet when going to the gold and diamond mine in Africa. So I got a really bad mood!”

Tian Li snorted coldly, “Good for you. You can move your hands and feet every year. As for me? It’s been a few years that I haven’t seen blood. I gotta shift the place with the others when I get back to Jingmen Island. How about I propose to Boss to exchange our positions?”

"No way!" Hao Lei's face changed and quickly shouted.

“Pfft...” Tian Li couldn’t help laughing and gave a teasing smile before she turned and walked toward the door.

Within the second floor of the North restaurant there was a hall big enough to accommodate hundreds of people. However, the tables and chairs there had been removed by the Everlasting Feast Hall’s staff as only a chair remained on the bright red carpet in the innermost hall. There, Jiang Yu and Chen Fei, who were brought back by Tian Li, knelt in front of the chair with four big men guarding them.

Shame and anger!

The both of them grew up with golden spoons since childhood. They used to drown themselves in a life of luxury, being superior to many, where others usually acted humble despite their unruliness, smiling and flattering them. Yet, why would they encounter such a disaster today? How could they be beaten so savagely by others, being forced to kneel here and wait for their parents?

# Chapter 281: The Hit

---

Disdain glittered in Tian Li and Hao Li's eyes as they came to the second floor's hall and saw Jiang Yu and Chen Fei kneeling and fuming with anger. If these two fellas hadn't a big background, they would have been killed for daring to offend the Boss.

"Tian Li, let me free!"

Seeing Tian Li, Jiang Yu suddenly tried to jump from the floor, but two big men held his shoulders tight, one of them punching him fiercely.

Tian Li sneered, "Don't try to struggle if you don't wanna enjoy more pain. Your parents will be here shortly. If they don't wanna discipline you, I'll do the task. Don't force me to become a killer thoroughly. Remember that!"

Dizzy after getting punched, Jiang Yu no longer dared to struggle.

Kneeling, Chen Fei's eyes were ablaze. If he had not seen Jiang Yu being beaten, he'd have long since got up. Panting heavily, he glared and sternly spoke to Tian Li, "Tian Li, your Everlasting Feast Hall may be very famous and has good business in Hong Kong; but you dare act against me. Just wait! You'll get fucked up! When that time comes, I'll make you kneel before me, screaming and wailing!"

"What an idiot!"

Disinclined to bother with him, Tian Li held her arms and waited.

In front of the entrance of the Everlasting Feast Hall's North restaurant, ten men in black suits and grim looks confronted Jiang Tianba, Chen Jianye, and Du Changze who brought along 20 big men with them. The other men who were lingered around the vicinity also moved closer, and the number was nearly a hundred.

“Step aside!”

Growling, Deng Zhen appeared with two big guards behind the two security guards.

Suddenly, the ten big men opened a path.

Ruthless, cold light glinted in Jiang Tianba's eyes along with a tinge of killing intent within. He coldly looked at Deng Zheng and said, “Never had I expected that this small Everlasting Feast Hall would go so far to be as crazy as this. This is Hong Kong, not Jingmen Island. Do you wanna die for provoking us here?”

Deng Zhen sneered, “If you think we're tired of living, just tell your men to act. Since you already made such a big fuss, surely you wanna make trouble here, no?”

Fuming with anger, Jiang Tianba gritted his teeth and said, “Cut the crap, where's my son?”



“He’s inside,” said Deng Zhen.

“Take us to see Tian Li,” said Jiang Tianba coldly.

Indifferent, Deng Zhen replied, “You can come inside, but those men gotta stay outside. Jiang Tianba, Chen Jianye, Du Changze, each of you can take two of your men inside. Otherwise, I’ll see it as you acting against us.”

Stepping forward, Chen Jianye said coldly, “You know who we are, yet you still dare to be so arrogant. It looks like the Everlasting Feast Hall has big guts, eh! But I wanna see whether you really have the ability.”

Having said that, he nodded to the two big men behind him and took the lead to enter.

Clashing with the people of the Everlasting Feast Hall was not something Jiang Tianba wanted at this moment. After all, his son was still their hands. He went inside along with his two bodyguards as the anger inside him blazed ever more fiercely.

Following him, Du Changze took along Du Yang and one of his bodyguards and said indifferently, “Though my son is not in your hands, I also want to see whether your place is a tiger nest or not.”

Deng Zhen didn’t reply. He turned around and took them toward the second floor. After opening the room to the hall, he walked

straight toward Tian Li and stood there silently.

When Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye saw that their sons were forced to kneel on the floor and had obviously been beaten in the face, their anger immediately turned evident.

“Good. It’s really great. You’re Tian Li, right? I really didn’t expect that you’d have such a big courage! It seems that this matter can no longer end peacefully, “Jiang Tianba sternly spoke.

Indifferent, Tian Li said, “Just as well. Peaceful or not is not something you can decide. Were it for the Boss having the final say, your son wouldn’t be kneeling here right now, he’d have long been a cold, dead body.”

"You dare!" Jiang Tianba shouted furiously.

Looking grim and cold, Chen Jianye glared deeply at Tian Li. His gaze then turned to Hao Lei who let out a smile that was yet unlike one, and coldly said, “Chief Hao also wants to be involved in this?”

Laughing, Hao Lei said, “If I don’t join in, our boss will kick me! There’s no way I can ask the Boss for a favor, so I can only run over here.”

Brows furrowed, Chen Jianye asked, “Your boss? That means the Grand Fortune Jewelries and the Everlasting Feast Hall is owned by your Boss?”

Hao Lei smiled, “You’re so smart, eh! But how did you give birth to such idiot son? Tsk, tsk... don’t tell me that your wife cheated on you and he’s not your biological son?”

“Asshole!” Chen Jianye was shocked inside, yet he still angrily shouted.

Seemingly not hearing Chen Jianye’s shout, Hao Lei smiled and muttered to herself, “Eh, it can’t be right, though. If he’s not your son, you wouldn’t be running here to save him now. That’s right. I believe that you—father and son should have taken a DNA test.”

Looking at her angrily, Chen Jianye’s vision turned to Tian Li and growled, “What do you want for my son to be released?”

Shaking her head, Tian Li replied, “It’s not our place to say. Our boss is on the way here. So we have to wait for him about that.”

“Who’s your boss?” asked Chen Jianye coldly.

Tian Li mocked and sneered, “You wanna know about him? Then you gotta wait!”

Right at this moment, Du Yang, who was behind Du Changze, was looking at the miserable looking Jiang Yu and Chen Fei. He secretly felt fortunate that he didn’t affronted Tian Li further back then, or else he would be kneeling there as those two.

His father—Du Changze, however, had his brows furrowed

deeply as he came in and saw Hao Lei. Never did he expect that the Everlasting Feast Hall and the Grand Fortune Jewelries belonged to the same Boss. He knew about the Grand Fortune Jewelries, for it had quite the power and even monopolized some gold and diamond mines in Africa. The enterprise may look to have only a few billions of assets on the surface, yet no one knew as how much wealth they really possessed in the back.

Astute as he was, Du Changze could see how fearless Tian Li and Hao Lei were. Watching as Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye fumed in anger yet couldn't do anything, he wisely chose to stay silent.

He had learned about what had happened today and it was evident that he could retreat. In the case he followed and Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye couldn't do anything to the Everlasting Feast Hall and Grad Fortune Jewelries, he could draw back and apologize directly. As for the case of his son being beaten, there was nothing he could do but to swallow it silently.

More than ten minutes later, Tang Xiu along with Mo Awen, Mo Awu, and Zhang Xinya arrived at the Hong Kong's Everlasting Feast Hall site. The ten security guards didn't know him but knew the Mo Brothers as they saluted them and let them pass directly.

“Where's Tian Li?”

Looking at one of the guards, Tang Xiu asked in a deep tone.

That guard glanced at Mo Awen and Mo Awu. He instantly knew that the person should be their new boss as he quickly replied,

“She’s in the second floor’s hall.”

Nodding, Tang Xiu walked upstairs under the guidance of a few big men. As he came to the side hall, his vision swept the situation inside before landing on Jiang Tianba and the others. He then walked toward the chair between Tian Li and Hao Lei and sat there.

“You’re the boss of the Everlasting Feast Hall and Grand Fortune Jewelries?”

Coldly sizing up Tang Xiu, Chen Jianye asked in a sinking tone. He was secretly at ease since he had never seen Tang Xiu, thinking that Tang Xiu was not someone from some of the untouchable forces in Hong Kong.

Tang Xiu took a cigarette from his pocket, igniting, sucking and puffing it out, without even paying attention to him. He turned around to look at Zhang Xinya and asked, “Do you want to wait in another room? If you stay here, I’m afraid that you won’t be able to stand it! But don’t worry, though. The Everlasting Feast Hall has good cuisines and drinks to serve; they should be able to fill your tastes.”

Coming along with Tang Xiu and even seeing such a scene here, it was out of Zhang Xinya’s imagination. She knew a lot of people present here such as Jiang Tianba, Chen Jianye, Du Changze, and even Tian Li and Hao Lei. She also clearly knew the true face of the kneeling silk pants—Jiang Yu and Chen Lei.

“I’ll stay here with you.”

Thinking that Tang Xiu had once helped her, Zhang Xinya replied without thinking.

Nodding at her, Tang Xiu didn’t mind if she stayed. Right after, he turned around and looked at Jiang Tianba, Chen Jianye, and Du Changze as he pointed at the kneeling Jiang Yu and Chen Fei, asking, “Who are their parents? Stand up!”

Walking two steps forward, Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye shot a cold glance at Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu nodded, “I believe you already know everything about the matter. Hence, I won’t say it again. Give me your solutions!”

Sneering, Jiang Tianba replied, “We naturally know about everything regarding this matter. I admit that it was my son’s fault for accidentally hitting your car, yet you’ve gone too far! Let my son go and confess to us. Otherwise, this won’t end peacefully.”

Nodding heavily at his answer, Chen Jianye said coldly, “The only one who has the rights to teach my son is me. Whoever hits my son must pay with broken limbs and then apologize to him.”

“Break his son’s hands!” Turning his head, Tang Xiu said indifferently.

“Crack. Crack...”

The two big guys standing beside Chen Fei moved swiftly. With one holding his shoulders, the other hit Chen Fei's wrist. Such explosive strength directly smashed both of Chen Fei's wrists.

"Bastard!"

Chen Jianye violently raged as he dashed toward Chen Fei.

"Get lost!"

A sharp dagger instantly appeared in the big guy's hand beside Chen Fei and placed it on his neck. His eyes were icy, showing that he would unhesitatingly cut Chen Fei's throat if Chen Jianye dared to rush over.

Chen Jianye's breath came to a halt and abruptly stopped his dash.

Behind him, Jiang Tianba who had his eyes bursting out with shock and fright. Even in his wildest imagination he had never thought that Tang Xiu would be so rampant and ruthless despite his young age. Just a word from Chen Jianye resulted in his son—Chen Fei's wrist to be broken.

In an instant, he felt somewhat lucky inside that he didn't say such words, otherwise, the one who would have his wrists broken now would perhaps be his own son.

## Chapter 282: A Silent and Cold Massacre

---

Angrily laughing, Chen Jianye's eyes glared at Tang Xiu with blazing intent to kill. He raised his thumb and shouted, "Great. It's just great. For many years now nobody dared to humiliate me like this. Don't use my son if you really got the ability."

Indifferent, Tang Xiu said lightly, "Let them go."

"Yes!"

The four big guys picked Chen Fei and Jiang Yu up and pushed them towards Chen Jianye.

"Ouch..."

"Aaah..."

With two screams, Chen Fei and Jiang Yu tumbled, hiding behind them, hatefully glaring at Tang Xiu.

Chen Jianye snarled, "Let's go."

"Slow down!"

"Do you think the Everlasting Feast Hall is someplace you can come and go so freely? Before you give me a confession, not one of you can leave this place!" Tang Xiu sneered.



Jiang Tianba stepped back and mocked, “What? Because this is your turf you want to bother us? You can believe me or not, but I can demolish your Everlasting Feast Hall within half a day.”

Giving a gesture to invite him, Tang Xiu said lightly, “If you have the ability, bring it on! I saw the crowd you brought here when I came in. Call all of them inside. I wanna have a look at what kind of force you have.”

Staring blankly for a moment, Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye nodded to each other and quickly gave a command to their bodyguards. Within just a few minutes, nearly 200 big men rushed into the front door of the Everlasting Feast Hall.

Only now did Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye feel relieved. They already had their sons protected and had their henchmen surrounding them. As long as they issued the order, those on the Everlasting Feast Hall’s side would be miserably beaten to a pulp. Furthermore, their henchmen were also armed with guns. Once they acted, the bullets would be enough to kill them all.

Du Changze’s dozens of subordinates had also come inside. However, unknown to himself, he subconsciously put some distance between himself and Jiang Tianba and Chen Fei, joining his men.

‘There’s something wrong here!’

As careful as he had always been, Du Changze was a discreet man.

He had been keenly observing all the time. Either Tang Xiu, Tian Li or Hao Lei, there was not the slightest fear on their faces; they even showed disdainful expressions. This fact made him secretly vigilant. Furthermore, it was simply unfathomable seeing the guards in the hall only wielding daggers without even a hint of panic or fright. Rather, it faintly seemed that they were impatient to act.

That's right! It was just like a war! But, 34 people fighting against 100 to 200 people?

Instantly, Du Changze made a judgment. The Everlasting Feast Hall absolutely had skills which were yet to be seen, and it was perhaps not simple either.

'I can't take action easily.'

Having decided inside, he retreated two steps backward.

"Tang Xiu..."

Standing beside Tang Xiu, Zhang Xianya fell into a fright upon seeing such a battle-ready parade. She stepped back half a step and grabbed Tang Xiu's shoulders.

Patting her back, Tang Xiu looked at Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye and serenely said, "This is your last chance. If you don't have any assurance, I'm afraid you'll be regretting this decision for the rest of your life."

"Hahaha..." Jiang Tianba burst into laughter, "I've met a lot of idiots in my life, but such an idiot like you never once I've seen one. Can you see the situation you're in now? It's simply very easy for us to kill you if we want to."

Laughing and sneering, Chen Jianye said, "That's true. We had no choice but to come here since you took our sons as hostages before. But now, what else are you relying on?"

As the two spoke, their henchmen took out their guns and knives one after another, fiercely eyeing Tang Xiu and his men, just waiting their bosses give the order to attack.

"Clap. Clap. Clap..."

Tang Xiu clapped and smiled, "This is great. Your courage is praiseworthy. What about the other one—the Boss of the Du Kang Winery. Du Changze, how about you?"

Being silent for a moment, Du Changze quickly grinned, "As the father whose son had been beaten, naturally I can't stay indifferent. However, solve the matter between the two of you first, then we'll talk about the matter between us."

Having said that, he gathered his troops and retreated more than 10 meters from both sides, showing that this was none of his business.

"Du Changze!"

"Surnamed Du!"

Both Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye were furious since they didn't expect that Du Changze would actually flee at such a critical point, pushing them to probe Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu smiled, "You're still smart enough compared to these two idiots... Anyways, you're Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye, yes? Since you wanna play, I'll keep you accompany. Except for the four of them, kill everyone else!"

The moment his voice fell, four figures belonging to Tian Li, Hao Lei, Mo Āwen, and Mo Āwu instantly dashed towards Chen Jianye and Jiang Tianba. Their speed was exceedingly fast as the distance of more than 10 meters passed in nearly a blink.

"Poof! Poof! Poof! Poof!"

The four people wielding their daggers dashed in front of Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye and pierced their shoulders. In almost a blink of an eye, Tian Li and Hao Lei caught them as they moved to the side and retreated, whereas Mo Āwen and Mo Āwu moved smoothly as though passing clouds and flowing water, unhindered. Their sharp daggers reflected the streaks of cold light which slashed the wrists of several big men accurately, causing their guns to fall.

"KILL!"

The dozens of guards of the Everlasting Feast Hall instantly dashed from the surroundings with each wielding a sharp dagger as though tigers rushing into a flock of hundreds of enemies. Sinister fire blazed in their eyes, locking onto the men with guns; their first target.

Some enemies caught with friendly fire from their companions who were positioned backward as bullets pierced their bodies.

"Bang. Bang..."

The noisy sound of gunfire sounded in succession.

Tang Xiu sat in a calm manner, whereas Zhang Xinya looked pale at his side with fear in her eyes, tightly gripping Tang Xiu's shoulders. At both sides, Tian Li and Hao Lei grabbed Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye with daggers on their throats.

The one-sided fight carried on, bringing along pitiful screams.

Blood splashed as bullets flew to all directions.

Hundreds of men of Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye were as though straws being cut by harvester as more than 20 strongmen with guns had all been completely slain within just half a minute whereas the rest were seriously injured.

"Puff..."

The relentless and ruthless killing shocked Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye to the core as they looked aghast. Seeing the fighting scene, it exceedingly increasing their heartbeats.

“How can this be?”

Whilst enduring the pain from his shoulder, Jiang Ye muttered to himself as he felt shivers running down his spine. As frightened and scared out of his wits as he was, never would he ever imagined that the dozens of security guards of the Everlasting Feast Hall could be this powerful. Nobody amongst the subordinates he brought along were normal people or rookies; any one of them could fight against two or three people. Yet, they couldn't even defend themselves from the security guards of the Everlasting Feast Hall.

These... what and who are these people? How could they have such a powerful combat force as well as being ruthless and merciless?

Some distance from the scene, the boss of the Du Kang Winery—Du Changze had fallen into a shocking fright due to the scene. Turning wide-eyed, he staggered backward with a terrified look.

Never did he expect that Tang Xiu would be so unbridled and domineering to even order to kill right away. His men were simply inhumane as each and every one of them was exceedingly powerful

as even guns meant nothing to them.

‘This matter is way too big.’

Swallowing his saliva in desperation, Du Changze turned to the surroundings as the others were also dumbstruck and aghast. Glaring fiercely at his son, who had long turned pale, his focus went back to the fighting scene.

Two minutes later, only 30 men remained from all of Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye’s henchmen. Terrified as they were, only fear could be seen on their faces as they rushed toward the door to escape from this living hell.

As for Tang Xiu’s side, only one of his subordinates died, whereas several of them were injured.

However, right at this time, Mo Āwen and Mo Āwu had blocked the hall’s entrance along with other four men. Holding their daggers backhandedly, they glared ruthlessly at the fleeing 30 henchmen.

“KILL!”

The six figures gave them a fierce greeting.

“STOP! STOP!”

Terror and panic had devoured Jiang Tianba as only fear painted his face when he shouted aloud.

A tinge of sneer and mockery emerged on Tang Xiu's face as he waved to Tian Li. The latter immediately shouted, "STOP!"

As she spoke, nearly ten men amongst the thirty big men had already been slain.

The killing had stopped. Tang Xiu flicked his cigarette butt, accurately entering the pot on the corner ten meters away. He gently lifted Zhang Xinya's hands from his shoulders and slowly stood.

"Are you scared?"

Standing in front of Jiang Tianba, He asked with a smile that didn't look like one.

Jiang Tianba trembled and shouted angrily, "You're dead! You're so dead! You just killed so many people, don't you fear the law?"

"The law?" Mockery and disdain were outlined on the corner of Tang Xiu's mouth, "I dared to order the killing, yet you think I fear the consequences? What is it? Your men can't resist and now you're using the law to scare me? Hahaha..."

At the side, Chen Jianye took a deep breath. Looking at Tang Xiu, he said, "You win. We've lost. Say your condition and we'll end the



matter today.”

Looking at his eyes, Tang Xiu let out a sigh before he turned to the 20 strongmen who were being besieged. He walked and looked at them, saying, “You’re all unlucky to follow these stupid bosses of yours. I am quite a benevolent person so I’ll give you a chance to live. Do you want it, or not?”

“We want it!”

Trembling with fear, those more than 20 strongmen hurriedly replied and nodded. They were afraid, so much so that they wished that what was happening was nothing but a nightmare.

## Chapter 283: The God of Killing

---

Waving toward everyone around, motioning them to retreat, Tang Xiu then gently moved his hands and feet as he smiled and said, “I haven’t had a chance to work out for some time, so I’ll accompany you to play today. Anyhow, there are more than 20 of you, I’ll be taking all of you by myself. If you can beat me, then you can live. But if you can’t beat me down, you will die. Hence, I hope you can display your real abilities.”

“What?”

Everyone was stupefied, looking at Tang Xiu with an indescribable expression.

Pointing toward Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye who had knives at their necks, Tang Xiu continued, “I give you my word that my subordinates won’t bother you any longer if you can kill me; even your bosses will be fine and safe. They’re so filthy rich, they surely won’t treat you badly later. Come at me! I’m giving you an opportunity, so you gotta try and see whether you can seize it or not.”

Greed was one of human’s nature, whereas the instinct to survive would drive one to bring out their potential to the fullest.

The 24 big strongmen quickly exchanged looks and nodded. Right at this moment, circumstances had forced them into a hopeless situation. The next fight would determine whether they lived or died.

“GO!”

The 24 men dashed toward Tang Xiu aggressively, as though a pack of wolves. Pairs of big fists whooshed and punched, hoping to kill Tang Xiu directly.

"Humph....."

Instead of retreating, Tang Xiu entered the fray as his right leg moved like a whip, crushing one of the strongmen's fist and breaking his hand with a kick; following by hitting another man's hand and forcing him to stagger down to the other's body.

"Peng, Peng..."

Tang Xiu moved and acted very fast, with a speed at least several times faster than the enemies. In an instant, he had kicked five times and punched seven times. Along with the sound of breaking bones, seven or eight strongmen screamed out and flew upside down.

At this time, Tang Xiu's figure suddenly appeared as his pair of fists changed into fingers and seized the throats of the other two men, directly crushing them.

It was simply a massacre. A one-sided slaughter!

As though a tiger rushing into a flock of sheep, for each time Tang Xiu moved, it resulted in dead or disabled enemies.

In the entire hall, everyone was aghast and stupefied watching Tang Xiu moving everywhere; even the powerful Tian Li and Hao Lei were no exception. They possessed powerful strength and experienced countless fights since the brutal training in childhood, yet Tang Xiu was still in his 20s?

Such powerful young man at his 20s was exceedingly beyond their expectations.

"Amazing!"

Tian Li exclaimed wholeheartedly.

At this moment, a solemn expression could be seen on Hao Lei's face as she said in a heavy tone, "Boss possesses a powerful strength. Were it myself fighting him, I'd only last three moves before he killed me!"

Turning her head, a faint smile was outlined on Tian Li's mouth as she said, "Don't forget who he is. For Boss, he needs not give his all to kill these ants."

Relieved, Hao Lei forced out a smile, "That's true. How could Boss be compared to the average people? If Little Boss was also here, I'm hella sure she would be able to kill them in a flash."

At present, the both of were impatient to get an opportunity, since once they could get that chance to get a peerless divine cultivation technique, they would also become a carp who would leap through the dragon gate.

In a stark contrast with the thoughts of the Everlasting Feast Hall's people, Jiang Tianba, Chen Jianye, as well as Jiang Yu and Chen Fei, the four of them were already deeply drowned in fear. They knew they were finished. Because the present Tang Xiu and those security guards of the Everlasting Feast Hall were simply not humans.

Not only was their combat force exceedingly powerful, but they were also ruthless. Now that the situation had come to this, they perfectly aware that their lives would come to an end.

They could only regret, regret provoking them. Had they known that Tang Xiu and the Everlasting Feast Hall's people were this terrifyingly powerful, never would they dare to provoke them even if they possessed thousands of points of courage.

“May the heaven over us and the earth be my witness. If I don't die today, I must strangle this good-for-nothing son to death myself,” Chen Jianye slowly closed his eyes as he whispered.

“Done!”

After having killed the last strong big guy, Tang Xiu flung the blood on his hand before he turned around and looked at Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye. Then, his vision shifted to Jiang Yu and

Chen Fei.

"Are you both mad now?" asked Tang Xiu smiled faintly.

At this time, Jiang Yu and Chen Fei were already frightened and weakly slumped on the floor. They were Hong Kong's playboys; arrogant, domineering and acted unbridled. But at this time, watching the death of hundreds of people, they were truly frightened and scared shitless. Where would they dare to be arrogant any longer?

"Puff..."

Suddenly, Chen Fei was as if filled with strength. He got up and knelt toward Tang Xiu, repeatedly kowtowing and crying, "Brother, I was wrong. Please have mercy and spare me! I promise I'll cross the street immediately when I see you later. I beg you. Please don't kill me."

Jiang Yu kept still, but he was also crying just like Chen Fei, kneeling and begging for mercy.

Tang Xiu shook his head. These silk pants hedonistic sons of rich parents who lived in extravagant life since childhood were only chaps who had nature of fearing the strong and only dared to bully the weak. If you didn't hit them fiercely, they would never know what pain was.

Yet, in actuality, the reason as to why Tang Xiu acted was not to

kill, but to frighten, deterring his subordinates from the Everlasting Feast Hall. Looking at Tian Lei, Hao Lei, and the Mo Brothers who watched him in respect and worship, he knew that his purpose had been achieved.

Thus, Tang Xiu didn't plan on killing Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye. After all, too many people had died today. He had almost no personal contacts in Hong Kong and he didn't have the means to handle the collateral aftermath, as he was also too disinclined to waste time here.

Before heading back to the chair, Tang Xiu looked at Zhang Xinya who was frightened and looked pale, asking, "How was it? Are you afraid?"

She stepped back half a step, lowered her head and didn't reply.

Shaking his head, Tang Xiu calmly said, "I asked you to leave before, yet you didn't want to. I'm afraid that you are not suited to see this kind of situation. Anyways, I'll send you back!"

Zhang Xinya slowly looked up as her eyes fell on Tang Xiu. After being silent for a moment, she said, "Tang Xiu, killing people is not something good to do."

Tang Xiu turned around and pointed the dead bodies everywhere and said, "These people are damned and evil. Were it not because I'm strong enough, the one to die would be me instead of them; even you'd also become a victim. Don't tell me that we're in a peaceful era, yet the law of jungle where the weak are the prey for

the strong would still be there no matter what time it is. This path is the road that I will walk in the future, so don't use the concept and thoughts of ordinary people when you look at me."

Zhang Xinya opened her mouth yet didn't know what to say.

"I'll send someone to escort you back! It's already late and I think you no longer have the appetite to eat. Forget what happened tonight. Have a good sleep after you go home, there still a new day tomorrow."

After a moment of silence, Zhang Xinya silently nodded.

Afterward, Tang Xiu sat back on the chair, receiving a clean towel handed by a big guy. He wiped his face, his hands and looked at the pale Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye, saying with a smile, "How about you two? Is there anything you wanna say?"

Chen Jianye didn't say anything.

Slight bitterness painted Jiang Tianba's face and sighed, "The winner is the king, and the losers will always be the villains. We have lost, and the loser must accept the defeat. If you want to kill, then kill us!"

Raising his thumb, Tang Xiu praised, "Good. You have self-awareness. You obviously know that you must die today. It's good to be tough in the face of death. However, I don't want to make your wish come true. And sometimes, even if one wants to die, it



would be very difficult for them to get their wish!”

Coldness filled Jiang Tianba’s heart as he growled, “What do you want then?”

“It’s not much. I’m going to let you go,” said Tang Xiu.

Letting them go?

Jiang Tianba dazed with disbelief in his eyes; even Chen Jianye looked at Tang Xiu with an indescribable expression, thinking that he misunderstood what he heard.

“It’s actually very simple. As long as you accept several conditions, not only will you avoid the suffering of being beaten, you will also keep your life. And you’ll have your old and comfortable life you’re used to have.”

Taking a deep breath, Jiang Tianba asked in a heavy tone, “What conditions?”

Tang Xiu said lightly, “49% shares of the Jiang Group and Wanyuan Real estate are the first conditions!”

“Agree!”

“No problem!”

Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye answered without hesitation.

Wealth was but merely worldly possession compared to life. Let alone the shares in their enterprises, everything would be gone once they died.

“The second condition is: their death has no relation to us. You’ll have to take care of the collateral aftermath as well as put the news to the void. If any of this is leaked and there are any slightest mistake, I’ll send some people to massacre all of your families,” satisfied with their answers, Tang Xiu continued.

“Understood!”

Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye looked at each other and unanimously replied.

“If the Everlasting Feast Hall and the Grand Fortune Jewelries need some help from you in the future, you must do everything you can to help them. The time limit is ten years. If you do well within these years, not only will I write off everything that happened today, I will also give you some rewards.”

"Agree!"

"Agree!"

Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye replied again.

“The fourth and the last request is: send your two good-for-nothing sons abroad, staying in the country will only make them waiting disasters!”

He waved his hand and looked at Tian Li, “Assist them to dispose of the dead bodies. As for the aftermath, you’re also responsible in assisting them. Also, you are to take care of the deal about the shares with the both of them. You will also decide whether to sell the shares or take the annual dividends.”

"I'll sell them!"

Tian Li said without hesitation.

Tang Xiu smiled faintly, "Like I said, it's your call."

"Yes!"

# Chapter 284: Paying a Visit

---

The law of the jungle. The strong preying on the weak.

Having lived in the Immortal World for 10,000 years, Tang Xiu knew very well about the profound meaning of this rule. Though the present time was not the era of being conquered and prospering and perishing when resisting, yet the essence of the principle that one should not provoke and attack others to avoid being attacked was still necessary to be held.

He was not a ruthless butcher, but he killed without mercy. Firstly, he perhaps would be the one dying today had he not killed them. Secondly, they were not a good people as they had done numerous wicked deeds. They were untouchable by the law due to the formidable umbrella provided by their formidable background. Hence, he had to become a necessary devil who punishes evil, becoming the Punisher to settle their evil deeds.

Someone said that killing a bad guy may be the salvation of the common people.

Tang Xiu's conscience was clean when killing bad guys, for the life of good people had its value, whereas the evil ones' were worthless.

However, he also found some interesting facts tonight. Tian Li and Hao Lei, seemingly delicate and weak, were also experts Gu Yan'er had nurtured.

Financial resources were the basic foundation for one's forces!

The fact that Gu Yan'er had the both of them managing the Everlasting Feast Hall and the Grand Jewelries showed that she had absolute trust on them, so Tang Xiu didn't question anyone Gu Yan'er had given her trust to.

"You did well tonight. Call Chen Shaohua who is responsible for the antique business as well as Jin Cheng who takes care of the real estate business. Tell them that the four of you are to go back to Jingmen Island and see Ji Chimei! Tell Ji Chimei that under my command, she is to teach the four of you what she taught Mo Awen and Mo Awu!" said Tang Xiu as he slowly stood from the chair with a faint smile.

"What?"

Tian Li and Hao Lei startled, a disbelieving light bursting from their eyes. A few seconds after, the disbelief turned into an intense ecstasy.

They were excited!

The both of them had always dreamed to learn the cultivation technique to obtain immortality. Finally, this dream had come true!

Ignoring them, Tang Xiu lit up a cigarette as he walked toward the panicked father and son of the Du Family and said lightly,

“Since you chose to wait for me to solve the other two before you speaking, then, do you want to speak now?”

His mouth twitched a few times as Du Changze fiercely slapped Du Yang’s face and bellowed, “Kneel!”

Panicked and scared, Du Yang immediately knelt in front of Tang Xiu.

While wiping cold sweat from his forehead, Du Changze said bitterly, “You’re surnamed Tang, right? That big star seemed to call you that name before. Boss Tang, my son has made a mistake, which is very unusual indeed. Yet I want to ask your forgiveness, please spare his life. I have many businesses, so it’s difficult for me to decide which company’s share I should give you. How about I pay you 2 billion as a token of apology?”

“Three billion. Then you can get the hell out.”

Inside, Du Changze was secretly relieved, since he could solve the problem with money, which in itself was not a big deal. His wealth was worth tens of billions, and even though three billion yuan was an enormous sum, he could still afford it. In regard to this, the 49% shares of Jiang Group and Wanyuan Real Estate were basically the root capital of Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye.

“Might I ask you to give me some time, Boss Tang? I can come up with three billion, but the time is too short.”

“Three days, that’s all I can give you,” said Tang Xiu indifferently.

“Alright, three days is enough,” said Du Changze hastily.

Tang Xiu waved his hand, “Alright, you can leave. Do remember. You may favor your son, but watch him lest he repeat his crime.”

Hastily replying, Du Changze said, “I’ll certainly discipline him after I go back, to ensure that he will no longer do any kind of evil deeds as well as provoke the right and do the wrong.”

Looking at Du Changze and his dozens of frightened men leaving, he suddenly spoke, “Leave all of your guns here.”

“Alright!”

Without waiting for Du Changze’s command, seven or eight big guys carrying guns hurriedly dropped them on the floor. For them, Tang Xiu was a fiend, the cruel and ruthless God of Killing. If they dare to go against his wishes, they would perhaps be unable to get out of the Everlasting Feast Hall alive.

A few minutes later, Tang Xiu and the Mo bothers left the Everlasting Feast Hall on the Hummer back to Qianshui Bay Road 13th. He still had to leave for the Nine Dragon Island, so he needed to have a good rest.

At Deepwater Bay 79th Road.

Sipping their teas, Li Juren and Ke Zhentao were having a chat.

“Boss!”

A big bodyguard came before Li Juren with a queer expression on his face.

Li Juren furrowed his brows and asked, “How’s the result of the investigation?”

“We have yet to investigate Tang Xiu’s identity for the time being, but I have already talked with my contacts in Shuangqing Province, so we should get the results shortly. However, there was a situation in the Everlasting Feast Hall. According to our findings, Tang Xiu clashed before with a group of young masters. The eldest son of the Jiang Group’s owner—Jiang Yu; the heir of Wanyuan Real Estate—Chen Fei; the young boss of Du Kang Winery—Du Yang; and Qi Changxing from Kangyong Electric Appliances.”

“When Tang Xiu was attending the auction, the General Manager of the Everlasting Feast Hall—Tian Li, took Jiang Yu and Chen Fei away. After Tang Xiu rushed thereon, the Boss of the Jiang Group—Jiang Tianba, the Wanyuan Real Estate’s boss—Chen Jianye, as well as Du Changze from the Du Kang Winery brought along 100 to 200 men to the Everlasting Feast Hall site. Afterward, Tang Xiu also arrived there.”

Li Juren squinted his eyes and slowly asked, “And the result?”



The big bodyguard forced a smile, “Jiang Tianba, Jiang Yu, Chen Jianye and Chen Fei left the Everlasting Feast Hall first with some injuries, but their men who had followed them inside didn’t come out with them. As for the father and son—Du Changze and Du Yang, they also brought dozens of men there, but all of them came out from the Everlasting Feast Hall’s front door. And... Du Changze hit his son, and seemingly quite hard at that.”

Li Juren’s brows furrowed deeply and asked in a heavy tone, “So your point is, the Everlasting Feast Hall have Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye’s men as hostages, no?”

The big bodyguard said, “No. They died.”

"What?"

Li Juren and Ke Zhentao suddenly stood, looking shocked.

All of them died?

100 to 200 men entered the Everlasting Feast Hall and, aside from Du Changze’s men who came out, did the the over a hundred men die inside the Everlasting Feast Hall’s site?

“Knock, knock...”

The door was knocked. A panicked big middle-aged man strode

into the room and said hastily, “Boss, the dozen men we sent to the Everlasting Feast Hall to monitor the situation there, just cut off their communication with me. However, before I lost contact, one of them told me two words.”

“What are those two words?” asked Li Juren in a deep tone.

Ke Zhentao asked: "What two words?"

"Save me!" said the big middle-aged man in a sinking tone.

Li Juren took a deep breath as he smiled bitterly and shook his head, “This is the same with the situation in the past. I didn’t expect to repeat the same mistake again. It seems I’ve to make a trip there yet again.”

Having just woken up from his shock, Ke Zhentao quickly said upon hearing it, “Uncle Li, you mean that you will go see Tang Xiu personally to ask him to release your men?”

Forcing out a wry smile, Li Juren said, “Except for that, what else can I do? The former Boss Gu was powerful, but she rarely commanded a wanton slaughter. Tang Xiu actually... Alas! I should do everything I can!”

“I’ll go with you, Uncle Li,” Ke Zhentao said quickly.

“No.” Li Juren shook his head, “I better go there myself! It won’t be good if you follow me. Send someone to find out Tang Xiu’s

residence.”

The big bodyguard said, “We have found his residence. It’s the Qianshui Bay Road 13th.”

Nodding, Li Juren brought along two big bodyguards, boarded the car and left quickly, quietly followed behind by several cars.

At Qianshui Bay Road 13th.

After coming back, Tang Xiu took a shower and changed his clothes. Just as he prepared to immerse himself in cultivation, his room’s door was knocked.

“Is there something?” asked Tang Xiu after he opened the door.

Mo Awen respectfully said, “Boss, Li Juren is visiting.”

Tang Xiu squinted his eyes and instantly understood the reason and intention of his arrival. However, Li Juren’s status alone was rather distinct. Despite having no interest in his wealth, Tang Xiu nodded and said, “Take him to the living room, I’ll be there shortly.”

"Yes!"

Mo Awen replied and left.

Pondering for a moment, Tang Xiu then put on his shoes as he turned and walked out of the room. It wasn't easy to conceal what had happened in the Everlasting Feast Hall today. After all, a series of gunshot sounds would surely attract others' attentions; it may even have alerted the police. Li Juren, who had been living in Hong Kong for most of his life, must have a personal connection in the political field, and it was surely because he wanted to preserve the lives of those subordinates under his command.

After having ordered the nanny to prepare good tea, Tang Xiu went to the living room.

“Little Brother Tang, we meet again.”

Having just sat on the sofa, Li Juren stood again as he smiled upon seeing Tang Xiu.

Letting out a light smile, Tang Xiu replied, “It seems the fate between us runs rather deep since we're meeting twice within this short night.”

Forcing out a smile, Li Juren said, “It's quite deep indeed. Not only with you, I'm also fated with your Everlasting Feast Hall! Anyways, I sent some people to investigate the Everlasting Feast Hall in Jingmen Island in the past. The result was that those men of mine had all been captured and sent to a mining area somewhere in Africa, becoming coolies there.”

“So, you know what happened tonight?” asked Tang Xiu lightly.

Nodding, Li Juren replied, “Yes, I heard about it, so I came to ask if Little Brother Tang needs my help. Either business or politics in Hong Kong, I do have some means to get through.”

The corner of Tang Xiu’s mouth slanted as he smiled, “It seems that Elder Li came for my help! Such being the case, I’ll take your kindness! Come, let’s have some tea.”

Glancing at the nanny who came to serve the tea, Li Juren hesitated for a moment before speaking in a low voice, “Little Brother Tang, my men...”

Waving his hand, Tang Xiu said, “Elder Li, my tea may not be as good as yours, but please don’t refuse it. After you have tasted this tea and then returned back to your home, I’m sure those men of yours should have returned already.”

Taking the hint and understanding its meaning, Li Juren felt happy and laughed, “Little Brother Tang, to be frank, I also still owe a favor to the Everlasting Feast Hall. It’s been more than 20 years since the last time I saw Boss Gu. Has she been well?”

## Chapter 285: Wasting Money

---

Tang Xiu raised his brows, “You know Yan’er?”

Yan’er?

Stunned, Li Juren stared blankly and confused, “Little Brother Tang, who’s Yan’er?”

Tang Xiu calmly replied, “Gu Yan’er.”

Surprise flashed in Li Juren’s eyes. He had never thought that Tang Xiu actually called Gu Yan’er like his children. It had to be known that more than 20 years ago Gu Yan’er looked like she was in her 20s. Thus, wouldn’t it mean that she was more or less around 50 years old now?

“Yes, it’s Gu Yan’er, Boss Gu! More than 20 years ago something happened, an accident in my side that I needed to transport one batch of imported goods from abroad, hence I thickened my face to ask Boss Gu’s help.”

Tang Xiu surprised, “Did she help you?”

Nodding, Li Juren said, “Yes, she did, and it saved me from a huge loss. But she didn’t want to be paid, she just requested two things of me.”

“What did she ask of you?” asked Tang Xiu curiously.

“First, I must not send people to investigate the Everlasting Feast Hall ever again. Secondly, she wanted me to find a man named Tang Xiu and even gave me his picture. Even though you’re also called Tang Xiu, but his appearance is somewhat different from yours.”

Tang Xiu?

Inside, Tang Xiu secretly sighed. The appearance of the man in the picture was certainly different from his. How could his appearance in the Immortal World be alike with his at present?

“It seems Yan’er has really done a lot for me. Elder Li, I hope you no longer send people to investigate me if possible, because even if you do, you probably won’t find anything. Also, it’s been ten years Yan’er is not in a good condition. Hence, she no longer manages the Everlasting Feast Hall. The one who is managing the enterprise is her apprentice, Gu Xiaoxue. Anyways, I might have to trouble you to look after the Everlasting Feast Hall in the future,” said Tang Xiu with a smile after he sighed emotionally.

Li Juren’s expression flickered and replied hastily, “Taking care of the Everlasting Feast Hall, please consider it done. However, how about Boss Gu? Do you need my help to find a doctor? I heard that a divine doctor appeared in Shuangqing Province’s Star city. If you like, I’ll go there myself to invite that divine doctor to Jingmen Island.”

Looking at him with a strange expression, Tang Xiu was at a loss whether he should be amused or upset, saying, “The news about the divine doctor in Star City spread out this fast, even reaching Hong Kong?”

Li Juren laughed, “Recently, I also heard from my old friend in the capital. He said that Tang...”

Suddenly, the smile on his face froze as disbelief filled his eyes.

“What’s with this Tang?” asked Tang Xiu, confused.

Staring blankly at Tang Xiu, Li Juren then asked, “As far as I know, the divine doctor in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital is also called Tang Xiu. That old friend of mine in the capital said that the head of the Tang Family of Beijing, that man... not only had his asthma cured by Tang Xiu, this Tang Xiu is also his biological grandson. You come from Shuangqing province, don’t tell me...”

Tang Xiu couldn’t help laughing, “Please say no more, it doesn’t matter. Now you know much more than those subordinates you sent to investigate me. Yes, the Tang Xiu in Star City Chinese Medical Hospital is indeed myself. But my present status there is not of official doctor. As for the Tang Family, Tang Yunde is my father and Tang Guosheng is my grandfather.”

“Hiss...”



Li Juren was shocked and terrified by Tang Xiu's identity.

If Tang Xiu was only the descendant of the Tangs, even Tang Guosheng's grandson, he would probably not be shocked. But to think that he was also a divine doctor! More importantly, Tang Xiu was also the owner of the Everlasting Feast Hall.

With so many identities lumped together, despite he himself possessing extraordinary status, he was still frightened somehow.

"Don't be so surprised. If I could cure Yan'er, I would have already done it. After all, she's my favorite apprentice," said Tang Xiu lightly.

Nodding and recovered from his shock, Li Juren said, "Since you're also a divine doctor, naturally..."

Once again, his words came to a halt.

An apprentice? Did Tang Xiu just say that? Gu Yan'er is his favorite... apprentice?

Wha... What kind of joke is this?

Tang Xiu explained no further and only watched Li Juren's shocked expression. He shook his head, "Anyhow, I want you to keep my relation with Yan'er confidential. Also, if you nothing else to say, you can return."

Li Juren didn't move. His eyes fixated on Tang Xiu. This young man before him was as though a mysterious being that was shrouded in obscurity.

"Then I'll take my leave, " seeing Tang Xiu's intention to send him out, Li Juren got up and replied.

Sending him off, Tang Xiu then turned back and went upstairs. Today's killing didn't have any negative impact on him thus far. Hence, he sat cross-legged on the bed and began his cultivation.

Persevering in his cultivation, he could, at any time, break through the Flesh Strengthening stage. As long as he reached this stage, his strength would soar exponentially. He might not be able to call himself invincible all over the world, but there would only be a few people that could be his match.

Tsim Sha Tsui residential area, Hong Kong.

Within a hall of a European-style luxurious villa, Du Yang knelt in front of Du Changze with a face full of regret and remorse. Because of a small conflict, their family must pay a compensation of three billion. Though he used to be arrogant and uninhibited, right at this moment, he fully realized he had committed a big mistake.

Prior to this, he had been punished and was forced to kneel. It made him angry and though he admitted his mistakes, yet it was on the surface and insincere inside. But at this time, he didn't have

any complaints.

“Do you know your mistake?”

No longer beating Du Yang again after dozens of hits, Du Changze sat straight on the sofa with coldness gleaming in his eyes, whereas his wife—Bai Yueqin, looked at Du Yang’s swollen face in distress, wanting to speak yet keeping silent.

“Yes, father. I know my mistake,” looking up, Du Yang said bitterly.

“If you know your mistake then redeem yourself. Otherwise, by the time you manage our family’s businesses in the future, all of it will only be wasted by you sooner or later. If it’s like this, I might as well donate the money to charity before I die. Doing this will at least maintain our good reputation.”

Du Yang took a deep breath and replied solemnly, “Father, had this incident not happened today, I might still do the same things like I used to, but now it’s different. What I saw today was the most terrifying and frightening thing in my life. I swear to you that I will no longer blend in with those bunch of hoodlums and neither will I waste time and stay idle anymore. I will help with the work in the company. and even if you throw me to start from the bottom, I’ll accept it.”

Watching the serious and solemn appearance his son put on, Du Changze finally felt gratified somehow. Yet, the three-billion-yuan compensation was something that would create a tremendous

impact on his business once he collected the money and gave it to the other party.

"Get up!"

Slowly standing up, Du Yang spoke after being silent for a while, "Father, how much do you know about the Everlasting Feast Hall? What's this surnamed Tang person's background and how could he be so terrifying?"

Letting out a bitter and forced smile, Du Changze said, "You ask me, but whom I should ask? Had I known they were this powerful, would I ever take you there? Alas, let's forget it. At least our family is still fine and kept the majority of our industries and saved dozens our subordinates. But Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye kicked a sheet of iron since they lost at least two-thirds of their family's assets. You all really can't let anyone feel relieved."

Du Yang lowered his head before suddenly looking up, staring blankly for a moment and saying, "Father, there was someone else who was involved in today's matter aside from me, Jiang Yu and Chen Fei. I still remember Tang Xiu saying that he wanted his elders to come and apologize."

"Who's he?" surprised for a moment, Du Changze asked.

"Qi Changxing," said Du Yang.

Blinking his eyes, a stream of light suddenly flashed from Du

Changze's eyes as he asked in a deep tone, "Don't lie to me. Was Qi Changxing really involved in this matter?"

"Yes! But he hadn't got beaten," said Du Yang with all seriousness.

Du Changze hummed coldly. He took his mobile and dialed number.

Tsim Sha Tsui, at Beverly Hotel.

Holding a crystal cup, Qi Chengshan was attending a banquet of his friend in a luxurious spacious hall. A gorgeous crystal chandelier illuminating soft light with each angle reflected light as though a imaginary kaleidoscopic light in a dream. Stylish European-style tables and chairs and small exquisite bars were painted with a pure white color, exuding an aristocratic ambiance and atmosphere.

"Ring. Ring, ring ..."

His merry chat abruptly stopped by the ringtone of his mobile. Giving an apologetic expression to the people around him, he took his mobile and quickly left his seat after he saw the caller ID on his mobile's screen. He walked to the outside and laughed, "Brother Du, what's up?"

"I have a news to sell you," a solemn voice belonging to Du Changze came out of the phone.

Surprised, Qi Chengshan stared blankly for a moment as his pace abruptly stopped, asking in wonder, “What news?”

“Don’t ask for now. If you want to buy it, you must transfer 500 million yuan to me. After you find out about the matter, you must transfer another 500 million again. I don’t think 1 billion would be too expensive for this news,” said Du Changze deeply.

As Qi Chengshan looked cloudy, he lightly said, “Brother Du, how do I know if this news is worth 1 billion yuan if you don’t tell me about it first?”

“Brother Qi, how many decades has it been since we know each other? Do you really think that I’m the kind of person who likes to cheat and con others? I can tell that if you’re left in the dark tonight and don’t do anything, you’ll probably end up badly, so will your Qi Enterprise. The price you will pay would perhaps exceed 1 billion later.”

“What do you mean?”

Startled, Qi Chengshan knew Du Changze’s disposition for he had never talked without weight.

“Now tell me, will you buy it or not?” said Du Changze.

After being in silent for a moment, Qi Chengshan slowly said, “I’ll agree if the news you provide is truly worth such a high price.

But if it's not, I want my 500 million yuan returned to me, Brother Du. You'll have the money in your account shortly."

"Deal!"

The call was ended.

Qi Chengshan frowned and his brows formed a 川 character, as deep concern sprouted inside. Though he was clueless what the problem was, Du Changze evidently knew about some negative news pertaining to his Qi Enterprise, and a serious one at that.

## Chapter 286: Terrified

---

Being friends for decades and having so many contacts, Qi Chengshan knew Du Changze from the bottom up. However, both of them were businessmen. If it was a business negotiation, it was only normal if Du Changze asked him some money; that he could accept and understand.

Only, what important news was it for it to be 1 billion yuan worth?

After transferring the money to Du Changze's personal account, his mobile rang again. Qi Chengshan then stood in a quiet corner and pressed the answer button.

"Brother Qi, you'd better come to me if possible since it's inconvenient to speak on the phone. But be quick as time is racing against you," Du Changze's voice passed from the phone.

"I'm going now!" said Qi Chengshan heavily.

"Wait, don't hang up your phone. It's best to take your son along since the matter is related to him."

"What do you mean?"

"Don't ask. Just come and I'll tell you."



As the call ended, Qi Chengshan frowned deeply. After pondering for a moment, he called Qi Changxing's cell number. Knowing that he was in the vicinity, he told his son to come to him.

At the entrance of the Beverly Hotel.

A Bentley slowly parked outside the entrance as Qi Chengshan stood next to it, gazing at the distance toward a Porsche that was fast approaching. Coldness flashed in his eyes. He could faintly guess that the bad news Du Changze would tell him was probably because a big mess his son had made.

“Dad, you told me to hurry here, is there anything up?”

A faint smell of alcohol emitted from Qi Changxing's body. After having seen today's matter, he was shrouded with restlessness, thus he asked some of his friends to accompany him to drink to overcome the feeling. Yet, the call from his father disturbed him somewhat.

Boarding into the car, Qi Chengshan then said heavily, “Get into the car. You must go with me to someplace.”

Giving his Porsche's key to the entrance security, Qi Changxing entered the car and curiously asked, “Where are you going to take me, Dad?”

“Du Changze called me just now, saying that he wants to sell me some critical news. Do you know how much the news is worth?” Qi

Chengshan snorted to him coldly.

Du Changze? Du Yang's father?

The restlessness inside him grew more intense as Qi Changxing shook his head, "I don't."

"1 billion!" said Qi Chengshan.

Qi Changxing stunned as his eyes turned saucer instantly, exclaiming, "Dad, did you agree?"

"I know Du Changze very well. If the news was not valuable, he would never play a prank on me. But before I go see him, I want to ask you. Was it you who did a big mess?"

The already anxious Qi Changxing had his face turn unsightly. After hesitating for a moment, he thought he could hide the truth no longer, saying bitterly, "Dad, I probably made a big mess. Today..."

Telling everything about today's matter, Qi Changxing finally said, "Though he told me to take you to apologize to him, I think it's not necessary. I wasn't the one who caused this matter. I just spoke some things to support them."

The cold glint inside Qi Chengshan's eyes grew thicker as he asked in a heavy tone, "Did you really see those two kids—Jiang Yu and Chen Fei being captured by the general manager of the

Everlasting Feast Hall—Tian Li?”

Quickly nodding, Qi Changxing replied, “It’s absolutely true. But I was very curious since Du Yang didn’t get seized that time.”

Slowly closing his eyes, Qi Chengshan’s mind constantly pondered about the incident. He knew about the Everlasting Feasts Hall; he was even a regular patron when entertaining his friends there. He also knew a little about Tian Li and met her several times. The woman was warm and approachable, humble and prudent.

The one thing he couldn’t figure out was, why Tian Li had a stark contrast to her usual style, even daring to forcefully take Jiang Yu and Chen Fei away. It had to be known that these two young men possessed unusual backgrounds, with a strength much powerful compared to the Everlasting Feast Hall.

Could it be that Tian Li had no fear of losing her foothold in Hong Kong for the Everlasting Feast Hall?

A few minutes passed by. Qi Chengshan decided to call Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye, asking them about the specific situation. After dialing Jiang Tianba’s cell number, a long time passed before his call was accepted by the other party.

“Brother Jiang, it’s Old Qi. Did I disturb your rest?”

“If you wanna say something, do it quick!” A blunt voice mixed

with an angry tone belonging to Jing Tianba came from the phone.

For a moment, Qi Chengshan was startled and confused, as he then asked, “Brother Jiang, I just heard from my kid that your son had a conflict with the people from the Everlasting Feast Hall. What was the matter exactly?”

“Find it out yourself.” The call was dropped immediately after.

Stunned and staring blankly, he listened to the beeping sound of the phone as a thick fog shrouded Qi Chengshan’s heart, causing him to be unable to think it through. He had a good relationship with Jiang Tianba, but what happened to him today? It was like he just ate some gunpowder.

It wasn’t like... he had wronged him, no?

After recollecting himself, Qi Chengshan shook his head and dialed Chen Jianye’s cell number.

“What’s up?” The low and deep voice of Chen Jianye passed from the phone.

Qi Chengshan laughed, “Old Chen, this tone of yours, you seem to not be in a good mood, no? What happened?”

Fuming with anger, Chen Jianye replied, “Had it been you that had lost half of your family’s assets after decades of hard and bitter effort, would you feel happy about it?”

Startled, Qi Chengshan was dumbfounded, because Chen Jianye also ended the call after he said that sentence.

What was it? Losing most of the family's assets that were obtained with hard and bitter effort for decades all of a sudden?

Suddenly, a chill invaded his heart as his eyes instantly focused. A ridiculous thought appeared inside his mind: Did Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye suffered a loss in the hands of the Everlasting Feast Hall's people?

The idea fled inside his mind for a few seconds before he tossed it away. He thought that it wasn't possible. Though the Everlasting Feast Hall may have a bit of ability, it would be very difficult for them to face both Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye at the same time.

At Tsim Sha Tsui.

Qi Chengshan took Qi Changxing and arrived at the Du Family's residence. After he saw Du Changze, he immediately asked loudly, "Brother Du, can you say it now?"

As they shook hands, Du Changze looked at Qi Changxing behind. He then shook his head and said, "Follow me to my room! Speaking about it outside is not convenient."

Inside the study room, after motioning Qi Chengshan to take a

seat, Du Changze began speaking with a bitter expression, sighing, “Brother Qi, I’d never have asked you money had it been before. But the situation is different now, I hope you don’t blame me. The good sons we have raised turned out to have invited trouble and calamity upon us!”

“Tell me!” said Qi Chengshan with a frown.

Speaking in a heavy tone, Du Changze replied, “Since you brought your son over, you should know that these four kids just had a conflict with the Everlasting Feast Hall’s boss, no?”

“I heard a little about that,” said Qi Chengshan with a nod.

Du Changze shook his head, “Tian Li seized Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye’s sons in the Everlasting Feast Hall. So, they immediately contacted me. The three of us brought nearly two hundred people and prepared to teach the Everlasting Feast Hall a lesson. But the result was, more than 100 men under Jiang Tianba and Chen Fei were all decimated. They also got extorted as they had to give up 49% of their companies’ shares, whereas I must pay three billion in compensation to keep the lives of us—father and son, as well as dozens of my men’.”

“WHAT?”

Qi Chengshan suddenly stood with a horrified look on his face.

Shock! The news was simply like a thunderclap to him!

He knew perfectly well about the inside story of the trio—Du Changze, Jiang Tianba, and Chen Jianye. They were of the wealthy and people with influence. If they were to join forces, they would be able to contend with Li Juren for Hong Kong, albeit being slightly weaker. What sort of existence was the Everlasting Feast Hall? How could the three of them joining up still be unable to contend with it?

“Brother Du, don’t plays a joke with me!”

Twitching his lips a few times, Qi Chengshan asked in a trembling voice.

With all seriousness on his face, Du Changze shook his head and said, “Look at me. Do you think I’m joking with you? Most of the thugs and henchmen Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye had painstakingly nurtured, had all been decimated. They also lost over two-thirds of their wealth. Call them if you don’t believe me.”

Suddenly, Qi Chengshan finally understood as to why Jiang Tianba and Chen Jianye replied to him with such manner and attitude when he called them.

They had just fallen into a miserable state!

Just as the thought crossed his mind, Qi Chengshan’s face turned pale as though paper. He suddenly realized something as his eyes violently contracted and hastily asked, “You mean... the other party will also hit me?”

Forcing out a smile, Du Changze said, “Brother Qi, you didn’t see the scene that time yourself. Over a hundred dead bodies with blood covering the floor. The other party is exceedingly ruthless; even the words cruel and merciless are not enough to describe them. Especially the boss of the Everlasting Feast Hall. He was but only a young man in his 20s yet he slew more than 20 people. Do you think your family can walk away while the three of us have paid such an enormous price?”

Qi Chengshan’s mouth twitched a few times. As he turned around, he slapped Qi Changxing’s face as his son staggered backward and nearly fell on the floor.

“Brother Du, I’ll transfer the remaining 500 million to your account after I take care of this matter. I’ll take my leave now.”

Having said that, Qi Chengshan dragged Qi Changxing and left.

At the north wing of the Everlasting Feast Hall, over a hundred dead bodies had been disposed off while the blood-covered floor had also been washed clean, yet a faint smell of blood was still lingering inside the hall.

“Will we return to Jingmen Island tonight?” Looking happy, Hao Lei asked after seeing that the cleaning staff and security guards had left the restaurant.

Tian Li shook her head and smiled, “There’s one other small thing that has yet to be resolved.”



“Huh?” Hao Lei was puzzled, “There’s still something else? What is it?”

The corner of Tian Li’s mouth formed a smile as she slowly said, “Some people didn’t come. So I intend to visit them myself to collect the debt if they don’t come today.”

“Who is it?” asked Hao Lei, surprised.

“Qi Chengshan,” said Tian Li.

Hao Lei’s brows furrowed, “Was Qi Chengshan also involved in tonight’s incident?”

Shrugging her shoulders, Tian Li smiled, “Well, he brought up his good son who turned out to mess up big time, bringing a calamity, so he naturally can never escape from his responsibility.”

Nodding and looking thoughtful, Hao Lei suddenly said, “Tian Li, do you have the feeling that our current boss is kinda like a money-making machine? Only one night of income yet the amount is more than 10 years of the Everlasting Feast Hall and Grand Fortune Jewelries combined together.”

# Chapter 287: An Astronomical Price for a Lesson

---

A smile was outlined on Tian Li's mouth as she said, "What is it? Do you think it's too bad or the boss is way too ruthless?"

"I'm fine with him being ruthless, or else how could we fight against so many opponents? It's been several years since Big Boss last appeared, leaving the Little Boss to take care of the business. You know how she was rather indifferent in matters of important and necessary issues. Regardless of the matter, she delegated most of the jobs to us. I was kinda worried that her indifference would hamper the later expansion and development of the Everlasting Feast Hall if it continued like that. Now it seems that my worry was unfounded," said Hao Lei with a laugh.

Nodding in approval, Tian Li said, "I thought the same as you. I'm content with the current boss, especially his way of doing things which kinda suits my appetite. I believe our Everlasting Feast Hall will get better under his leadership."

Taking back her smile after there were only the two of them inside the hall, Hao Lei whispered, "Are you curious about our new boss?"

"I'm dead curious," said Tian Li slowly after a moment of silence.

"Yea! He's unfathomably mysterious. He appeared all of a sudden and suddenly became the boss of our Everlasting Feast Hall. Though he's very young, yet we know nothing about who and

where he is from. I have a hunch that he comes from the same place as Big Boss.”

Faintly smiling, Tian Li looked at her and asked, “Don’t tell me you know where Big Boss comes from?”

“No, I don’t,” said Hao Lei as she shook her head.

Tian Li took a deep breath and spoke in a deep tone, “Regardless of Boss’ origin, we only need to remember that our lives were bestowed by Big Boss, so we must carry out her every command unconditionally. Also, our current Boss may look amicable on the surface, yet he is cruel and ruthless in his bones. So we gotta keep our respectful manner toward him at all times.”

“But of course! Boss gave us that opportunity, even if he wants me to stake my life, I will never shrink back. Also, we...”

She didn’t finish her words since a big, strong guy appeared at the hall’s door in a hurry.

“General Manager, Chief Hao, the Qi Enterprise’s CEO—Qi Chengshan, came with his son—Qi Changxing. They are waiting outside now,” said the big guy in a deep tone.

Tian Li raised her brows and sneered, “Did this father and son come by themselves?”

“Yes. They are alone!”

“He heard the news, it seems. Let them in!” said Tian Li lightly.

"Yes!"

The big strong guy complied and quickly left.

Hao Lei shrugged and laughed, “I’ll leave this matter for you to deal with! I’m going back to get some rest and take care of things in Grand Fortune Jewelries tomorrow. We’ll leave for the Headquarters in Jingmen Island the day after tomorrow. Oh god! I’m excited.”

Nodding, Tian Li said, “Boss will leave tomorrow, so we can go back the day after.”

Two minutes after, Tian Li sat alone in the hall, wearing a cold and detached expression as she looked at Qi Chengshan and Qi Changxing.

“Chief Tian!”

Forcing out a wry smile, Qi Chengshan came before Tian Li.

“Is there something?” asked Tian Li lightly.

Qi Chengshan took a check from his pocket and handed it to Tian Li, saying, “I just heard about the matter tonight, Chief Tian.

Please accept this 1 billion check as a token of apology to your Everlasting Feast Hall's Boss."

"Who told you the news?" Tian Li didn't receive the check but asked instead.

"Du Changze told me and asked me 1 billion yuan for the news," said Qi Chengshan.

Tian Li slanted her brows and sneered, "Du Changze just ripped you off, eh?! Anyways, since you bought the news for such a high price, I believe you already know the about the aftermath, no? Do you think our Everlasting Feast Hall cares about a mere 1 billion?"

"Chief Tian, I can't come up with more money for now. Prior to this, I paid 500 million yuan to Du Changze. I'll borrow the remaining 1 billion from my friend to pay the rest. The Jiang Group and Wanyuan Real Estate have more capital than me, so coming up with this amount of money is the limit of my capabilities."

"Consider this over. You can go!" upon hearing it, Tian Li replied and received the check.

Secretly relieved inside, Qi Chengshan hastily said, "Then, I'll no longer disturb you. I'll take my leave, farewell."

"Wait!"

Tian Li suddenly smiled, “Remember to convey my message to Du Changze after you leave. For him to gain 1 billion with no reason at all, it’s atypical.”

Qi Chengshan’s eyes flickered as he immediately took the hint, saying, “Don’t worry. I’ll convey your message.”

As he left the Everlasting Feast Hall, a sneer was revealed on Qi Chengshan’s face. He took out his mobile after sitting in his car and dialed Du Changze’s cell number. After his call had connected, he bluntly spoke, “Brother Du, thanks for the information you gave me. Because of it I resolved the matter. However, as I was about to leave, Tian Li wanted me to convey a message to you.”

“What is it?” asked Du Changze in an urgent tone.

“She said that you don’t have to eat such poor food alone.”

Keeping the food for himself?

Du Changze hadn’t rested yet and his complexion turned unsightly. After falling into silence for a long period of time, he slowly said, “I know what to do.”

“See you again later!”

As he ended the call, Qi Chengshan turned his head to look at his son—Qi Changxing, who sat next to him. Were he not his son, he would have choked him to death himself for having to waste 2

billion in just one night.

It was 2 billion yuan! Though the Qi Family had a big enterprise and possessed a lot of assets, taking out 2 billion all of a sudden would still create a lethal effect!

“Dad, I made mistake. I promise I won’t cause any more troubles in the future,” knowing his father’s temper, Qi Changxing quickly spoke.

Qi Chengshan took a deep breath, repressing his anger.

Obtaining a lesson by spending money. If by spending 2 billion yuan his son could get rid of his bad habit and then study well to take over the family’s business, it would be fine. However, it was too huge a price!

The next morning, Tang Xiu woke up. He meditated for four hours last night and then went straight to sleep. With his current cultivation level, it wouldn’t be a problem for him to stay awake for fifteen days. Still, he chose to sleep for several hours to rejuvenate his spirit.

Having finished his shower and leaving his room, he went to the hall on the first floor and found Tian Li waiting for him there.

“Boss!”

Getting up from the sofa, Tian Li greeted him respectfully.

“Have you handled the matter last night thoroughly? Did anything else happen?”

“Everything has been taken care of. Also, Li Juren called me last night and with his help, we hadn’t encountered any problems thus far! As long as Jiang Tianba and the others don’t babble about it, everything is on track,” said Tian Li.

Tang Xiu sneered, “They will never speak even half a word about it, unless they’re tired of their lives. Anyways, have you had breakfast yet?”

“Not yet, Boss,” said Tian Li and shook her head.

“Come and have breakfast with me! I will catch the plane after the meal.”

Complying, Tian Li then followed Tang Xiu to the dining room.

The villa had many maids and the meals had been prepared as they served the dishes on the table after Tang Xiu and Tian Li sat down.

“Boss, Qi Changxing’s father—Qi Chengshan, came to the Everlasting Feast Hall after you left last night. He brought his son to apologize and gave me 1 billion yuan as a token of apology,” said Tian Li while eating.



Tang Xiu nodded, “Take the compensation money to Jingmen Island and give it to Gu Xiaoxue. I have many things to take care of, so I’ve little time to manage things in the Everlasting Feast Hall. You can find her If anything comes up later. Only call me if you can’t manage the issue.”

Tian Li was surprised for a moment as she then said, “Boss, that means you will not manage the Everlasting Feast Hall’s issues as per normal?”

“I’m still a student and just finished my CET this year. My score is rather acceptable as well as the top scorer for the science subjects in Shuangqing province. Also, I’m going to Shanghai University to study.”

Tian Li’s eyes stared wide, almost popping out. The fact that Tang Xiu was a student who just graduated and became a freshman was out of her imagination. More unthinkable was that Tang Xiu even earned first place for the CET science subjects in Shuangqing province.

“Boss, is it necessary for you to go to college in your mind?” probed Tian Li cautiously.

Forcing out a smile, Tang Xiu said, “If you ask my thoughts about it, it’s unnecessary. Yet, my mother’s greatest dream has always been me being admitted to a prestigious university. For her, it’s an imperative wish.”

A light burst out from Tian Li’s eyes. She lowered her head to

conceal it and spoke again, “Boss, might I ask you something? You may ignore my question if you don’t want to answer it, though.”

“Just ask! You don’t need to put on such a cautious look before me. I may create rivers of blood and leave countless dead bodies for my enemies, but it would be absolutely unlikely for the people under me. Have a little confidence,” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

“Big Boss raised us since childhood, Boss. If she was not there we definitely wouldn’t be able to live now. Big Boss has told us ever since our childhood to seek someone called Tang Xiu regardless of anytime or anywhere. I think that person should be you, no?”

“That’s right, it’s me!” said Tang Xiu.

“Then, your relationship with Big Boss is...” asked Tian Li.

“Yan’er is my apprentice,” said Tang Xiu lightly.

“What?” Tian Li suddenly stood with disbelief all over her face.

Letting out a light smile, Tang Xiu said, “Some things are meant to be kept a secret, for you don’t have the qualifications to know about them as of now. Someday in the future, when your cultivation can follow me to another world, you will understand.”

Another world?

Astonishment covered Tian Li's face as she looked at Tang Xiu, aghast. It was as though a storm rose inside her heart, because she had never thought that there existed another world besides Earth.

“B-Boss... what and where is that other world you're talking about?”

With a serene expression, Tang Xiu said, “For now you don't need to know. When you reach the realm of immortals I'll naturally tell you. Anyways, let's stop here. You're not to tell another soul about what I just told you.”

“Yes!” said Tian Li respectfully.

Waving his hand, Tang Xiu motioned her to sit down and continued eating breakfast.

# Chapter 288: Retention

---

The beautiful sunshine shone on the very Earth. It was nine o'clock in the morning when Tang Xiu, along with the Mo Brothers, arrived at Hong Kong Airport. Mo Awen had booked tickets with scheduled flight at 9:30 AM, so there was half an hour left before they took off. The flight to Nine Dragon Island would require one to transit Saipan before they took a sea route from Saipan to Nine Dragon Island.

Tang Xiu brought some books in his suitcase for this trip. The Yellow Emperor's Canon of Medicine, the Fundamental Theories of Businesses, the Nanotechnology, and the Theory of Laser Instrument Development.

Recently, Tang Xiu was particularly keen on reading some books on science and technology since modern technology had never existed in the Immortal World yet each and every civilization possessed its essence.

Through the present science and technology, Tang Xiu wanted to verify some of his ideas. What made him somewhat content was the fact that the present science and technology were really powerful in which what seemed like ordinary knowledge actually contained profound laws.

After killing some time, the three boarded the plane soon after. As the plane took off, they arrived at Kobler International Airport in Saipan by noon. The moment Tang Xiu came out from the plane, his spirit was aroused. The air was fresh, and along with the blue sky, it gave him a complete relaxed feeling.

“Boss, are we heading straight to Nine Dragon Island by ship or do you want to rest in Saipan for a day?” Mo Awen, who had been to Saipan and was rather familiar with the place asked Tang Xiu.

“Rent a boat, we’ll go straight to Nine Dragon Island!” said Tang Xiu.

“Yes!” Mo Awen quickly took his mobile and dialed a cell number.

A few minutes later, he ended up the call and spoke to Tang Xiu, “We have rented a cruiser in Redsand Bay Port, Boss. However, we need to buy some supplies before we set sail because it will take around two days to sail to Nine Dragon Island.”

Such a trivial matter was something Tang Xiu didn’t want to bother with. After he sat on the taxi parked on the roadside, he said, “These kind of things will be your duty to take care of.”

Immediately after, he spoke in English, “Redsand Bay Port.”

At Redsand Port.

A big black man—Tom Reggie was smoking a thick cigar with a yellow sun hat, plaid casual short, big red trousers and slippers. He stood on the quayside and shouted, “Get a move on! Take out your chicks strength and get my Kerry to the sea! This Big Daddy is kinda happy today so don’t fuck it up! Whoever screws up I swear I’ll smash your balls off...”

On the beach, over a hundred big guys revealed their fine muscular bodies as they operated pulleys to move a brand new cruiser to the sea. The Kerry cruiser was 80 meters in length and looked particularly luxurious.

“Boss, those people are here,” a man came before him and spoke respectfully.

Tom Reggie turned around and looked at the three men tens of meters away before his eyes finally fixated on Mo Awen. He walked toward them and made a strange hand sign after he was several meters away from Mo Awen.

With the same hand signal, Mo Awen responded back to him.

“Yo buddy, it’s been eight years since our last meet, no?” Tom Reggie spoke in fluent English, all smiling.

Mo Awen laughed, “Yep. It’s been eight years and six months. I thought you were dead so it’s surprising to see you now.”

“Your country has an old saying that good people don’t live long while calamity lasts for millennia. I guess I’m kinda a calamity in your custom eh?! Anyways, is this... your Big Boss?”

“Yep. He’s my Boss,” said Mo Awen.

Extending his hand, Tang Xiu nodded and said, “I’m Tang Xiu.”

Tom Reggie shook hands with Tang Xiu and laughed, “Well, I kinda admire you, Mr. Tang. Rather, I’m quite curious about what sort of abilities you have for being able to make Mo Awen your subordinate. How about we exchange some blows? I’m quite strong myself.”

“Boss, Tom is very powerful, he had once killed an adult African elephant with his bare hands,” said Mo Awen.

Tang Xiu shook his head and laughed, “You have to be prepared to die if you want to confront me. But you can try now if you wish to.”

“No no no. We are friends. How can we have a life-and-death contest? Besides, Mo Awen is my friend and comrade-in-arms. You’re his boss, he’ll surely come with everything he has against me if I kill you. And to be honest, I’m not even his match,” Tom Reggie waved his hands repeatedly.

“Tom, I’m not even a match for Boss,” Mo Awen calmly said.

“What?”

Tom Reggie was surprised for a moment as his eyes stared wide, astonishment sprouting inside him. He knew Mo Awen’s character; he never lied. Such being the case, was this young man—Mr. Tang really a powerful individual?

Tang Xiu was reluctant to get tangled in such trivial matter. He looked to the shore and asked, “Is that cruiser the one you’re renting to us?”

Nodding, Tom Reggie said, “This Kerry cruiser was just shipped here yesterday, but her crew had all been trained well, so they can definitely control the ship. Also, the service staff have arrived so we can set sail at any time.”

“We can’t set sail tonight?” asked Tang Xiu with knitted brows.

Tom Reggie shrugged his shoulders, “We could set sail at night, but the meteorological bureau just spread out the news that a small tsunami is predicted to occur tomorrow morning. For safety’s sake, I suggest we wait it out before leaving.”

Tsunami?

After being silent for a moment, Tang Xiu then nodded and slowly said, “In that case, we can only wait for a day here. Awen, book some rooms in a nearby hotel.”

“I have arranged the hotel accommodation. It’s an upscale resort nearby. I also have prepared an appropriate banquet tonight as a welcoming dinner for you,” said Tom with a smile.

A hint of a happy smile was revealed on Tang Xiu’s face as he nodded, “Thank you.”



“You’re welcome. Who made me owe my life to this Awen guy a few times anyway? Well, I’ll go get them to prepare the ship first before I take you to rest in the resort,” Tom Reggie said with a smile.

On their way to the nearby resort, Tang Xiu asked Mo Awen, “The two of you were comrades-in-arms?”

Mo Awen nodded, “We were under the same organization in the past, so he and I had performed some missions together. The missions were very dangerous and we fought side by side for many times and almost died in the process. He’s one of the people I trust the most aside from our own people. I originally intended to invite him to work for the Everlasting Feast Hall, but he refused.”

Tang Xiu nodded, “He’s a man with ambition, and it looks like he happens to have a good life.”

“Boss, though it’s been more than eight years since the last time I saw him, but I still learned some news about him. A few years ago he lived rather bad days since he offended the local tyrants. He was chased for more than two years and I once thought that he surely died. I didn’t expect he would return and secretly slew his mortal enemies. He also made use of another force to decimate them. All the while his mortal enemies were fighting for power and profit, he finally set up his foothold and stood firm here,” said Mo Awen.

Curious, Tang Xiu asked, “Since you’re comrades of life and death, why didn’t you lend him a hand?”

“One’s life can only be preserved by oneself. I’d avenge him if he died, but if he wants to set up his foothold between the sky and earth, he must rely on himself. Not to mention that I’m a member of the Everlasting Feast Hall, so I can never bring any trouble to my own home,” said Mo Awen.

Tang Xiu slowly nodded, “It seems that whoever is trained by Yan’er is very good.”

“Big Boss fostered and brought us up. She rescued our lives from human traffickers, providing us with all the basic necessities of life as well as spent a lot of resources to train us. Our lives will always belong to the Everlasting Feast Hall,” said Mo Awen.

Tang Xiu fell into silence.

Many people had once been trained by him, but eventually, only a remaining few survived. Those who survived also scattered throughout the Immortal World and rarely moved around in peacetime. They only appeared to pay homage to him every hundred years.

Having human resources was a powerful strength. At this point, he was more certain now how wrong he was before. At the same time, his thought of nurturing a large number of loyal subordinates with strong convictions and dreadful strength was becoming firmer.

At Saipan’s Lao Bay Resort.

When they arrived there, Tom Reggie's subordinate—a very graceful young woman, waited there.

"Are you Mr. Tang?"

Wearing a dozen centimeters' high heels, Ai Jasmine strode over. Her slender waist swung by. Attractive and beautiful, she had fair white skin, was blonde-haired and had blue eyes, giving off a typical exotic vibe.

"I am!" Tang Xiu nodded.

Ai Jasmine smiled lightly, "Our Boss ordered me to lead Mr. Tang to the residence after you arrived. Also, I have arranged a number of programs which you can choose freely at any time should you wish to. The cost will be on our Boss."

"Lead the way, please!"

The program said by the other party piqued Tang Xiu's curiosity. He followed Ai Jasmine to the interior of the resort where a villa resided in the landscape with the best ocean view.

"Well, this is the program list, Mr. Tang. Would you wish to have the whole service, or choose a few types from it?" asked Ai Jasmine with a smile.

When he saw the program list, Tang Xiu's expression suddenly changed. He wasn't sure about most of the listed programs. He had heard of several programs amongst those, which were the Thai Massage, Seabed Diving, and Surfing.

"I'll try the Thai Massage! The Seven Goddesses Dance sounds interesting. As for the rest, I'll pass," having finished talking, Tang Xiu gave the program list to Mo Awen and said with a smile, "Let's consider it a relaxation in our trip. You two also pick a few."

Upon hearing Tang Xiu's pick, especially the Seven Goddesses Dance, Mo Awen suddenly let out a slight smile. However, he gave the program list to Mo Awu and said with a smile, "Boss, I'm not interested in these programs. Besides, we're in an unfamiliar place, so I need to prevent any strangers from disturbing you. But Awu likes such kind of plays, though. So let him choose one."

Mo Awu didn't refuse and deftly selected a few programs.

Looking at Tang Xiu, the smile on Ai Jasmine's face turned into a crescent shape.

"Alright, please follow me, Mr. Tang! As for Mr. Awu, please wait a bit. Someone will guide you later."

## Chapter 289: The Slob—Wretched Fat Man

---

Lao Bay Resort was very large and had an impressively elegant interior construction design. The architecture was exotic, with each villa constructed on a wide area along with numerous precious vegetation as well as colorful blooming flowers everywhere.

There were even many well-dressed handsome men and beautiful women, possessing the bearing of nobles. In just ten minutes, Tang Xiu saw dozens of luxury cars rarely seen in China such as the Bugatti Veyron—the world's limited edition that was priced at tens of millions of yuan.

“If my guess is correct, Mr. Tang should be from China, right?” Jasmine was rather friendly toward Tang Xiu. As she guided Tang Xiu through the hallway, she explained the landscape of the resort and kept a smile on her face all the while.

“That's right,” said Tang Xiu with a nod.

“China's economy has been growing rapidly nowadays, and the people in your country are becoming wealthier. At least one-fifth of the tourists staying in Lao Bay Resort come from your country,” said Ai Jasmine with a smile.

“That many?” asked Tang Xiu in astonishment.

“Perhaps Lao Bay Resort's reputation has spread to your country. Hence, many of the guests from your country like to stay here.

Though the prices here are rather high, they don't seem to care about it. The casino is one of the most visited sites for the guests from your country," said Ai Jasmine with a laugh.

A casino?

A strange expression appeared on Tang Xiu's face upon hearing it. He recalled his endeavor in helping Long Zhengyu and Jia Ruidao's gambling bet. From two games of gambling, he got a lot of benefits from them.

Since he had come, should he play a few games?

The thought crossed his mind as Tang Xiu quickly made up his mind that, after he got some free time after finishing the project, he would visit a casino to play some games. He wanted to experience the gambling scene in a foreign country as well as make some money while convenient.

The current him had money; he was much richer than in the past!

The bank card Ji Chimei gave him still had 8 billion in it. He originally planned to give it back to Gu Xiaoxue, but after the incident in Hong Kong with Jiang Tianba, Chen Jianye, Du Changze and Qi Chengshan, he obtained a huge fortune eclipsing the 8 billion yuan in his hands.

Hence, he decided to use it for the rebuilding project in Nine

Dragon Island. However, the island was very large and, according to the rebuilding plan he had in mind, let alone 8 billion, even 80 billion yuan wouldn't be enough. Thus, he would be more relaxed in the future if he could win some money from the casino.

At the health club.

Four beautiful young ladies appeared as Ai Jasmine took Tang Xiu inside. Wearing nightgowns and soft sandals, they bowed toward Tang Xiu. One of the girls then said in fluent English, "We welcome you, Sir. Might I ask what service you picked?"

Ai Jasmine was the one to reply, "This is Mr. Tang, he needs a Thai Massage. Arrange it for him, I'll be waiting in the rest area. Remember to inform me after you finished the service."

"Alright."

As the vice president of the resort, the four girls naturally knew Ai Jasmine; they being particularly respectful toward her was a given.

"Please come with me, Mr. Tang."

A beautiful girl made an invitation gesture and took Tang Xiu toward a exquisitely decorated corridor inside. After having passed two corridors and through the beautiful environment around the hall, she guided Tang Xiu to another room at the side and then asked, "Mr. Tang, do you need a private room or a public one? The

private room has one bed and, aside from the massaging staff, two girls are ready for service, whereas the public room has three beds with three massaging staff and three attendants.”

Pondering for a moment, Tang Xiu slowly said, “Take me to the public room, the private one is too extravagant.”

“Alright!”

The beautiful girl then took Tang Xiu to another hall and opened one of the rooms. Inside there was already a guest enjoying a Thai Massage at the moment. The guest was a chubby middle-aged man full of fat with big ears and short hair whose thick neck had a thick gold necklace that was glittering under the crystal chandeliers’ light.

The chubby middle-aged man apparently sensed Tang Xiu’s arrival since he turned his head and threw a glance to size up Tang Xiu while enjoying the Thai Massage from a beautiful masseuse. Then, he groaned, “A Japanese?”

“Chinese,” Tang Xiu’s brow pricked and replied in Mandarin.

The fatty middle-aged man was stunned for a second as a hint of a smile appeared on his face. He raised his lying hand to Tang Xiu and smiled, “I thought you were a Japanese, but I didn’t expect you to be a fellow countryman! Hey Little Bro, come and take the bed next to me.”



Putting on a light smile, Tang Xiu looked at the beautiful girl and said, “It’s my first time enjoying a Thai Massage. Is there anything I need to do before the service?”

The pretty girl said, “You need to go to the dressing room to change your clothes. If you want to take a bath, there’s a bathroom next to it, Mr. Tang. Someone will guide you here and give you a Thai Massage. If there’s anything you need, you can also call the attendants, they will do their best to meet your needs.”

“I understand!”

Tang Xiu nodded, motioning the beautiful girl to leave. He then turned toward the dressing room, changed his clothes and put on pajamas, and then went to the bathroom for a shower. After he put on the pajamas back, he then came to the public room.

“Sir, I’m your masseuse and she is your hostess. You can tell us if there’s anything you need. Might I ask whether you want to start now?” Another girl with beautiful looks comparable to the previous girl Tang Xiu had met before came in front of him, followed by another girl in yellow uniform.

Nodding to her, Tang Xiu then looked at the middle-aged man who was only wearing underwear. He also took off his bathrobe and lied on the next single bed.

The fat middle-aged man squinted his eyes, watching Tang Xiu’s actions. He asked all smiling, “Little Bro, it’s your first time having a Thai Massage, isn’t it? Are you anxious? Relax buddy. Just enjoy

it, we are the Gods here. Even if you say you're their biological father, they won't deny it."

Rolling his eyes inside, Tang Xiu felt quite amused toward the fat middle-aged man who spoke with a Northeasterner accent.

The masseuse took off her bathrobe on the bedside of the single men, leaving only three pieces of underwear on her body. She then began to prepare her props such as the massaging oil, clean towels and other things.

Shortly after, the masseuse's white hands gently stroked Tang Xiu's body, causing him to feel somewhat nervous. At this time, he was somewhat secretly regretting. Had he known about it earlier, he would have ordered a private room.

A Thai Massage indeed could make someone relax and feel comfortable.

Tang Xiu could clearly feel that this female masseuse was truly skillful. She had a very deep comprehension pertaining the human body. He could even faintly tell that she had a deep knowledge of acupuncture points and meridians of the human body. Though her Thai Massage was somewhat unusual, yet it could make people feel relaxed and comfortable.

The chubby middle-aged man apparently was slightly excited about having bumped into his fellow countryman here. While resting his head on his arms, he looked at Tang Xiu and asked, "Little Bro, you haven't told me your name yet, and from which

region you come from! My name is Li Laoshan, my buddies used to call me Geezer Li—the Fatty. I come from the Northeast of China, Fucheng.”

“I’m Tang Xiu, from Star City of Shuangqing province.”

Somehow, Tang Xiu was reluctant to speak. But, since the man was, after all, his fellow countryman, he also didn’t want to appear exceedingly indifferent.

Geezer Fatty Li apparently knew Star City since he praised with a sigh, “Ah, Star City is a good place! I had been there a few times. To Long’s Dining Hall, in particular. I had once stayed in its presidential suite for a night, but it gave me such a firm impression right away.”

“I really never thought that you actually had once stayed in the Long’s Dining Hall. It seems you have a friend in Star City, right?” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

Geezer Fatty Li chuckled, “But of course! Though I run a steel business, I have a lot of friends and other whatnot in the domestic business circle. For example, the Big Boss of Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical in your Star City. Old Chen is my long time buddy, of whom was the cause of my visit to Star City twice before.”

Old Chen?

Tang Xiu was surprised, “You mean it’s Chen Zhizhong?”

“Yea, Chen Zhizhong. Ah, Little Brother, you also heard about him?” Geezer Fatty Li nodded and smiled.

“Yes!” replied Tang Xiu with a smile.

Geezer Fatty Li chuckled and laughed, “No wonder, though. The Endless Virtue Pharmaceutical’s HQ is in Star City, whereas that Old Chen is kinda a celebrity in the business world, so it’s not strange if you know him too. The story of meeting him is kinda a fantasy saga in itself. We were both members of a martial arts society and he beat me badly back then. Afterwards, I went to Star City twice, finding him for a fight. My grandma, that guy’s strength is darn good. Every time I feel that I made progress and look for him, he’s always a step ahead of me.”

The smile on Tang Xiu’s face was getting thicker. This Geezer Fatty Li was mocking himself without the slightest embarrassment, yet it caused Tang Xiu to have some favorable impression of him. Oftentimes, those who were telling the truth about their weaknesses to others were the sort of people who had frank and good characters.

“Chen Zhizhong indeed has a good strength. You will perhaps be beaten by him more miserably if you go to Star City now,” said Tang Xiu whilst letting out a faint smile.

The Geezer Fatty Li stared blankly for a second as he asked in amazement, “Do you know him?”

“Yea, I know him!” said Tang Xiu with a nod.

Sizing up Tang Xiu yet again, Geezer Fatty Li probed, “To be acquaintances with Chen Zhizhong is not something someone who has simple capital can do. Little Bro, your background is kinda unusual, no? Tell this Old Bro of yours, what does your family do in Star City?”

“I’m only a student who was just admitted to university. I’ll have to register myself to university in September. Only, I have set up a small business there and usually tamper with some medicinal herbs. Hence, the reason I know him,” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

Geezer Li understood in an instant. Still, he was surprised as he let out a sigh and exclaimed in praise, “You’re amazing, Little Bro! You started your own business at such a young age? Damn, when I was at your age, I only knew how to flirt with chicks and hang out with my buddies to drink, playing with them every day.”

## Chapter 290: Profiting from the Relationship with Someone

---

Tang Xiu smiled and no longer spoke. He didn't show off neither did he say that Chen Zhizhong was his apprentice. After all, he only just met Geezer Li today, boasting was unnecessary; even though he liked Geezer Li's personality.

Geezer Li—the Fatty also seemed reluctant to mention the topic about Chen Zhizhong and Tang Xiu again. He changed the topic to the local condition and customs in Saipan as well as the favorite entertainments there.

“Little Bro, you should have picked the program list when you came here, right? Tell this Old Bro, what did you pick?” Geezer Fatty Li suddenly asked with a smile.

“I only picked two. One is the Thai Massage, and the other one is the Seven Goddesses Dance.”

Geezer Li fell into a daze, his eyes almost bulging out from its sockets. He shouted, “What did you say? You picked the Seven Goddesses Dance? I'm damned! It's great! So great! Hella grandma, this Geezer Li is rather old and can no longer have this kind of excitement.”

Shortly after, a bit of an envious look was reflected on his face, saying, “It's great to be young! If I were to return to the past, even though I dared not pick this Seven Goddesses Dance, but I still wanna experience it.”

At the side, either it was Tang Xiu and Geezer Li's masseuses, even the other two young female attendants changed their expressions when they looked at Tang Xiu. Blazing fiery lights filled the four girls' eyes.

Confused, Tang Xiu asked in puzzlement, "What sort of program is this Seven Goddesses Dance exactly?"

"You don't know?" Geezer Li asked in astonishment.

"Huh?" Tang Xiu shook his head, "Nope! I just thought it sounded good, so I picked it on a whim."

"Hahaha..."

Geezer Li burst into loud laughter as even tears fell amidst his laugh. His expression when he looked at Tang Xiu was full of teasing flavor. As his laugh turned milder, he said, "Little Bro, rarely did this Old Bro have been had, yet I got struck by you today. You know nothing about what sort of program the Seven Goddesses Dance is, yet you unexpectedly dared to pick it? Point is, if anything, I won't tell you what it is, you might as well wait to know it yourself! Hahaha... let's exchange our cell numbers, I wanna see your appearance after you've enjoyed the Seven Goddesses Dance... Hahaha..."

Looking at his expression, Tang Xiu became more curious about the Seven Goddesses Dance. However, since the old man kept him guessing, he was also reluctant to ask again. Didn't the service

need to be enjoyed? He had requested it, and regardless whatever the service was, he should enjoy it.

After enjoying the Thai Massage, Tang Xiu put his clothes back on and found that Geezer Li, who had finished his Thai Massage half an hour earlier than him, hadn't left yet. He was now drinking flavored tea in the side hall and smoking a cigar while half-leaning on the resting couch.

“Oh, Little Brother. What do you think about that Thai Massage?” seeing Tang Xiu coming out, Geezer Li immediately smiled and asked.

“It's not bad!” said Tang Xiu with a nod.

Geezer Li stood up and smiled, “Little Bro, the Seven Goddesses Dance is usually more fun to play at night. How about we go play somewhere else now?”

Puzzled, Tang Xiu asked, “Where?”

Geezer Li chuckled and smiled, “The Casino.”

Tang Xiu was dazed for second. After a moment's hesitation, he nodded and slowly said, “OK. Let's play in the casino then. However, I'm a poor man and only have a little money.”

“It's fine. Us—brothers, are fated to meet. I'll help you out today. Your old brother may not be very rich, but taking out 1.8 million



for fun and play isn't a problem."

Tang Xiu shook his head, "You don't need to do that."

Geezer Li waved his hand, "It's your call. You can buy the chips if you have the money. You can tell me if you're short on money. We're here on vacation, to play and enjoy ourselves."

Tang Xiu smiled and nodded. He could feel a faint superior imposing aura from Geezer Li. The man was not someone from the political world, so he was probably someone influential in the business world. 1.8 million yuan was perhaps only a small sum and not worth mentioning to him.

Knowing how to restraint oneself in gambling! From this only, this Geezer Fatty Li was not your usual layman.

Sighing inside, Tang Xiu walked outside alongside him. When the both of them arrived at the outermost hall, Jasmine and Mo Awen came.

"Did the Thai Massage conform to your satisfaction, Mr. Tang?"

"Not bad. My body feels kinda comfortable right now," said Tang Xiu with a smile.

Glancing at Geezer Fatty Li, Jasmine smiled and asked again, "Then, are you going to try the Seven Goddesses Dance now?"

“No need to hurry. I want to follow this old brother to play in the casino first. Awen, you can go rest now, you don’t need to follow me,” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

"Yes!" replied Mo Awen immediately when he heard it.

Looking at Jasmine and glancing at Mo Awen, Geezer Fatty Li seemed surprised, “Little Bro, they are...”

“She seems to be a staff. As for him, he’s my subordinate,” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

Amazed, Geezer Fatty Li replied in astonishment, “Your man is kinda unusual! Looking at his steady footsteps and strong physique, he should be a martial expert! I never thought you also brought your bodyguards when you come out to play, Little Bro.”

Tang Xiu didn’t explain, only letting out a faint smile.

Jasmine took out a business card from her pocket, handed it over to Geezer Li and said with a smile, “Hello, Sir. I’m the Vice President of Lao Bay Resort, Ai Jasmine. You can call me Manager Jasmine. Mr. Tang is our distinguished guest, so I’m here to ensure the service myself.”

A Vice President? And he’s a VIP?

For the first time, Geezer Fatty Li was piqued by Tang Xiu's identity. The Lao Bay Resort was an upscale and luxurious holiday resort, and he also heard that the force behind it was rather powerful. Someone who could become a Vice President here certainly possessed unusual identity. While she personally accompanied Tag Xiu and even said that he was a VIP, this was evidence that Tang Xiu himself had an extraordinary identity, far more than the person himself had said?

“I'm Li Laoshan, this is my business card!”

Geezer Fatty Li also gave his business card to Jasmine.

“Well, I'll inform the Reception Manager of the Resort about you, Mr. Li. Since you are a friend of Mr. Tang's, then I'll call him to give you a 40% discount for any of your expenses. This is the maximum rights I can give under my privileges.”

Looking at Tang Xiu with a strange expression, Geezer Fatty Li couldn't help smiling, “Well, having taken a Thai Massage and met you—Little Brother, it's rather unexpected it would also drag me into the limelight as well. I gotta say thanks.”

Jasmine nodded and smiled.

“Anyways, Jasmine. You don't need to escort me. You can take care of your work! Also, if Tom comes at dinner, please inform me,” said Tang Xiu.

“Roger that!” Jasmine chuckled and nodded.

Along with Jasmine’s departure, Geezer Fatty Li embraced Tang Xiu’s shoulders. Letting out mischievous chuckle, he said, “Little Bro, you were hiding something, eh? Having the Vice President escort you personally, is not something possible for a student who has a small business, no? Tell me quickly, from which influential force are you?”

Shrugging his shoulders, Tang Xiu smiled, “Nope. I’m kinda benefitting from my subordinate, to be frank. He and Jasmine’s Boss are friends, a life and death comrade-in-arms to be precise. So, you know the rest.”

Geezer Fatty Li instantly understood as he said with a smile, “Just wow! It looks like the both of us got the limelight from others then. Anyways, shall we go to the casino? I’m sure luck is upon us today, so my luck in gambling should be very good.”

“OK!”

Shortly after, under Geezer Fatty Li’s leading, the duo went to the Lao Bay Resort’s casino.

The two-storied casino was built in a large area. The first floor was a big hall, providing gambling establishments for the public. Inside there lots of people encircling various gambling establishments. The second floor was for private boxes. Unless the gambling bouts were over a billion gambling stake, no one was eligible to enter it.

Geezer Fatty Li, who seemed familiar with the place, brought Tang Xiu to a counter at the innermost to exchange money to chips. He only exchanged 1 million, as did Tang Xiu.

“Little Bro, what do you wanna play?” Geezer Li asked curiously.

Tang Xiu shook his head, “I don’t know much about the rules and customs for gambling in casinos. You play first! I’ll observe and study the gambling machines here. I’ll try to play some games after I got a hint of it.”

Geezer Fatty Li shook his head, “It’s kinda boring if I play alone. Anyways, I’ll help you explaining whatever you wanna know! Let’s see who among us—brothers will have more wins.”

“Are you not afraid to lose all of your money?” Tang Xiu laughed.

Geezer Li raised his brows and grinned, “If I’m gonna lose it all, then let it be. Consider it as payment for picking the Seven Goddesses Dance. Alright, let’s go stroll around!”

The atmosphere inside the casino was lively and noisy. Many gamblers were betting. Those who won were overjoyed with ecstasy all over their faces, whereas those who lost looked dejected with bitterness on their faces.

As a regular patron of the casino, Geezer Fatty Li knew the gambling machines here inside out. He even acted as the gambling

guru as he taught Tang Xiu some know-how and gambling tips.

After having circled around, Geezer Li, who had his mouth parched for doing some explanations, conveniently picked up a glass of red wine from the tray brought by a waiter. He drank it and then asked, “So, what do you wanna play, Little Bro? I’ll be accompanying you today and playing the same games with you. Let us compete!”

“Let’s play dice!” Tang Xiu laughed.

Nodding, Geezer Li said, “Let’s go! Betting big or small numbers, you place your bet and that’s it. It’s kinda a good one as simple and crude games are what this Geezer Li excels at.”

As they came to the dice games’ spot, a lot of people had already gathered there.

The dealer was a middle-aged woman and various gamblers were already on the table.

“Ladies and Gentlemen, please take your time to place your bet.”

As the dealer’s voice sounded, the gamblers around put their chips representing the amount of money on the spots they wanted.

Tang Xiu didn’t hurry to place his bet, instead watching it quietly. In stark contrast, Geezer Li, who found that Tang Xiu showed no intention to bet, casually put out two 10K chips.

He bet on a big number.

It was 4, 5 and 6. A total of 15 points.

If 15 points were out, then he would get ten times the bet. If the dices were not 4,5,6, then he would lose 20 thousand.

The dealer's dice shaking technique was very fast and also rather had a lot of frequency.

Having learned how to listen to the dice shaking technique from Jia Ruidao back then, Tang Xiu shook his head after the dealer pressed the dice cover on the table. He knew that Geezer Li had just lost his 20K bet.

## Chapter 291: Envy and Jealousy

---

As expected, when the dealer opened the dices' cover the number of the three dices were: 2, 3, and 4 respectively. It was a small number. Apart from one person who won a small amount of money, the remaining ten or so gamblers all lost.

“Well, an expert won't win before the third game!”

Fatty Li had just lost 20 thousand within a minute, yet he didn't care about it, instead, he looked at Tang Xiu cheerfully. Such amount of money to him was perhaps the price of a meal, not even enough to buy famous brand clothes.

Watching as he was about to place another bet, Tang Xiu pulled his hand and calmly said, “Let's go somewhere else. I don't wanna play dice anymore.”

“What? Do you think it's hard to win here? In actuality, it's hard to win a gambling in the casino. Have you heard the saying that nine out of ten gamblers will lose?” Fatty Li stared as he immediately let his hand free and said with a smile.

Tang Xiu replied with a smile, “Nine out of ten losing means that nobody wins, no? People who have a mentality of leaving things to luck and chance are in essence greedy inside their hearts. Like this, only the casinos will prosper.”

Fatty Li nodded and praised with a sigh, “You said it well. Every person has greed inside them. They can see it yet are unable to



control it. They know the principle that betting small is meant for enjoyment, and gambling big is just feeding their vice, yet such greed is something so difficult for gamblers to handle. For example, there are also a few local bosses who are gambling on the second floor tonight! They, alas... perhaps they're losing their hard-earned capital there."

The local magnates were gambling here?

Tang Xiu was stunned and asked in amazement, "Isn't this resort a place for recreation? How come people are here to gambling?"

Fatty Li snorted, "What else can they do aside from wasting their money since they haven't eaten to the full and have no one important to support and nothing to do? However, I also heard that there is a bit of grudge between them, though. Besides, it's a given that some conflicts would arise after they met here anyway. Also, I heard that someone from Qingcheng Mountain was invited. He's a direct disciple of the Saint of Gambler in Las Vegas and he even won big tonight!"

"Someone from Qingcheng Mountain? Who's he?" asked Tang Xiu, surprised.

Fatty Li turned and looked around as he whispered, "He's a small fish conman who used to be a scammer. Later on, he entered the business world, using his once-accumulated personal connections to obtain several good-producing coal mines in Northwest China, from which he got quite a fortune these years. Little Brother, you gotta remember, this guy is kinda crafty and devious, so you gotta keep your vigilance and be cautious when you bump into him

later.”

Tang Xiu nodded and looked pensive.

Amid their chat, they finally arrived at the roulette machines spot. Playing was as simple as inserting a chip, which it would then be identified by the machine. Were a chip with a 10K value be inserted into it, it would be exchanged for 1000 points by the machine, whereas each point was equal to 1 dollar. In other words, inserting the chip into the machine would have a value that was equivalent to one-tenth of the original.

However, the roulette wheel was divided into multiplier areas with the lowest being at 0 times. If the arrow pointed at the 0 times area in the wheel disk, then one would lose with not even a dime back. In addition, the multipliers from low to high respectively were: 0, 1, 5, 10, 20, 50, 100, 200, 500, and 1000 times.

There were two areas between 0 to 50-multipliers while there was only one area from 100 to 1000-multipliers.

At this time, only three gamblers were playing in front of the six roulette machines. Tang Xiu let out a slight smile as he looked at Fatty Li, “How about we play this one? It’s simple and crude, while winning and losing will all be decided by luck.”

Fatty Li hesitated, “I don’t think it’s as simple as being decided by luck, though. Gambling machines such as these are almost always tampered. It will be very difficult to hit the areas above 100-multiplier.”

Tang Xiu let out a slight smile, “Even if so, it’s still possible, no? Besides, we are playing with machines, it’s better than playing with those controlled by the dealers, right?”

Upon hearing it, Fatty Li nodded and smiled, “You’re right. Anyone who can be a dealer in this casino is no doubt an expert. Were they intending to cheat, I’m sure no one would know. Alright then, let’s play this. Let’s see who will get the biggest win!”

“Alright!”

Tang Xiu smiled faintly and stood before an unoccupied roulette machine. He took out a 10K chip and inserted it into the machine’s slot, and then pressed the start button.

“Buzz...”

The roulette machines’ wheel began to rotate violently. Ten seconds later, the arrow then pointed to 10-multiplier area, which meant that Tang Xiu didn’t lose or win.

Fatty Li, who was standing in front of another roulette machine, also inserted a 10K chip just like Tang Xiu. After pressing the start button, the arrow then ended up pointing at the 50 times multiplier area.

“Hahaha! I did say that my luck is good. I just got 5 times the bet directly.”

Glancing at Tang Xiu, Fatty Li, who was paying attention to Tang Xiu's gambling result, immediately let out a proud expression when he found he had won after comparing his result with Tang Xiu's.

"Old Li, didn't you say that an expert won't win before the third game?" Tang Xiu laughed.

Rolling his eyes, Fatty Li chuckled and laughed, "What? Did you believe that? I can't wait to win all the bets from the first to the last one."

Tang Xiu couldn't help laughing. A burst of light flashed in his eyes as he pressed the start button, releasing his mental force at the same time, fusing it into the machine. As the indicator rotated fast, Tang Xiu deliberately controlled the machine's arrow as its speed gradually decreased and pointed toward the 100-multiplier area.

Right at this time, Fatty Li also had his result. When he saw that the arrow ended up in the doubled area, the smile on his face turned brighter and he burst into laughter. At the same time, he also looked at the machine in front of Tang Xiu.

"What?"

The smile on his face instantly froze. He no longer cared about the roulette machine before him as he darted in front of Tang Xiu with eyes staring wide and exclaiming loudly, "1000 times? How

much did you insert into the machine? 1000 times... means... 1 million?”

“Yup! You got that right,” said Tang Xiu, nodding and smiling.

Fatty Li seemed about to blow up. He grudgingly went back to his roulette machine and groaned, “Bah, you’re so damn lucky! Though mine is not as good as yours, I also hit double this time. My 50K is now 100K.”

Tang Xiu smiled. He realized that his spiritual sense turned out to be able to control the wheel disk arrow. Hence, he decided to keep his good luck. Furthermore, he only just played once and didn’t need to place another bet.

He pressed the start button again. As the wheel’s indicator began to rotate, Tang Xiu wrapped the rotating wheel with his spiritual sense once again. Controlling it, it finally stopped in the 1000-multiplier area.

“Fuck it, I lost! I got the zero!”

Fatty Li cursed. Wearing a resentful expression, he turned his head and looked at the roulette machine in front of Tang Xiu as well as the red-colored numbers that were displayed on the roulette wheel. When he saw a series of zeroes on it, he was dumbstruck immediately.

“Sorry, the machine can’t put out the number of chips of the

relative values due to the huge amount of gambling stake you have won. Please contact the casino's staff."

A mechanical voice resounded from the roulette machine.

In an instant, the men and women in front of three roulette machines nearby looked toward Tag Xiu. When they approached and saw the numbers displayed on the roulette machine Tang Xiu was facing, each and every one of them stared with eyes wide in disbelief.

"Hey, come here!"

As Tang Xiu turned around and saw a middle-aged man with the casino's staff uniform, he waved to him.

"Is there anything you need, Sir?" the middle-aged man politely asked, all smiling.

Pointing at the numbers displayed on the roulette machine, Tang Xiu said lightly, "If I'm not mistaken, I think I got the 1 billion prize, no?"

When the middle-aged man looked at that string of red-colored numbers, he was shocked. He counted the numbers and found it was indeed 1 billion. Cold sweat instantly came out from his forehead. Whilst maintaining his polite manner, he hastily said, "Please wait a bit, Sir. I have to call our Manager. You have just won too big a gambling stake, I don't have the authority to handle

this.”

“Alright, please do so!” Tang Xiu nodded.

Noise and clamor started from the gamblers around, many of whom also heard what the staff just said. When they saw the red-colored numbers displayed on the roulette machine, all were shocked. Within just a short half a minute, dozens of people had gathered around.

Furthermore, due to the loud noises here, it attracted the attention of the gamblers in the entire casino hall as one after another approached, wanting to find out what had happened.

\*\*\*\*

The casino manager of the Lao Bay Resort—Tagger, was rather a powerful figure. Immediately after he got the call from his staff, he rushed there without stopping while contacting Jasmine—the Vice President of the resort on the way there.

“Hello, Sir. I’m the manager of this casino. Since you have won a huge gambling prize, please come with me to the VIP lounge to discuss it in detail,” said Tagger right after he arrived in front of Tang Xiu.

At the side, Fatty Li, who could tell there was a subtle meaning behind Tagger’s words, spoke in a deep tone, “Tang Xiu is my little brother and we’re together in this. You invited him to the VIP

lounge yet you didn't say as for how you will handle the payment procedure. Please explain what's all this about? Does it mean your casino is unwilling to pay?"

Tagger did have this thought in mind. He first wanted to clearly investigate Tang Xiu's background. Were Tang Xiu only an ordinary tourist without formidable forces backing him, he wouldn't spare efforts to make him disappear from this world forever. 1 billion was, after all, not a small amount of money.

However, Fatty Li could keenly perceive his idea and even revealed it in front of the crowd. It made him secretly furious. Yet, he still maintained his polite manner on the surface as he shook his head, "Please don't misunderstand it, Sir. Our meaning is to elaborate and discuss this in detail as how would to handle it. I have also informed the Resort's Vice President; she's on the way here. I believe she will receive you shortly."

The Vice President? Wasn't it Jasmine?

Fatty Li's nervourness was immediately gone after he heard it.

With a tranquil expression, Tang Xiu nodded and said, "Well, we'll discuss it in the VIP lounge then. I believe you won't disappoint me."

Despite sneering inside, Tagger still kept his amicable attitude and turned even more submissive, "You can rest assured that we won't let you down, Sir."



# Chapter 292: A Good Attitude

---

Inside the VIP lounge on the second floor.

Tagger warmly greeted Tang Xiu and Fatty Li and offered them a seat. At this time, Fatty Li himself had a particularly complicated mood inside. He had never thought that his actions to invite Tang Xiu to play in the resort's casino would unexpectedly end up with Tang Xiu winning 1 billion.

One billion! The net annual income of his big business was perhaps even less than this. Feeling envious and jealous was mostly the genuine portrait of the emotions inside his heart now. Yet, he could also faintly feel that this matter would somehow turn troublesome. After all, the people who opened casinos were not some friendly bunch, they would never hand over such a huge sum of money, more so in such a submissive manner.

‘Alas. Tang Xiu is still too young. He shouldn’t be able to see the crucial issue here,’ sighing inside, Fatty Li secretly decided that, were the other party really unwilling to pay, they also wouldn’t make their moves here. A powerful dragon couldn’t pressure the local snake, after all. Cheaply gaining profits inside another’s turf would prove exceedingly difficult.

“Gentlemen, how should we discuss it?”

Sitting in front of the two, Tagger lit a cigarette and put one of his legs atop the nother.

“What do you want to discuss exactly?” asked Tang Xiu back with a tranquil expression.

“We are all smart people. I don’t want to beat around the bush with you. Our casino business is excellent, and we also make quite a fortune annually. Yet, 1 billion is too big a number, I’m even suspecting that you have tampered with the machine. Hence, you won’t take that 1 billion,” said Tagger with a smile.

“Then, you meaning is... you want to renege on the pay, yes?” said Tang Xiu lightly.

The smile on Tagger’s face turned brighter, but the coldness in his eyes turned chillier. He looked at Tang Xiu, shook his head and said with a smile, “What’s your surname, Sir?”

“Tang,” said Tang Xiu.

Still smiling, Tagger continued, “I think you’re a wise man despite your young age, Mr. Tang. Some money is meant to be taken, while some others are not. Though we may give you that 1 billion, I’m afraid you wouldn’t be able to enjoy it either. It’s better if you accept 10 million from our casino and this issue will be settled privately by us. What do you think?”

Tang Xiu smiled and sighed in praise, “You’re rather a ruthless man, Mr. Tagger. Taking out 99% for yourself and leaving only 1% for me. Do you think I look like someone who needs 10 million?”

For a moment, Tagger stared blankly before his brows furrowed, “Did you not understand what I just said, Mr. Tang? Some people would kill for this amount. Do you think after you obtained such a huge sum of money you can still leave Saipan?”

Full of self-confidence, Tang Xiu replied, “I think I can!”

The smile on Tagger’s face disappeared completely and was replaced with a bit grim expression. He deeply smoked his cigarette, observing Tang Xiu with squinted eyes. There was not a chance that Tang Xiu would be able to leave Saipan alive after he got 1 billion; it was impossible for him to leave the city with the money.

He knew who his boss was. A rich and powerful man with evident ruthlessness.

More so that several shareholders behind this Lao Bay Resort were also powerful characters in Saipan, with each possessing formidable strength and energy. It could be said that nobody in Saipan dared to mess with them were they to join forces.

“Where’s the man?”

Outside the opened VIP lounge, Jasmine’s voice transmitted to the inside.

“They are in this VIP room,” the low and deep voice of a man replied.

As Jasmine's figure appeared in the door, a faint smile appeared on Tang Xiu's face while Fatty Li looked somewhat worried since he didn't know whether Tang Xiu's face was big enough to make Jasmine let him get that money despite regarding him as a distinguished guest.

When Jasmine entered the VIP room and her eyes landed on Tang Xiu and Fatty Li, she looked slightly surprised for a moment. She immediately approached Tang Xiu and said with a smile hung on her face, "Were you the one who just won 1 billion in the casino, Mr. Tang?"

Tang Xiu let out a light smile and said, "When luck comes, even if one wants to stop it, they can't block it. It's kinda accidental, though. Yet, the people in charge of this resort are rather amazing! To think that the casino manager himself wants to renege on the debt. Also, if I'm not misunderstanding it, he's also threatening me."

As for Tagger, who saw Jasmine's arrival, he immediately stopped smoking and stood up with a respectful expression. However, he stared blankly and was slightly surprised for a moment after he heard Jasmine and Tang Xiu converse. He didn't expect that Jasmine would know Tang Xiu.

Jasmine slightly frowned. She turned and looked at Tagger, speaking in a heavy tone, "Apologize to Mr. Tang."

Tagger knew who Jasmine was, and he was afraid of her since

she was one of the Boss's woman and also his most trusted confidante.

“I'm sorry, Mr. Tang.”

Letting out a faint smile, Tang Xiu then shifted his sight to Jasmine, “May I ask whether I'm entitled to receive the money I just won?”

For a moment, Jasmine fell into hesitation before she respectfully said, “Mr. Tang, I also don't have the authority over this issue. Could you give me some time to ask instructions from my boss?”

“It's fine, please do,” replied Tang Xiu and made a ‘please, after you’ gesture.

At Redsand Bay Port.

Tom Reggie was wiping off beads of sweat on his forehead, overseeing the laborers who were pushing the cruise liner into the sea. He could finally feel relieved. Right at this moment, his mobile suddenly rang.

“Yup. What's up?”

“Boss, Mr. Tang is in our casino and just won 1 billion. What instructions do you have regarding this?”

Tom Reggie had a change on his expression and fell into silence.

He didn't tell Tang Xiu and Mo Awen that the Lao Bay Resort was one of his businesses, of which he owned 51% of the shares. Hence, Tang Xiu shouldn't be intentionally winning money in his casino.

Furthermore, he was very curious about Tang Xiu's true identity. He believed that his identity was by no means simple for him be able to take Mo Awen as his subordinate. He knew perfectly well who Mo Awen was. Compared to him, Mo Awen was a character who was much more terrifying. There was once a time when their strength was equal; that was when they first met each other. But Mo Awen got more powerful a few years later, to the extent that he wouldn't hesitate to yield and give up.

Not to mention that the moment he saw Tang Xiu and the others, he found something that made him faintly restless and disturbed. There was another big guy beside Mo Awen who looked like Mo Awen, with a dense aura exuding from his body, which made him feel apprehensive secretly.

He could tell that the man was also a formidable individual.

He didn't care about the money. What he cared about was Mo Awen's friendship as well as Tang Xiu's identity.

For half a minute, Tom Reggie was lost in his reverie, before he slowly said, "Give him the money. If he still wants to keep playing in the casino, let him."

“But Boss, how would we explain this to the others?” asked Jasmine with knitted brows.

“I’ll inform them that this 1 billion is on me,” said Tom Reggie heavily.

Jasmine was startled inside as a shocked expression burst out from her eyes. She never thought that her Boss would make such a decision.

What identity did Tang Xiu possess to even make her boss spare no effort to send 1 billion?

“Got it, Boss!”

Jasmine replied and then went back to the VIP room. The smile on her face turned thicker as she spoke to Tang Xiu in a more respectful manner, “Mr. Tang, our Boss has told me that if you still want to keep playing in the casino, you can enjoy yourself there to your heart’s content. Also, please give me your account number, I’ll have someone transfer 1 billion dollars to your account later.”

“What?”

Shocked, Tagger was shaken, looking at Tang Xiu in disbelief along with fear inside. Never did he ever thought that the Big Boss would actually give the money to the other party, more so in such a submissive manner... Who was this young man in the end? Did he

have a terrifying identity and background?

“Look for Mo Awen and transfer the money to his account later! But I’m not playing in the casino anymore. Also, please convey my message to Tom Reggie: He’s not bad.”

“Alright!” Jasmine nodded and smiled. Suddenly, her expression changed and spoke softly, “Mr. Tang, since you like gambling, why don’t you stay and watch the unrestrained gambling later? It seems one of them is someone from your country.”

Unrestrained gambling?

Recalling what Geezer Fatty Li had said before, Tang Xiu suddenly showed a bit of interest. Meanwhile, Fatty Li himself had his curiosity toward Tang Xiu’s identity soared to the extreme. Were he not in front of Jasmine and Tagger, he would have inquired about it again. At this moment, when he heard Jasmine speaking about the unrestrained gambling, his eyes turned bright and quickly said, “Brother Tang, an event such as this unrestrained gambling is a rare show to behold. Especially with that guy from Qingcheng Mountain participating in this, which is a rarer occurrence. So, shall we take a look at it?”

After pondering for a bit, Tang Xiu then nodded and said, “Let’s have a look then!”

Jasmine smiled, “There’s still half an hour left before the unrestrained gambling begins. Would the two of you want to have a meal first? If so, I’ll let the kitchen arrange it.”



Recalling that he had a dinner appointment with Tom Reggie tonight, Tang Xiu immediately shook his head, “No, thanks. It’s just half an hour, I’ll just accompany Fatty Li playing down there.”

“Fine, then!” said Jasmine. “When the gamble is about to begin, I will send someone to fetch and guide you to the VIP lounge.”

As Jasmine and Tagger left, Fatty Li immediately stared at Tang Xiu with an unusually serious expression as he asked solemnly, “Brother Tang, this old fatty brother of yours has been sincere with you, yet you’re still holding back? Tell me, who are you exactly? Why did the Big Boss of this Lao Bay Resort seem to fear you?”

“Like I said to you, the owner of this Lao Bay Resort is a life-and-death friend of my subordinate,” said Tang Xiu.

Shaking his head, Fatty Li said, “People who would give hundreds of millions to their friends in present society are only a few, I think.”

Tang Xiu couldn’t help laughing, “Well, if you’re really sincere to your friend, will you give him 1 billion?”

“But of course!” Fatty Li replied without hesitation.

Shortly after, he dazed for a moment and then let out a wry and bitter smile, saying, “Bah, forget it. Since you don’t wanna say it,

then I'll give up. In any case, I thought you were just a young fellow countryman on vacation when I got acquainted with you the first time. So our revolutionary friendship is very pure. Very, very pure."

"It is indeed a pure one. However, I seem to recall that someone wanted to compete with me in the casino back then. Besides, you wouldn't be giving up so easily, would you, Fatty Li? Of course, someone like you who's frank and straightforward would freely admit defeat if you really lost, right?" said Tang Xiu with a faint smile.

## Chapter 293: Provocation

---

“Brat, you know I can’t win 1 billion in this casino, but you still deliberately set me up. Holy mother, I admit I lost. I don’t even have your deterrent. If I were to win 1 billion and take it, my dead body would probably be thrown into the sea to feed the sharks tonight,” rolling his eyes, Fatty Li snapped with a self-deprecating smile.

Tang Xiu didn’t doubt what Fatty Li just said. He knew perfectly well about the characters of these casino owners. Be it on Earth or in the Immortal World, those who ran gambling establishments were used to do some evil matters, where killing people and plundering their money and wealth was common.

“Alright, let’s get down, I’ll accompany you to play.”

As they walked to the hall downstairs, many eyes instantly landed on Tang Xiu. Though many of them were envious and jealous of him for winning 1 billion, the number of people who were full of pity and sympathy were even more.

It was evident that they also knew some unspoken rules of the casino!

Ignoring them, Tang Xiu walked alongside Fatty Old Li as he smiled and asked, “What are you gonna play? I still have 990,000 chips left, so I’ll play with you.”

“I can play anything,” Fatty Li smiled. “Though I can play any

game, I can't play too well in any of them."

After half an hour, Fatty Li lost all his 1 million chips and most of the 990 thousand chips on Tang Xiu were also spent. After having converted the remaining chips into 300-400 thousand dollars, he received a leather suitcase from the casino.

"Hello Sirs, our vice president ordered me to guide you to the VIP lounge on the second floor," a handsome foreigner young man with a well-proportioned physique approached Tang Xiu and Fatty Li and spoke respectfully to them.

"Please lead the way!"

After two minutes, they arrived at a spacious VIP lounge on the second floor. Dozens of people were already there at this time, standing on both sides of the railing outside the hall, watching the gambling table inside with four people, one man standing behind each one of them.

Of the four were two men around their 30s, a 50-year-old man and a beautiful blonde with blue eyes whose age couldn't be discerned.

Fatty Li gently touched Tang Xiu's arm and whispered, "Do you see that flat head—monkey-like guy? He's Wang Rui from Qingcheng Mountain. He turns 34 this year and has a wealth of tens of billions."

Tang Xiu's sight landed on Wang Rui for a while before glancing at the other two, finally fixating on that blonde belle. He slightly pursed his brows and had his vigilance slightly aroused, since he could keenly perceive a peculiar aura exuding from the woman. It was a type of aura which neither Daoist or immortal cultivators could have, but rather, the aura of the Whitewing clan members in the Immortal World.

‘She’s rather quite powerful, and I’m afraid the current me is not her opponent.’

Realizing that the beautiful belle seemed aware of him looking at her, Tang Xiu retracted his gaze back immediately and was secretly startled inside.

Right at this time, the game just begun. Each one of them had a stack of chips in front of them while the one who acted as the dealer was a foreign middle-aged man.

“They are playing blackjack?” raising his brows, Tang Xiu whispered.

Fatty Old Li nodded, “Yes, it’s blackjack. I don’t like Wang Rui, but I hope he can win since his opponent is a Japanese. At least he can give honor and glory to our country and fiercely smash the arrogance of this Japanese.”

Though Tang Xiu also had no favorable impression toward the Japanese, he was also disinclined to care about his fellow countryman. The one who piqued his attention was that blonde

belle.

The gambling house started.

Wang Rui didn't bet many chips at the start. It was exactly because of this that the Japanese man became very arrogant as he taunted and mocked Wang Rui; even the foreigner old man also backed out. Yet the belle still held her smiling face regardless of her big or small cards, as if she belittled it. She even acted like Wang Rui and started betting small.

Finally, after a dozen rounds, Wang Rui suddenly increased his bet, placing tens of millions chips. Though the Japanese man was loudly clamoring, but as a shrewd and astute man, he didn't raise the bet and chose to give up. The blond belle herself also chose the same.

However, the foreigner old man pushed tens of millions of chips with disdain and followed the call. In the end, it Wang Rui's win.

Twenty minutes later, the game had progressed to a more intense stage. Wang Rui constantly whispered with the middle-aged foreigner behind him. The Japanese man also refused to be outdone as he followed the call of the foreigner old man. In stark contrast was that blonde belle who gave up early.

"Brother Tang, the chips on the table just exceeded 500 million. Who amongst them can win this game according to you?" Fatty Old Li softly touched Tang Xiu and whispered.

“That Japanese man,” said Tang Xiu slowly.

“Definitely...”

A middle-aged man beside Tang Xiu and Fatty Old Li, who heard their conversation, smirked at the duo.

Tang Xiu glanced at him before his eyes went back to the gambling table. He just observed the three people’s cards with his spiritual sense and found that the Japanese man was the one who held the biggest cards. Unless Wang Rui did something, this game was his loss.

However, outside of everyone’s expectations, Wang Rui suddenly gave up. Finally, the foreigner old man also lost to the Japanese man.

“Hahaha... Wang Rui, you’ve lost most of your chips. If you keep going like this, it won’t be long before you leave the casino with your ass naked,” the Japanese man taunted and mocked Wang Rui arrogantly.

Wang Rui only let out a cold smile and didn’t respond.

The next game began. Wang Rui straightly pushed all of his chips and lightly said, “I have 200 million left here! If I lose again this time, it means my skill is worse than yours. Begin!”

“I’m in!”

After looking at his cards, the Japanese man immediately smiled and pushed 200 million chips, followed by the foreigner old man. The belle also pushed 200 million chips.

The game ended with Wang Rui's win. Not only did he win back the 300 million he had lost before, he even won more than 300 million.

“Baka! Continue!” The Japanese man angrily fumed.

The next game started again. Wang Rui straightly pushed 400 million and said lightly, “Each of you doesn't have enough chips on the table. Still, I want to bet my 400 million with you. If any of you win, you can have these 400 million chips. But if you lose, unless you exchange for more chips, this gambling house will be concluded.”

The belle raised her brows as she suddenly turned her gaze to Tang Xiu, who was also looking at her. She immediately nodded to Tang Xiu before getting up and saying, “I give up, you can continue playing.”

“I'm in!” (“I'm in!”)

The Japanese man and the foreigner old man spoke at the same time.

The result of the game was a win for Wang Rui yet again. He



completely swept the two men's chips clean. When Wang Rui mocked the Japanese man to his heart's content, the belle came before Tang Xiu. Under everyone gazes, she didn't speak and only looked at Tang Xiu.

"Is there something, beautiful lady?" asked Tang Xiu while letting out a tranquil and calm smile.

The belle smiled softly, "I like talented young men, especially a powerful one such as you. If you don't mind, how about playing with me?"

Tang Xiu shook his head, "Small gambling is an enjoyment, but a big one will only harm you. I don't like gambling, so I can't accompany you."

The belle laughed, "Since you don't want a big gamble, shall we find a quiet place and have a few cups together? To be honest, I'm curious about you."

Tang Xiu fell silent for a moment and then slowly said, "It's the same for me too. Anyways, I will have a private party myself. You can join me if you don't mind."

"OK!"

The belle gave a gesture and said, "I'll go back and change my clothes first. Tell me where you're staying, I'll find you later."

“Alright!”

Telling her the villa’s number where he was staying, Tang Xiu then spoke to the Fatty Old Li, “Let’s go.”

Looking at the departing belle’s back, Fatty Old Li said in astonishment, “Brother Tang, do you know that rich woman?”

“Nope!” Tang Xiu shook his head.

A strange look covered Fatty Old Li’s face as he said, “Brother Tang, you’re amazing. Not only is your good luck heaven-defying, even such a rich pretty belle throws herself to you. But alas, how come this Fatty Old Li’s turn didn’t come to get such a good thing? Damn! God is really unfair!”

Tang Xiu laughed, “Do you think that woman is good? How about I send her to your room later?”

“No, don’t! A gentleman never snatches anything a man’s fond of. You keep that woman and have fun with her!” Fatty Old Li waved his hand repeatedly before he continued in a low voice, “Actually, I’m not by myself in this trip to Saipan. My wife and my daughter are also with me. So, you know...”

Tang Xiu couldn’t help bursting into laughter. He nodded and said, “If so, bring big sis-in-law and niece to drink a few cups at my place this evening.”

“Yeah!” Fatty Old Li nodded with a smile.

“It’s a small world, eh. I didn’t expect to bump into you, Boss Li. It’s really my good luck!” Wang Rui, who had also discovered Fatty Old Li at this time, approached and greeted all smiling after he exchanged his chips with the casino staff and accepted his money.

Rolling his eyes at him, Fatty Old Li snorted, “Don’t give me such entrained words, kiddo! You just won big tonight, shouldn’t you be the one to treat me?”

Wang Rui laughed, “No probs. Let’s have the Seven Goddesses Dance later. I promise to let you play and enjoy yourself to the full tonight.”

Fatty Old Li replied in a mocking tone, “Fuck that. Look at my body, can’t you see that I can’t play? Come here, I’ll introduce you to my Little Bro I just met when I had a Thai Massage today. He’s surnamed Tang, Tang Xiu.”

A brilliant light flashed in Wang Rui’s eyes. He didn’t show any contempt nor belittlement just because he didn’t know Tang Xiu’s identity as he said with a smile, “Brother Tang, it’s my pleasure to meet you! Fatty Old Li may have a careless and blunt personality, though that mouth of his usually speaks nonsensical things, yet he has keen eyes for people! So I’m sure you, Little Brother, must also be someone excellent.”

“Brother Wang also has a rather skillful means. That ‘replacing the original with a fake’ technique of yours is superb and has

reached perfection. Had I not witnessed it myself, I wouldn't have expected that the trusted adviser at your side was but only a guise. The real amazing person turns out to be you," said Tang Xiu with a smile.

Wang Rui's complexion changed. He quickly turned and glanced around. Finding that although there were many people around observing, nobody was actually able to hear Tang Xiu's words.

"Is Brother Tang also good in gambling?"

## Chapter 294: Giving Directions

---

“I rarely play, though. I’m not interested in the gambling itself,” said Tang Xiu whilst shaking his head.

Wang Rui smiled, “Actually, it’s the same for me. I’m not into gambling myself, but I like the challenge and love to feel the adrenaline rush. I play a lot of things that challenge my limits; I’d be going nuts if I had no means to solve it. You know what? That Japanese man is kinda timid.”

Coward?

Inside, Tang Xiu begged to differ. Some of the Japanese were indeed timid and cowards. Yet, there were also some of them whose dispositions were extreme and bold. Though Tang Xiu disliked this nation and its people, yet he clearly knew that even despicable ethnic groups and nations would also possess some good points and traits.

It seemed like... this man undertook such actions to have a strong and unyielding awareness!

It was obvious that Geezer Fatty Li knew this Wang Rui a lot since he quickly spoke, “Wang Rui, don’t contaminate Brother Tang with your bad influence. He’s a good little brother and not like you, who likes to play those extreme challenges; he won’t seek the feeling of adrenaline rush for no reason either.”

Wang Rui shrugged his shoulders as he replied with a smile,

“Since Fatty Li cares a lot about Brother Tang, then forget it. I thought I just bumped into someone interesting. An expert is really lonely!”

Tang Xiu’s expression flickered. Watching at Wang Rui’s posture that indicated he was about to leave, he said, “If you want to find more adrenaline rush actions, I’ll give you a suggestion.”

Wang Rui was stunned, yet there was contempt flashing in his eyes. Still, he casually asked, “What do you suggest?”

“Two men under me are martial arts experts who have gone through many fights with other masters. With your strength, are they sufficient to accompany you playing? Let’s have an agreement first. You need stimulation and the rush of adrenalin. So don’t bear a grudge against me if you’re devastated by them.”

Wang Rui couldn’t help laughing, “Would I be devastated? Those who can devastate me have yet to be born! Great. Since you’re Geezer Fatty Li’s little brother, I’ll accompany your two men to play!”

Tang Xiu told him the villa number he was staying and then said, “We’ll be waiting outside my villa 12 o’clock tonight.”

"OK!"

Giving an OK gesture, Wang Rui then left leisurely.

After Wang Rui turned around and left, Tang Xiu keenly noted that four inconspicuous-looking men nearby, with exceptionally calm and steady paces, quietly followed him along the way. The four men seemed not disturbed and instead, seemed to maintain their composure, protecting him quietly.

Geezer Fatty Li looked at him and asked in astonishment, “Brother Tang, why did you make this agreement with him? As far as I know, Wang Rui is a martial arts expert, and it seems that his kung fu is also good. There’s a powerful and formidable individual in the Northwest called Yang Xianyu, and I heard he has reached the realm of martial arts grandmaster. Yet, rumors said that he and Wang Rui had once compared notes and Wang Rui didn’t lose.”

Yang Xianyu?

Surprise flashed in Tang Xiu’s eyes. He met Yang Xianyu from the Northwest in the Soaring Dragon Martial School. He also met him at Star City Chinese Medical Hospital to cure his wife’s strange illness.

However, he secretly scoffed inside. With Yang Xianyu’s kung fu, how could he be compared to Wang Rui? This man may look sluggish, sloppy and uncoordinated, but his pace was steady with a measured distance for each step. Even during walking, his posture automatically formed a defensive stance. Such performance explained that he experienced numerous extremely dangerous situations. Those who could display such a state were formidable experts.

Hence, Yang Xianyu was not Wang Rui's opponent.

Perhaps, even if there were three to five Yang Xianyus, they were not necessarily Wang Rui's match.

Ten minutes later, Tang Xiu and Geezer Fatty Li parted ways. As he left the casino, he saw a sightseeing car and rode it back to his villa. There, he saw Mo Awen sitting cross-legged on the balcony of the second floor of the villa, facing the ocean and immersing himself in cultivation silently. He secretly nodded.

Diligence! It was the most important attitude one must have as a immortal cultivator.

Cultivating oneself toward immortality was like a boat sailing against the waves and currents. Were one unable to move forward, one would inevitably be left behind. If Mo Awen could persevere and constantly improve his strength, someday in the future he would perhaps really be able to reach the realm of immortals. To traverse through the void and ascend to the Immortal World.

“You're back, Boss!”

With his keen hearing, Mo Awen could hear Tang Xiu's footsteps as he immediately stood after opening his eyes, speaking respectfully.

Waving his hand, Tang Xiu asked, “Has Awu come back yet?”



Forcing out a wry smile, Mo Awen replied, “Every time he goes to relax, he won’t finish it before spending several hours. Unless something dangerous occurs.”

“Let’s forget him then. Anyways, the arranged banquet this evening by Tom Reggie is about to begin. Let’s wait for dinner and have a chat. I may have to leave earlier, though. There are some matters to attend to.”

Surprised, Mo Awen asked, “Is there anything you wanna do, Boss? Do you need me to take care of it?”

Tang Xiu shook his head, “You just need to eat and drink well at tonight’s banquet so you can keep your spirit high. However, I’ve found a good opponent for you at midnight to fight. I hope you can win against him.”

“Is the man an enemy?” inquired Mo Awen.

“No, he’s not an enemy. He’s just a proud and conceited guy. You don’t have to slay him, though. Just teach him a lesson to make him realize the truth, that there’s another sky above and there will always be someone else who is better than him.”

“I assure you that I’ll accomplish the task.”

Mo Awen’s spirit aroused as he replied in a deep tone.

“You don’t need to take this contest as an assignment, though.

The man didn't let out the slightest clue about his strength, so you can regard him as your opponent in a chess game. It will be a good sharpening stone to strengthen your martial path. I believe that, if you can win against him, you will accumulate a lot of experience from actual combat against powerful experts."

"But my experience is rich enough," said Mo Awen confidently.

Tang Xiu shook his head, "Awen, you may have very rich combat experience and had once gone through numerous life-and-death situations and eventually survived. Yet, this is not the same. Back then, what you have gone through were the baptism of bullets and the easy killings of enemies with weak combat strength, whereas you have little experience fighting powerful experts who possess a strength almost equal to yours, am I right?"

Mo Awen fell into deep thought for a while before he nodded and said, "You're right, Boss. Ever since my strength started to progress by leaps and bounds seven or eight years ago, I rarely encountered equals. Hence, my strength has been slowly progressing since then. But after Elder Ji taught me an immortal cultivation technique, the True Qi in my body has gone through a qualitative change, and it's all been transformed into True Essence. Thus, I felt that my strength once again increased immensely and became several-fold stronger than before. Furthermore, I haven't encountered any opponents at my level."

"Battle against formidable experts always have moments where they put their lives on the stake. It will arouse their potentials, thus, they can advance and progress afterward. It's not in my intention to see you put your life on the stake, but I hope you can

comprehend its essence in the fights between powerful experts through combats,” said Tang Xiu

“I understand your meaning and intention, Boss,” said Mo Awen.

Patting his shoulder, Tang Xiu then turned around, looking through the darkness outside toward the dark sky. A smile was outlined on his mouth yet chilling coldness filled the air.

No pain, no gain. One cannot achieve glory and wealth without going through trials and tribulations.

Cultivating oneself and treading the path to immortality had always been thorny and rough. If one wanted to go further, one had to become stronger. And it was inevitable for one to fight against the Heaven, the Earth and all walks of life. Back then in the Immortal World, which powerful expert who rose above others and seized the Supreme throne didn't step on the bodies of countless people?

The words he had just said to Mo Awen, wasn't it also the words he said to himself? He had tasted the feeling of having fallen to the Earth from the sky, enduring the pain of losing his strength. Someday in the future, he would return to the Immortal World to seek his mortal enemies, stepping on their dead bodies and completing his journey to immortality to step into the portal of the God World.

‘All of you should keep yourselves well to wait for me. Just wash your necks clean and wait for my return to the Immortal World.’

Tang Xiu gripped his fists tightly as green veins protrude on his arms. His killing intent made Mo Awen shiver inside as he staggered backward for half a step unconsciously.

Suddenly, Tang Xiu turned around and looked at the apprehensive-looking Mo Awen. He pointed at the vast and endless ocean and said in a heavy tone, "Tell me, what do you see there?"

Mo Awen thought for a while and said, "It's the sea."

"What else?" asked Tang Xiu.

Is there anything else?

Frowning, a look of being in hard and deep thought flashed in Mo Awen's eyes. Eventually, he shook his head, "Except for the sea and the night, I can't see anything else, Boss."

"Awen, do you know why I like you?" asked Tang Xiu lightly.

"Why?" asked Mo Awen back as his look changed.

"Because you're intelligent and astute. You know that oftentimes, wisdom and intelligence are more fearsome than combat strength. I asked Gu Xiaoxue about you, and she told me a lot," said Tang Xiu.

“Boss, I don’t get what you mean,” said Mo Awen.

“I want to tell you that the path of cultivation is not to blindly pursue power, but also to improve your attitude, your inner self. You and Awu possess strong willpower, but you have yet to really comprehend anything pertaining to what a true cultivator is. I have encountered a lot of people, and they were blindly pursuing strength and neglecting to nurture their state of mind, resulting in them failing to cross their tribulations since they couldn’t overcome their mental demons. In the end, they ended up dying and vanished,” said Tang Xiu faintly.

Mo Awen inquire further, “What is this crossing tribulation you just said, Boss? Is it like in the Xianxia novels?”

“There are some differences, but only a little,” said Tang Xiu with a nod.

Once again, Mo Awen asked, “Then, how should we practice our state of mind at the same time, Boss?”

Tang Xiu shook his head, “Cultivating your mental state is to pay attention to your senses. I’ll use the simplest example to explain it to you. For instance, the question I just asked you about what you can perceive when you see outside. You said that you only see the sea and the night sky. Do you know what I saw there?”

Puzzled, Mo Awen asked again, “Then, what did you see, Boss?”

“I saw a vastness and broadness, the boundlessness mixed within; sensed the meaning of the boundless ocean’s existence; and finally, I saw the beauty and mysteries of the curtain of night in the vault of heaven,” said Tang Xiu in a deep tone.

Astute and intelligent as he was, Mo Awen instantly comprehend the meaning behind Tang Xiu’s words, “Boss, your meaning is to explore and learn as well as to think and pursue knowledge?”

## Chapter 295: [Viviani](#)

---

Mo Awen's perception satisfied Tang Xiu, feeling that what he had just said was worth it. Finally, he concluded, "Describing it as exploration and learning as well as thinking about ideas and pursuing knowledge is also right. But to cultivators, there is a more comprehensive summary. Perceiving the inclusiveness of myriads of lives between the Heaven and Earth, which carried along profound virtues along the path, and transforming one's state of mind."

Hearing these words, it as if a bright beacon light pointed the right direction as it lingering inside Mo Awen's sea of mind and heart.

A world of flowers and trees where one's heart and soul learned to feel.

Moving with the feelings, learning by the heart.

As Mo Awen felt all this, his heart suddenly palpitated, causing him to sit cross-legged on the balcony and slowly close his eyes.

For a moment Tang Xiu was dazed, as a strange expression then was revealed on his face. He hadn't expected that his words would actually touch and stir Mo Awen's heart. With his extremely keen senses, Tang Xiu could perceive that some Heaven and Earth spiritual qi began to drift and gather toward Mo Awen. His expression immediately turned happy as he quietly left the balcony.

Half an hour later, Mo Awen, who looked highly spirited and vigorous, came along with Tom Reggie who looked surprised. Tang Xiu gestured him to keep silent as the three then walked to the first floor's hall. Afterward, Tang Xiu said with a smile, "Awen can't be disturbed for the time being. By the way, how come the two of you came together?"

Forcing out a wry smile, Tom Reggie replied, "Mr. Tang, I just learned that Mo Awu is Awen's biological brother. These brothers are really amazing!"

"You're referring to... their combat strength?" asked Tang Xiu, surprised.

Whilst shaking his head, Tom Reggie replied, "Combat force? I wouldn't be this shocked if it was only this. What I'm talking about is his strength as a man. Three long hours. He was in the room for three hours and made four women unable to crawl out from the bed. I've seen a bunch of men who are powerful in this aspect, yet nobody is stronger than him."

Intense envy covered his face as he talked.

Tang Xiu's lips twitched violently a few times as he flung his face straightly to the side. He had never thought that Mo Awu turned out to be a sturdy, valiant stud. Tang Xiu could consider himself as being not bad in this aspect. But compared to Mo Awu, was he better? He was simply... a jet fighter in the shell of a man.



“Well, come and sit down. Let’s chat.”

Shifting the topic, Tang Xiu motioned the two to sit down.

“Boss, Awen, he...” inquired Mo Awu.

Tang Xiu lifted his hand to interrupt him and said with a slight smile, “He’s good; better than he was before. Don’t worry, he’ll come down after a while.”

“En!”

Mo Awu knew Tang Xiu wouldn’t deceive him. Hence, he nodded and no longer asked.

Looking at Tom Reggie, Tang Xiu said with a smile, “Anyways, I have some friends attending tonight’s banquet, is that fine with you?”

“No probs. Your friends are also my friends. Besides, I only have a few friends anyway,” said Tom Reggie with a smile.

An inexplicable feeling surged inside Tang Xiu’s heart when he looked at him.

Friends?

It was because of his friends that he had to suffer many pains. Though the current him seemed to have a lot of friends, the ones who were really sincere were but only a few. Even he himself was still keeping his vigilance toward them. It was unlikely he would ditch his friends, but making friends was something he was very careful towards.

People said that one should refrain from hurting others, yet one must guard against those trying to hurt them.

He himself was indeed considered as someone who had once been bitten by a snake and became a person who feared a good rope ten years afterward.

For instance, was Fatty Li whom he just got acquainted with today. The man had a straightforward and forthright personality, a character he liked. Yet, there's no knowing what is in a man's heart. Who could guarantee that Fatty Li wasn't concealing malice inside? Tang Xiu believed the saying that there had never been such a thing called as reliable in this world, for there was only the weight of interests and benefits which could transform trust unreliable.

He had once read such a post on the internet. There was a pair of twin brothers. The eldest brother was honest and considerate, looking after his younger brother dearly and wholeheartedly. But then, in his drunken time, he spat out the truth in his post: If anyone gives me 100 million to make me get rid of my younger brother, I'll be sure to stab my him... I will think over and consider it if anyone gives me 1 billion to make me sell out my brother... Whoever gives me 10 billion to make me sell my brother, I'll take

the money and scatter them around.

While betrayal itself was not by means impossible, yet the price was far too high.

Just like Du Changze and Qi Chengshan in Hong Kong. The two had been friends for decades, either in business cooperation or personal friendship they were well-known as best buddies, yet, after Du Changze paid three billion in compensation, he took advantage from Qi Chengshan by selling the information only to alleviate some of his loss.

Looking at Tang Xiu who fell into a daze, Tom Reggie frowned and asked, “Mr. Tang, is there anything wrong with my words?”

Getting back to his senses, Tang Xiu shook his head and smiled, “It’s fine. Sometimes, having a lot of friends is rather meddlesome. The world is big and there are many means to make friends. So, prudently making friends is a must.”

Tom Reggie clapped, “Be cautious in making friends... Mr. Tang is a young man, yet you can understand thoroughly about the nature of worldly wisdom. Well, it’s not bad.”

Tang Xiu smiled and no spoke longer.

Shortly after, dozens of Lao Bay Resort’s staff came with sumptuous dishes and fine wines. Since the Big Boss here—Tom Reggie would like to entertain his friends, they were instructed to

bring the best wines and dishes from the resort's collections.

During their busy bustle, Tang Xiu and Tom Reggie chatted in the first floor's hall. As for Mo Awu who had just finished a 'marathon', he was smiling ear to ear with a red face as he ran upstairs to sleep.

Quickly, Fatty Li arrived, bringing along his wife and daughter. What surprised Tang Xiu was that his wife looked young, appearing in her 40s, while his daughter was unexpectedly a year younger than Tang Xiu.

“Uncle Tang.”

Li Wenwen called out, albeit looking slightly reluctant.

She was quite angry and felt awkward for being forced by her father to address a young man who was as young as herself as “uncle”. Were they related by blood and seniority in generation existed between them, she actually wouldn't mind. Yet, prior to this, she and Tang Xiu were but only strangers. They were not related at all. Hence, addressing him as such was really depressing for her.

Tang Xiu himself knew very well about the ideas of the old traditional customs. Watching Li Wenwen, who looked reluctant, he shook his head and smiled, “You don't need to care about the address. Let Wenwen call me Tang Xiu or Brother Tang. It's fine either way. Besides, we are living in a new era, Fatty Li, we don't need to use these old traditions to bind the youngsters. Each idea is

fine as it is!”

Fatty Li’s wife, a gentle and experienced woman halfway to her middle-age, also felt that it was rather inappropriate for her daughter to address a young man as “uncle”. Thus, she said, “Indeed, youngsters can get along with each other.”

Fatty Li stared blankly and chuckled to himself, saying, “Since Brother Tang said so, I’ll become a joke if I insist. Have it your way, then.”

Tang Xiu smiled and pointed to Tom Reggie, “He’s Tom Reggie, the friend of my man and a local boss here.”

Letting out a smile, Tom Reggie shook hands with Fatty Li and laughed, “Mr. Li, I welcome your family to Saipan. Since Mr. Tang has introduced you, no matter how long you’re staying and whatever services and needs you wish to have, you can freely ask the resort’s staff. I will also inform the resort to exempt you from the expenses.”

“Exempted from expenses?” Fatty Li stared blankly.

Prior to this, the vice president of the resort—Ai Jasmine had given him a discount, and it was a big surprise to him. He didn’t expect that he would even be exempted from expenses.

Could he be... the big boss here?

Fatty Li glanced at Tang Xiu and gently blinked his eyes.

“Tom Reggie is Jasmine’s Boss,” said Tang Xiu.

In an instant, Fatty Li understood. It seemed that this Tom Reggie was really the Boss of this Lao Bay Resort. After all, the vice president of Lao Bay Resort was Ai Jasmine, and her boss was Tom Reggie. Hence, he could clearly realize right away that this identity was not mistaken.

“Thank you! Please contact me at once when you visit our country. I’ll be sure to put everything aside to accompany you there,” said Fatty Li with a smile.

Tom Reggie nodded with a smile.

Right at this time, a beautiful young woman arrived. She was wearing a white dress and several centimeters high heels, carried a white bag in her hands, and her loose graceful hair was blonde. Her each and every movement gave off a strong and intense feminine vibe.

“Good evening. Did I come late?”

Her beautiful voice reached everyone’s ears.

Tang Xiu raised his brows with a stunned expression in his eyes. However, before he could reply, Tom Reggie, whose complexion slightly changed, strode forward to greet her, “Welcome, Ms.

Viviani. Does our Lao Bay Resort live up to your satisfaction?”

Viviani nodded and replied with a smile, “You have a great place here.”

Her single sentence made Tom Reggie smile as he nodded repeatedly, “It’s great if you feel that way.”

Tang Xiu and Fatty Li glanced at each other. They could tell from Tom Reggie’s behavior and demeanor that Viviani’s identity was unusual to even make a rich and powerful man such as him to treat her with a hint of flattery and such.

What kind of identity did she have to even make Tom Reggie treat her like that?

“Your name is Viviani?” asked Tang Xiu.

She laughed lightly, “Of course. I haven’t had the chance to learn your name, though!”

“It’s Tang Xiu. Tang for magnificence and abundance, and Xiu for learning and cultivating,” said Tang Xiu.

Viviani smiled and replied, “Tang Xiu, it’s a good name. Are you Chinese? It’s a great country. Mystical oriental ancient kingdoms with a long history and culture, which is my favorite subject to study.”

“Where are you from?” asked Tang Xiu.

“Rome!” answered Viviani with a smile.

Tang Xiu raised his brows. He had some guesses about Viviani’s origins. The Church of Rome was also known as the Holy See of Vatican. Her mysterious force should originate from the cultivation system of the Vatican. However, he had no knowledge about this system.

“Well, all roads lead to Rome. It’s a Holy Land inside countless people’s heart. A great place,” said Tang Xiu serenely.

Viviani replied with a smile, “Tang Xiu, can we find a place to chat alone? Frankly, I’m quite interested in you.”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment before he nodded, “I’m equally interested in a beautiful woman such as you. Please come with me!”

薇薇蜜 (Wei Wei Mi). I thought keeping pinyin name here is kinda awkward since the character is a westerner. There are two choices here, Vivime or Viviani, which are the closest ones. I picked Viviani here since it sounds better, albeit slightly inaccurate with the last character.



## Chapter 296: A Ridiculous Request

---

A gentle, cool breeze was blowing on the coastline. Tang Xiu folded his arms, standing there as though a sculpture. He looked at Viviani, who had taken off her shoes and was running barefoot on the beach. Viviani's exotic beauty gave him a kind of pleasant and wonderful feeling, just like the exotic beauty of a fairy maiden he once saw in the Immortal World.

“Mr. Tang, do you like the sea?”

In her fluttering white dress, Viviani's arms were moving as though in a dance, as its owner then suddenly turned and shouted loudly.

Tang Xiu shook his head and calmly replied, “People have seven emotions and six sensory pleasures, whereas the sea is a representation of the capricious state of mind. I myself am not someone who is fond of things that are beyond my control.”

Viviani came floating as her gem-like eyes gazed at Tang Xiu, asking curiously, “You can't control the sea?”

“The current me is indeed unable to do so,” said Tang Xiu.

“Then, what can you control now?” asked Viviani with a laugh.

“What I can control at present, is perhaps my own destiny,” said Tang Xiu.

“You—Chinese people, do you not think that all the things regarding life are a subject that has been foreordained by the Heaven? Why would you say that you can control your own destiny? To my knowledge thus far, there has never been one who can really control their own destinies. After all, the distinction between the standings of life; the social hierarchy and the situation and policy of a country; each and every one of them pose their own strong restrictions,” said Viviani.

Tang Xiu shook his head, “Your argument is quite justified, but it’s not entirely correct either. For example, yourself. You can go anywhere in the world whenever you wish to, and you can survive wherever you are. The very thing that binds you is your own state of mind. Nothing else.”

“Why would you say so?” asked Viviani, surprised.

“Because you’re strong enough! Powerful people are and will always be placed above all else,” said Tang Xiu.

Viviani was silent. Tang Xiu’s words stirred up her emotions. She thought Tang Xiu’s argument was reasonable since ever since she was born, her body appeared to have different changes and transformations compared to ordinary people. She couldn’t tell whether these changes were good or bad, but she was aware that she possessed stronger strength, spirit, health, learning speed, and survival abilities far more than that of an ordinary person’s.

Hence, she was recruited by a transcendental organization, from

whereupon she was trained. Thereafter, she had long since become a special existence; the only god-like existence in the entirety of Holy See. She was thereupon canonized as a saintess who was thought as unlikely to become the next Pope, yet she possessed equal standing and privileges just like the Pope.

It was because she possessed strength!

Yet, even though she directly left the Vatican when she was 14 years old and had been wandering around like a rootless duckweed ever since, still despite this, she didn't dare say that she was in control of her own destiny.

“You're an arrogant person!”

After dazing for a long period of time, Viviani looked at Tang Xiu and spoke. However, her eyes shot out an indescribable splendor in the dark night.

Tang Xiu replied with a smile, “It is not that I'm arrogant. It's because I'm strong enough. Though I can tell your body contains a force stronger than mine, but if we really fight each other, you are not my match. If I really have to use everything I got, I have at least a dozen means to kill you.”

Viviani smiled brilliantly, “Why would I fight you? It's been hard for me to find an interesting person, to begin with. So it's a given that I will get along with you well. Anyways, I heard you won 1 billion in the casino?”

“It was just an accident, and perhaps it was due to my good luck. But you yourself seemed to have lost a lot,” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

Spreading out her hands, Viviani replied, “Actually, for people like us, money is something that should be easy to get, no? One of my abilities grants me the ability to cheat in gambling. But I detest cheating since I will easily lose interest.”

Tang Xiu raised his thumbs up and praised with a sigh, “You’re far better than me. As for me, the speed I spend money is way faster than the the speed I use in making it. Hence, I’m a poor man.”

“Tee... hee... You—Chinese like modesty huh? You just said that both of us are very powerful, how about we have a casual fight? Ever since I turned 16, never once have I ever met anyone stronger than me. Even those who are very powerful in the eyes of ordinary people cannot withstand a slap from me.”

Tang Xiu himself indeed wanted to compare notes with Viviani. But when he heard that she hadn’t encountered any experts ever since she turned 16, the thought disappeared. He shook his head and said, “You have a little combat experience. Fighting you won’t have any significance at all. Forget it!”

Viviani’s brows turned crisscrossed as she said resentfully, “Tang Xiu, do you think I can’t hit you?”

For a second, Tang Xiu blankly stared, before he burst into

laughter, “Well, I gotta admit that you can indeed beat me. Is this alright with you, though? Let’s just go back and eat something inside.”

Viviani didn’t say anything. She instantly moved and appeared at Tang Xiu’s side as her pair of white slender hands slapped toward Tang Xiu.

Her speed was fast, even faster than Tang Xiu’s best speed. Just as her palm was about to slap Tang Xiu’s shoulder, Tang Xiu quickly dodged and evaded it.

“Haia...”

Shouting delicately, Viviani’s body suddenly shot up high for about seven to eight meters’ mid-air. Her body rotated while flapping her arms down.

Tang Xiu knitted his brows. He found that Viviani was simply clueless about how to fight. Though she was extremely fast, she revealed many flaws he could exploit at any time.

“Move back!”

Tang Xiu’s toe forcefully tossed the ground and evaded Viviani’s whipping palms in an instant. His body appeared at her side as his hands moved lightning fast, grabbing her supple and slender waist in an instant. As his wrist raised and moved, he instantly caught her in his arms.

“Ah...”

Losing her balance, Viviani could feel warmth coming from Tang Xiu's hands as well as felt his thick, strong chest as Tang Xiu pulled her into his embrace.

“Do you get it now? Your speed and strength are better than mine. But you know nothing about combat skills. I can easily defeat you if I wish to. Hence, comparing notes between us is useless. If you wanna see what a combat scene looks like, you can see it later since there will be a fight tonight,” said Tang Xiu whilst smiling.

Viviani's hands were hooked on the back of Tang Xiu's neck. Her fair white face blushed as the brilliant splendor of her eyes turned more intense. Just as Tang Xiu finished talking, her arms, which were hooked on the back of Tang Xiu's neck, suddenly exerted a pulling force, causing her sensual red lips to be pasted directly on Tang Xiu's mouth.

"Ugh..."

Tang Xiu's eyes turned saucer and dazed for a short while. He had calculated everything, but he hadn't predicted that Viviani would unexpectedly take the initiative to kiss him; her speed didn't allow him to avoid it.

“STOP IT!”

He directly put her down and broke out from her arms while being at a loss whether he had to feel amused or embarrassed.

Viviani pursed up her lips and then stretched out her pink-colored tongue to lick them as if tasting the aftertaste of the kiss just now. She then giggled and said, “Our kiss was just so-so. It’s like those ordinary lovers’ acts on TV. Had it been real lovers, the kiss would have been a French kiss, no? Anyways, I feel good toward very few men since I was small until I grew up, so I never knew what a French kiss felt like. How about you let me try it?”

What a ridiculous request!

Never once had Tang Xiu ever heard such an absurd, ridiculous request. Viviani was still a woman regardless. From her behavior, it was evident that she was definitely a woman who had few experiences in human affairs.

“Viviane, you may have not experienced it, but it doesn’t mean you have never seen people do it, no? Those shown on TV series are all closely related to reality. Thus, you should realize that only people who are mutually in love can kiss each other. Otherwise, it means that you’re behaving indecently. Do you want to be an immoral woman and become an object of mockery by others?” In order to stop her ridiculousness, Tang Xiu spoke quickly.

Viviani was stunned and in a daze. Immediately after, she laughed back and forth, even finally clutching her stomach. She pointed at Tang Xiu as she said with a smile, “Pfft... I never

thought... I really have never thought that you—Mr. Tang would actually be this interesting. Do you really think I'm just a child who knows nothing? Pfft... Hahaha... to be frank, I was just teasing you!"

Feeling secretly relieved, Tang Xiu laughed, "I'm relieved since you were just teasing me. Anyways, let's go eat something and drink a good wine inside."

Viviani ran to the side to grab her high heels and carried it by hand. She then followed Tang Xiu walking back to the villa. However, her mouth didn't stay idle, "May I ask something, Mr. Tang?"

"What do you wanna ask?"

"Do you have a girlfriend? Or... are you married?"

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment before he replied, "It seems like it's a no and yes. Alas, feelings and sentiments are complicated. It's kinda unclear to speak it out in a short sentence, though."

Surprised and astonished, Viviani replied, "So to say, you can be counted as having been taken and yet you're also a free man, right? Then let's employ a more practical action here. You got problems with your girlfriend, no? You're lucky I chose to eat some losses to try to be your girlfriend. After all, you are one of the extremely few men I don't dislike."



Tang Xiu waved his hand, “No need, thanks. Maybe I’ll have one immediately anyway.”

Viviani snapped humorlessly, “Don’t tell me that I’m not as good a woman as her? Why do I feel you seem to be excluding me?”

“It’s not like I’m repeling you. It’s merely because I don’t plant to be burdened with affections. Got it?” said Tang Xiu

“No, I don’t get it!” replied Viviani.

After pondering for a moment, Tang Xiu said, “Let me say it this way! The affections between a man and a woman are precisely a burden, and I hate to have this kind of burden. This is the reason why I’m unlikely to find a girlfriend. In the case that I feel like having descendants to carry on my ancestral line, then I’ll just casually try to find a woman to marry. I only need her to bear my child. There’s no need to think and talk about affections whatsoever.”

Marveling with a sigh, Viviani exclaimed, “It’s a very peculiar way of thinking you have there. You’re really strange. I just said those words to tease you because it’s also impossible for me to fall for you in our first meeting. It’s just that, I felt the necessity to entangle you; hence, I spoke about sentiments. Only, I now find you to be more and more interesting.”

Forcing out a wry smile, Tang Xiu said, “Hey, I’m not a toy. To think that you regard me as interesting, I don’t know whether I have to cry or laugh. Well, put on your shoes quickly. Let’s go eat

something.”

Complying, Viviani then suddenly said, “By the way, do you wanna know why one of the bosses here—Tom Reggie knows and respects me so much?”

## Chapter 297: The Mingled Grief and Hatred.

---

Hearing Viviani's sudden revelation, a confused look appeared on Tang Xiu's handsome face as he asked in surprise, "Why?"

"Well, I'm rich!" Viviani proudly smiled.

Struck dazed, Tang Xiu rolled his eyes immediately. He was indeed puzzled by the attitude shown by Tom Reggie toward Viviani. Now, he understood. Viviani, inside Tom Reggie's mind, was but someone with more money than sense.

"It's not only because I'm rich, though. I also saved him! I coincidentally helped him solve some troubles when he offended some people in Latin America a few years ago. Hence, he has been very respectful to ever since."

Tang Xiu understood in a flash and forced a smile, "Can't you finish talking at one go? I also think that Tom seems to treat you like a hillbilly money-bag and wants to get more profits from you!"

"Hmph!" Viviani snorted. "The Chinese call it spendthrift and foolish, no? But don't take it for granted, though. Unless I want to throw my money, nobody will get even a dime from me."

"Where did you get so much money from? Care to teach me your money-making secret?" asked Tang Xiu curiously.

Without any concern at all, Viviani said, "I got no problem

teaching you! You just need to fiercely beat those who provoke you and force them to pay, that's all. Those dark forces who kick people around and have ill-gotten wealth are holding money that shouldn't belong to them. So I pack them up fiercely and make them pay a big price."

A weird expression appeared Tang Xiu's face as his mouth twitched a few times. It was truly a miracle for Viviani to survive until now, since she had poor combat experience despite her powerful strength.

However, Tang Xiu admitted that this method was indeed a good way to make money fast. For instance, those four big shots in Hong Kong who provoked him. Wasn't the profit he'd gotten from them only a little more than 10 billion?

As he thought up to there, Tang Xiu shook his head, for he couldn't approve such a method of committing an offense and offending people.

Nowadays, thieves who stole were not that fearsome, but instead were those thieves with scheming minds that you needed to look out for. Though he was powerful, but were he to offend too many dark forces, he would have to face numerous enemies dealing with him. He may slay one or two bunches, but could he be able to do the same against 100, 200 parties?

Furthermore, there were still friends and relatives he must take into account, since troubles would descend upon those he cared if those people were to retaliate.

“Vivi, you had better not do this kind of thing again in the future. You can invest in businesses, spending money to make money, since you’re rich now. If you keep offending those dark forces and they get thoroughly angered, they might desperately take revenge on you. I’m afraid you will have to face unexpected mishaps. If by chance they retaliate on your family, you might be able to protect yourself, but will you be able to protect your loved ones?”

Viviani was stunned and dazed as her pace abruptly stopped. Her mouth opened, yet not the slightest sound came out.

Seeing such abnormal reaction from her, Tang Xiu was confused, “Hey, what happened to you?”

Viviani didn’t respond. Her eyes blanked out as though she was devoid of her soul, standing there like a statue. The reflecting moonlight on her golden hair made her look dazzling.

“Murderous aura?”

Tang Xiu had a change in his expression. The murderous aura he could feel from Viviani was not only strong, but a real one.

As Viviani eventually overcame her daze, a chilling light filled her eyes as she forced herself to look to Tang Xiu and speak with an cold-ice tone, “I finally figured out as to why my father had a sudden, unexpected car accident that claimed his life seven years ago; why the electric wire was broken and my mother was electrocuted to the death in her bathtub at home five years ago. I

finally know why the house suddenly collapsed and killed my only younger brother inside three years ago. I finally realized why uncle got conned and was ripped off from his wealth, finally forcing him to commit suicide...”

Tang Xiu was stunned before he said with disbelief on his face, “Are you suspecting all those weren’t a coincidence, but were the retaliation from someone?”

Whilst tightly gripping her fist, the murderous intent glowing in Viviani’s eyes intensified. Fury filled her eyes as she spoke, “I’m sure it was their revenge, because not even one of my family members remains—all of them had died. Even our kind neighbor—Grandma Bessie died by a stone thrown from the footbridge when she went out to the grocery.”

‘It truly is not far out from that!’ sighed Tang Xiu inside.

Quickly putting on her shoes, Viviani then turned around and ran away.

“Hey, where are you going?” asked Tang Xiu loudly.

“I will kill them! They will pay the most painful price no matter who they are!” replied Viviani loudly.

Knitting his brows, Tang Xiu wanted to remind her not to act out of emotions. Even if she wanted to find the murderer who killed her relatives, still, she had to investigate it slowly. The incidents

happened many years ago, after all. But he eventually gave up when he recalled the extent of his relationship with her.

He just only met her today. Only because they chatted a bit and a joke that ended up with a kiss, still, all those couldn't be considered of them having a close relationship whatsoever.

'I have to follow her! I too hope she can find the murderer who killed her family members and survive,' secretly sighing inside, Tang Xiu then turned around and walked into the villa.

Inside, Tom Reggie was holding a crystal cup and chatting with Old Fatty Li. Behind them was Mo Awen who had just woken up from his meditation; and it was evident that his cultivation was improved. At this time, he was carrying cakes and quickly eating them.

"Mr. Tang, where's Ms. Vivi?"

"She has an urgent matter, so she left," replied Tang Xiu, smiling lightly.

Puzzled, Tom Reggie asked, "Ms. Vivi has left? Did she return back to her villa? Or..."

"She should be returning back to her villa, but she may leave the resort soon," said Tang Xiu with a smile.

Curious, Tom Reggie asked, "You seem to know the reason why

Ms. Vivi left, Mr. Tang. Could you tell me about it?”

Tang Xiu thought about it for a moment and felt it was fine to tell Tom Reggie. After all, Vivian was Tom Reggie’s benefactor. Recalling her personality, the sudden realization that her family members died due to murder and not accident would certainly drive her into anger and affect her judgment. If Tom Reggie met and assisted Viviani on his behalf and then helped her, it would be good.

“She’s going to have her revenge! She just found that her relatives were murdered.”

Stunned, Tom Reggie nodded, “I know Ms. Vivi is very strong as I witnessed how she hit several ruthless individuals half-dead once. She should be able to get revenge for her family members easily.”

“You’re too optimistic. Though I don’t know her much, her hatred seems to be shrouding her reason, which may render her vulnerable this time,” said Tang Xiu.

Tom’s expression changed. He was fully aware how vulnerable people could be without having a clear mind. In this age, force and wisdom were equally important. If someone secretly attacked her while she was unprepared, she would easily be killed!

After thinking up to there, Tom Reggie quickly said, “Mr. Tang, I intended to accompany you in tonight’s banquet, but I’m rather worried about Viviani. So I would like to see her if you don’t mind it.”



“Alright. Go!” Tang Xiu nodded.

Tom Reggie quickly left after replying.

Looking at Mo Awen who was wolfing down and gobbling up something, Tang Xiu was rather surprised as he approached him and asked, “Why are you behaving like you’re the embodiment of a hungry devil? I saw you eating since I came back, and yet you haven’t eaten to the full till now?”

Gulping down everything, Mo Awen laughed, “Boss, I don’t know what happened. After I finished cultivating, I found my that cultivation seemed to have improved greatly and felt very hungry—so hungry I could devour a fat cow.”

Tang Xiu couldn’t bear laughing, “So, you’re much stronger than before now?”

“I should be 50% stronger. Maybe twice stronger if you give me two days more,” said Mo Awen confidently.

"Good!" Tang Xiu nodded in satisfaction.

Lao Bay Resort.

Inside one of the visitor villas, Viviani was smashing everything inside while rummaging her belongings. Though she was clueless

who the murderers behind-the-scenes were, but she firmly believed she could find them; killing them and having her revenge.

“I will kill them, whoever they are!” shouted Viviani in anger as she stuffed her things into the opened suitcase.

“Knock, knock...”

The door was knocked as Tom Reggie’s voice came through it, “Ms. Vivi, it’s Tom here. I need to talk about something with you.”

Walking to the door and opening it, she then asked with a frosty expression, “What are you here for? Anything you want to tell me?”

Wearing respectful expression, Tom Reggie replied, “I just met Mr. Tang and he told me about your matter. Ms. Vivi, you’re my benefactor, so I must repay your kindness. However, I think you ought to listen to me pertaining your endeavor to seek your mortal enemies and have your revenge.”

“Say it!” Viviani said with heaviness in her voice.

“There’s an old proverb in China that ten years are not too long a time for a gentleman to exact his revenge. At present, you don’t know who your mortal enemies are and on whom you should exact your revenge. Hence, I think what you need to do now is to use everything you have in store to find those murderers, investigate their backgrounds and then devise a plan,” said Tom Reggie.

“NO! I can wait no longer!” shouted Viviani angrily.

Sighing inside, Tom Reggie then said solemnly, “Ms. Vivi, Mr. Tang just told me that anger and hatred may have shrouded your state of mind. I somewhat didn’t believe it at first, because in my eyes you are a noble, elegant, graceful and resplendent Goddess who is full of wisdom. But now I have to believe Mr. Tang’s judgment. You have really been blinded by anger and hatred, thus will lose your rationality over things.”

## Chapter 298: Going to the Appointment

---

Viviani dazed as the furious expression on her face disappeared. She admitted that anger and hatred were indeed clouding her judgment since she was impatient to get revenge for her relatives.

Realizing that his words were rather effective, Tom Reggie spoke again quickly, “Ms. Vivi, please think about it. Revenge is a must, but it’s imperative to calm yourself down before you do so. The people who dared to kill your relatives presumably are those with unusual backgrounds. And those who have great influence are all ruthless and will resort to all means. If your judgment is clouded, not only will the progress of your investigation be affected, unexpected mishaps would also occur, resulting in the failure of your revenge. Even you yourself will also be in danger.”

Viviani calmed down. Though anger and hatred were still fully packed inside her, what Tom Reggie had said was reasonable. Calming down she would be able to remember those whom she had offended in the past that presumably killed her relatives.

“Go! I need to be alone!” Viviani waved and sat down on the sofa.

Secretly relieved inside, Tom Reggie then said, “Ms. Vivi, you are my benefactor. If you want to, I’ll send some people to help investigate and gather news on your enemies. I’ll also bring some manpower to help you in your revenge when the time comes. Your enemy is my enemy.”

Looking up, Viviani looked at the serious-looking Tom Reggie as

she finally nodded and said, “Thanks, Tom.”

Shaking his head, Tom Reggie replied, “Ms. Vivi, you’re forever the most dazzling and honorable person inside my heart. So you don’t need to be this polite to me. Well, please rest first. I must go to Mr. Tang now. If he had not told me about this, I’m afraid I would be in the dark about this matter.”

“Go!” Viviani waved.

After Tom Reggie left, Viviani nested herself on the sofa as tears broke out, flowing and rolling down her skin, wetting her lapels. She kept recalling all the forces and people she had offended all these years before her family members died one after another.

Gradually, with her outstanding memory, she finally had dozens of suspects in her mind and secretly made a decision that, regardless of who killed her family members, she must completely decimate them.

‘Mr. Tang?’

After wiping the tears from her face, Viviani stood from the sofa and walked to door. She had to see Tang Xiu. She found that the man was a genuine matured person and someone who could see through the nature of things.

If, if it wasn’t for him telling Tom Reggie about this, she would have been blinded by her anger and hatred now, becoming a

headless fly wandering around.

At the seaside villa.

Tang Xiu was conversing with the Old Li couple when he saw Tom Reggie coming back. From him he knew that Viviani had calmed down and the tinge of worry he had toward her immediately disappeared. However, he hadn't thought she would actually come back to the party without being asked.

"It seems you now understand that being impulsive is a devil in itself!" Tang Xiu smiled and said slowly.

"Thanks, Mr. Tang. I will offer you fine gift after my revenge as a token of gratitude," said Viviani with a nod.

Tang Xiu waved his hand, "No need."

Viviani no longer spoke as she walked straight to the stairs. She wasn't in the mood to stay in the party anymore, but she recalled Tang Xiu saying that there would be a fight between powerful experts in the evening. She now also realized how inexperienced she was in combat.

Hence, she must learn to become stronger!

Only when she became stronger could she get revenge for her relatives as well as better being able to protect the people she cared about in the future.

As the evening banquet ended, Tom Reggie bade farewell and left, while Fatty Li escorted his wife and daughter back and then rushed back, as he also knew that Wang Rui had a scheduled fight with Tang Xiu's subordinate.

At the second floor's balcony.

Tang Xiu, Viviani, and Fatty Li were sitting before a small round table, sipping tea while calmly waiting. As for Mo Awen and Mo Awu, they were now sitting cross-legged in the back of the house, quietly cultivating.

“How come that Qingcheng Mountain kiddo isn't here yet?”

An hour passed in waiting and Fatty Li was a bit impatient.

“The appointment between us is at 12 AM. It's 11:30 now, so there are 30 minutes left. Just be patient,” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

“I just wanna see the fight earlier. I can't wait for your show,” hummed Fatty Li.

“Huh, my show?” Tang Xiu was surprised. “What show?”

“Don't tell me you forgot? You gotta...” Fatty Li cried out. He abruptly came to a halt. When he found that Viviani was in a daze and wasn't pay attention them, he shot Tang Xiu a teasing look

and then pursed his lips whilst facing Viviani, hinting that it was inappropriate to mention the program show before another woman.

Tang Xiu slightly furrowed his brows before a thought crossed his mind. He then laughed and said, “Ah, you’re talking about the upcoming program I picked, aren’t you? Umm, what was it, ah, Seven Goddesses Dance, right? Right, it’s this one. Fatty Li, you’ve kept me guessing as to what exactly the Seven Goddesses Dance is until now!”

“Brother Tang, this program is meant to be interpreted in our minds, it cannot be talked about. Only after you enjoy it will you understand what it is! It’s a pity I’m rather old—my limbs are no longer fast to insist such a long time, or else, I really wanted to join in the fun.”

“Could this program require a lot of exercises?” asked Tang Xiu, surprised.

Fatty Li affirmed, “Very much! Most people are simply unable to endure it.”

“Ah, it turns out to be so! But I’m not your average man, though. So there should be no problem,” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

Right at this time, Mo Awen, who sat cross-legged on the floor, suddenly jumped up. When he looked downstairs, he saw that a man with two bodyguards had arrived and immediately called out, “Boss, the guests are here.”



Looking at the stair's direction, Tang Xiu saw Wang Rui with a cigarette clamped by his lips. His expression was frivolous as he came toward him.

“Wow, Brother Tang is truly great! You even charmed this beautiful woman who was gambling with me?” Wang Rui said with a smile that yet unlike one.

“Don't talk such nonsense! Viviani is just a friend of mine. But you still didn't abstice even though you clearly know that you'd fight my man. You've just wasted your strength on a women's belly, didn't you?”

“How did you know?” asked Wang Rui in astonishment.

“Your vitality seems a bit faint; far worse than when we met back then. If you didn't get sucked by a fabled vampire then you should have wasted your physical strength on women,” said Tang Xiu lightly.

Whilst raising his thumb up, Wang Rui exclaimed in praise, “Brother Tang is amazing. You can see through my body! I suddenly feel that rather than playing with your subordinate, it'll be more interesting to play with you! How about fighting me?”

Tang Xiu said with a smile, “I will naturally accompany you playing if you can beat my man. But before that, you had better rest for two hours in order to not feel that my subordinate's victory was due to that and not because of his combat strength.”

Wang Rui waved his hand, “It’s fine. I don’t need to rest.”

“Then please have a sit and drink a cup of tea! There’s still half an hour to the agreed time. We’ll have the bout outside on the beach. How about it?” said Tang Xiu after a moment of silence.

“Let’s decide so,” said Wang Rui with a smile.

After taking a seat, Wang Rui squinted his eyes at Tang Xiu, asking with a smile, “Brother Tang, I only know your name, but I don’t from where you come from! I have seen some information about those big respected families’ scions, such as their photos and names, but I haven’t heard about you at all.”

Lightly smiling, Tang Xiu said, “I’m just a nobody, not worth mentioning.”

Wang Rui shook his head, “No. it’s not a simple feat to be able to invite such powerful bodyguards. Say something and I’ll give it a try. I might be able to know something about you depending on the pointer.”

Tang Xiu was silent for a moment and suddenly grinned, “I’m actually a student who’s about to to enter university. In addition, I’m also half a doctor who worked at Star City Chinese Medical Hospital for a few days before.”

A student and unofficial doctor?

From the beginning, Wang Rui didn't buy Tang Xiu's words at all. Because he immediately sent some people to investigate Tang Xiu when they parted ways in the casino. But he didn't get the news from the mainland but rather from Saipan, from which he heard that Tang Xiu had just won 1 billion in the casino. It was a much faster and bigger win compared to his victory in the gambling table.

However, what surprised him was that Tang Xiu was still safe and sound now even though he won that 1 billion.

“Brother Tang, you're not being honest! Perhaps Fatty Li has told you about me? I asked your identity but you still concealed it. It's kinda boring.” Wang Rui put one leg over the other and casually lit up a cigarette.

Furrowing his brows, Tang Xiu said in reply, “I didn't lie. I really am about to enter University as well as am an unofficial doctor. You can investigate it if you don't believe me. However, I'm someone who hates being investigated by others; I will make them pay a price if I found out about it.”

Wang Rui was silent for a moment and suddenly laughed, “Since Brother Tang doesn't want to say it, I'm also someone who doesn't want to force anyone against their will! Well, I won more money than you this time, hence I'm inviting you to a sumptuous banquet after we return home.”

Tang Xiu didn't take such pleasantries seriously and simply

replied with a few words. He then looked at Mo Awen and said calmly, “Give your best strength and do not lower your guard, or you’ll fail miserably.”

Mo Awen glanced at Wang Rui and continued to carefully comprehend the changes of a martial artist’s state of mind. Tang Xiu’s directions had enlightened him, resulting in his great improvement. Hence, he came to a realization that, once he could comprehend some of a cultivator’s state of mind, it would be a turning point for him to advance. He now understood the significance of the state of mind to cultivators. If he could, he wished to have dozens of enlightenments every day.

Time flew by. Tang Xiu then suddenly stood and slowly said, “It’s about time. Awen, you and Mr. Wang go to the beach! Don’t disappoint Mr. Wang and the others.”

“I guarantee you it won’t happen!”

# Chapter 299: Shape Without a Soul

---

As the bright moonlight shone on the sea surface, bringing about gleaming reflections of the waves amid the powerful wind, two ghostly silhouettes silently appeared at the seaside beach.

“In regards to speed, you’re better than me.”

In the speed contest just now, Wang Rui, who looked down on Mo Awen, lost badly. Even though he went all out and sped up to his limit, Mo Awen could still follow beside him, neither too fast nor too slow and didn’t fall behind in the slightest, even seemingly holding back.

“Give me your best shot. Don’t let me down,” Mo Awen replied with a light laugh.

Don’t let you down?

Coldness glowed inside Wang Rui’s eyes. He once said to Tang Xiu that he was someone who loved challenges. But to think that his bodyguard would actually challenge him?

He was quite resentful, and the consequences for that would be dire.

“I will defeat you with everything I got, making you admit your defeat thoroughly. Then I’ll weigh your boss as how much pounds he got in store.”

Mo Awen crackled his fingers as he smiled, “You have no way to find out my Boss’s weight. Come, give me all you got. I’ll use strength to convince you.”

“Hmph...”

Forming a palm, Wang Rui moved and appeared in front Mo Awen, his hand slashing toward Mo Awen’s neck as though a blade. The speed of his palm blade was fast. So fast it brought about a whooshing sound and the air surge.

Using his tiptoe to tap the ground, Mo Awen instantly moved backward to avoid Wang Rui’s palm chop. He jumped up and flipped his legs, sending Wang Rui a fierce kick. The continuous images of the trajectory of his kicks were unending, causing one to be unable to discern whether they were real or illusory.

“Bam, bam, bam!”

Failing, Wang Rui quickly whipped out his leg. In a flash, dozens of kicks had been exchanged between them. Legs were countered by legs and calves collided with calves, bringing about an immense vibrating wave force, causing their complexion to slightly change at the same time. Yet, Wang Rui felt like he was kicking an iron stake. The impact force brought about incomparable pain to his right leg, causing him to be in constant retreat. In stark contrast, Mo Awen only had a slight change in expression, but his formidable aura did not weaken in the slightest. He was like a maggot feeding on a corpse that clung onto him as his legs were as

though long whips, thrashing again in sequence.

On the villa balcony, Tang Xiu stood as though a spear with his hands folded, overlooking the two fighting men on the beach. Beside him were Viviani and Old Fatty Li watching intently the fighting figures on the beach, looking somewhat shocked.

For Viviani, who possessed formidable strength and speed, yet didn't know how to utilize them, Mo Awen and Wang Rui, who were much inferior to her in terms of speed and strength, yet were performing sophisticated combat skills despite the seemingly simple moves... It left her dazed and shocked inside.

A strong desire to learn from them surged up inside her heart, wanting to enrich her combat experience.

Shocks also struck Old Fatty Li. He was also someone who was skilled in martial arts. Though he was fat and his abilities couldn't be compared to his past years, he was still agile. Fighting against three to five thugs by himself, he would still come out as the victor. However, the fight between Mo Awen and Wang Rui was an eye-opener for him.

It was much more striking than watching Chinese Kung fu movies.

In his eyes, the fight on the beach was a combat between two experts in the martial arts society. Those formidable styles and exquisite moves dazzled him. Hence, he came to the realization that were he to fight any one of them, he would perhaps be

knocked out in a flash.

“Chinese Kung fu is really broad and profound.”

Shock and excitement struck Fatty Old Li as he sighed wholeheartedly.

Glancing at him, Tang Xiu laughed, “Fatty Li, your strength is commendable! Though you have a fat body, an average person won’t be able to fight you, no? What is it? You haven’t seen a fight between experts at this level before?”

“It’s my first time seeing it,” Fatty Li shook his head and forced out a smile.

“It’s understandable, though. There are so many people practicing martial arts in the world, but true experts are very rare. Being able to see two experts at the same time as well as watching them fight is indeed a scene very difficult to happen. Anyways, who do you think will win?”

Without hesitation, Fatty Li replied, “Mo Awen.”

Raising his eyebrows and smiling, Tang Xiu asked, “Why are you so sure?”

Fatty Li pointed at the two men and said, “Though Wang Rui’s kung fu is powerful, it’s evident that he’s somewhat straining. But take a look at Mo Awen, his attacks are steady, neither too fast nor



slow, yet each move makes Wang Rui constantly retreat. He occasionally blocks and evades, immediately counterattacking afterward.”

Tang Xiu nodded, praising, “It seems your eyes are good, Fatty Li. Though Wang Rui is also an expert and is experienced in combat, there’s still a big gap between them. If there’s no accident, Wang Rui will be defeated within ten moves.”

Suddenly, Viviani asked, “Mr. Tang, if I had Wang Rui’s combat experience and skills, do you think I could defeat your bodyguard?”

Rolling his eyes, Tang Xiu humorlessly replied, “Were you to have rich fighting experience, let alone Mo Awen, perhaps even I myself would not be your opponent.”

Fatty Li himself was clueless about Viviani’s strength. He thought that Tang Xiu was flirting with her. With a teasing look, he said, “Brother Tang, you won’t hit her since it’s evident that you clearly have a soft heart toward her and don’t want to hurt a belle, no? Only, do you really know kung fu?”

Tang Xiu laughed, “I know a little about kung fu. I can’t say that I’m good at it, though. But I can say that it’s enough for self-defense.”

Despite knowing Tang Xiu for a short period of time, Fatty Li could tell that Tang Xiu was an extremely low-key young man. He felt that the Tang Xiu’s words were overly humble. His kung fu

skill might be under his bodyguards but perhaps was still a lot stronger than him.

On the beach.

Wang Rui moved fast as though lightning. Most of his techniques were killing moves. Unfortunately, even if he raised his strength a level higher, he still couldn't do a thing to Mo Awen. He even faintly felt that he was in constant retreat while Mo Awen himself was seemingly holding back.

Yes. He had done his best, but Mo Awen had not!

This feeling somewhat shocked to him, but it vexed him more.

During the exchange of fists and kicks, Wang Rui finally ceased his footsteps forcibly. He staked everything on heavy strikes, frantically sending a bombardment of dozens of fists. Blurred shadow paths, along with sonic booms, caused one's heart to shiver.

“Originally, I thought you were much stronger since Boss wanted me to compare notes with you. It turns out that even using 70% of my strength is useless since you actually had been forced to such a desperate strait. If so, I might as well end it earlier!” As Wang Rui sent out dozens of fists toward Mo Awen and staggered backward, Mo Awen suddenly appeared behind him as his fists moved in a strange trajectory, seemingly about to bombard Wang Rui's back. But due to Wang Rui's sudden and hasty avoidance, it ended up hitting his shoulder instead. Along with the sound of dislocated

bones, Wang Rui's body was as though a fallen leaf as it advanced and smashed toward the beach seven to eight meters away.

“Bam...”

With a muffled sound, Wang Rui smashed on the beach with a pale face before jumping up as though a carp. A shocked look flickered in his eyes as he stood there seven or eight meters away looking at Mo Awen, a strong bitterness surging in his heart.

He lost! He knew he had been defeated, thoroughly.

Mo Awen was too strong, the toughest one he had ever seen in his life. He had fought numerous martial arts grandmasters across the country and won against all with absolute strength. He also had met many experts from foreign countries, whether the one who once won the King of Fighter title, Muay Thai experts, Taekwondo or Judo masters... nobody could beat him.

Eventually... he lost to someone's bodyguard.

“I don't get it. With your strength, it would be easy for you to dominate the film industry, yet why would you choose to work as someone else's bodyguard?” said Wang Rui slowly.

“Do you think being a bodyguard isn't a good job?” asked Mo Awen with a smile.

“If you really want to be a bodyguard, how much does Tang Xiu

pay you? I can offer you ten times his offer,” Wang Rui frowned and said deeply.

Mo Awen shook his head, “You can’t give me what I want. Besides, I’m not Boss’s bodyguard, but his subordinate. Whoever dares to harm my Boss, even if I have to trade my life with his, I won’t bat an eye. Besides, you can’t even beat me, so you definitely aren’t his opponent.”

“What?” Wang Rui’s expression changed and he breathed faster. He stared at Mo Awen tightly and quickly asked, “You mean Tang Xiu is even more powerful than you?”

“Is Boss more powerful than me? Even if there are ten of you, I’m afraid you are still not Boss’s opponent,” said Mo Awen lightly.

Having said that, he turned around and walked toward the villa.

Wang Rui’s expression constantly changed. He recalled what he said to Tang Xiu in the casino as well as when he arrived at the villa, acting arrogantly in front of him. Shame and embarrassment quickly climbed up to his face. He felt like he was trying to teach a fish how to swim, displaying his poor skills before an expert, unaware of how much he was disgracing himself.

‘For these many years, how long has it been for me to lose this much face?’

Whilst shaking his head, Wang Rui smiled bitterly before he

followed behind Mo Awen toward the villa. His right arm was dislocated and he had no way to fight anymore. Hence, he needed to quickly find someone to fix it.

On the villa balcony.

Looking at the two, Tang Xiu, Viviani, and Fatty Li already knew the result of the fight, yet they didn't show Wang Rui any ridiculing look.

If he wanted to blame someone, blame Mo Awen for being too strong!

Yet, Tang Xiu was the one who was the most depressed among them, because he thought that Wang Rui and Mo Awen were fairly equal in terms of strength. Hence, he let them fight so that Mo Awen would reap benefits from it. However, Mo Awen progressed by leaps and bounds due to his sudden epiphany, causing Wang Rui to simply not be his opponent anymore.

Thus, apart from striking Wang Rui's acute and sharp disposition, there was no other effect whatsoever.

"Boss!" Mo Awen was respectful as always.

"You did well. It's a pity my purpose hasn't been achieved, though. However, since your strength has improved, it is still a good thing," said Tang Xiu with a laugh.

# Chapter 300: Plea

---

Looking at the downcast and embarrassed Wang Rui, Tang Xiu said with a smile, “Don’t be discouraged. There’s no end in the path of martial arts. Sometimes having a setback is a good thing, and martial artists must guard against arrogance and impetuosity. One must know that there’s always someone better and there’s a heaven beyond the heaven. I’m waiting for you to challenge my subordinate again when you become stronger.”

Wang Rui took a deep breath and sternly said, “I will challenge your man again, but my ultimate goal is you. I hope I can challenge and defeat you one day.”

“I’ll be waiting,” said Tang Xiu with a smile.

At the sided, with an unusual light in her eyes, Viviani suddenly came in front of Mo Awen and said, “Teach me your Kung Fu! I want to acknowledge you as my Master.”

Acknowledging a Master?

Mo Awen was stunned and immediately looked at Tang Xiu.

“Hey, don’t look at me. Keep me out of it,” Tang Xiu waved and said.

Thinking for a moment, Mo Awen looked at Viviani and said slowly, “I’m sorry. I have no intention to accept disciples.”

Viviani quickly said, “As long as you can make me become as powerful as you, I’ll pay any price. How about I pay you with money? I’m rich and have lots of money.”

Mo Awen shook his head, “I’m not short on money. Even if you give me a mountain of gold, I will still not accept you as a disciple since I don’t have much time.”

Viviani turned to look at Tang Xiu with pleading eyes.

Tang Xiu was silent before he shook his head and said, “Since he doesn’t want to accept you as a disciple, I also don’t have any means. He may be my subordinate, but I will never force him to do what he doesn’t wanna do. Also, he isn’t suited to be your teacher. What he excels at is killing skills. For example, the fight between him and Wang Rui just now. Were it a frontal combat, Wang Rui would be killed by him in the exchanges at the most.”

Shocked, Wang Rui was stupefied. With anger in his eyes, he said, “Wasn’t it kinda overboard, Tang Xiu? Even if I’m weaker than Mo Awen, can he kill me within 10 moves?”

Mo Awen interrupted, “Ten moves are too many. I can kill you within five moves.”

Wang Rui’s lips twitched a few times, but no sounds came out of it. However, the look of disbelief on his face fully expressed his feelings.

Right at this time, Tang Xiu moved and grabbed Wang Rui's arm lighting fast. Before the latter reacted, he shook Wang Rui's wrist while his other hand held Wang Rui's shoulder. With a 'crack' sound, Wang Rui's expression greatly changed; his dislocated arms had been fixed.

Retracting back his hands, Tang Xiu then said calmly, "You don't need to doubt it. When Awen fought you, he had many good chances to kill you directly. But since he knew that you're not an enemy, hence he didn't do it out of mercy. Also, he didn't use his full strength when he fought you."

Wang Rui waved his arm. As he felt only faint pain from his dislocated arm and no other symptoms, the anger in his eyes slowly faded, replaced by a bitter smile. He then nodded and said, "I know that he didn't go all out!"

Tang Xiu turned around and looked toward the unhappy-looking Viviani and immediately said with a smile, "Actually, I have a way to make you stronger, but it's kinda dangerous."

Viviani's spirit was roused. She was full of hatred, wanting to find the people who killed her relatives and avenge them. Hence, she asked quickly, "What is it?"

"We'll talk about this matter later," said Tang Xiu.

Having said that, he looked at Fatty Li and Wang Rui and said with a faint smile, "The two of you, today's matter has been



concluded. Shouldn't you go back to rest?"

Cupping his fists, Wang Rui then turned around and left with his two men.

As for Fatty Li, he didn't move and cheerfully looked at Tang Xiu as he smiled and asked, "Brother Tang, you have yet to enjoy the Seven Goddesses Dance, no? Since there's a beauty accompanying you tonight, you shouldn't go. But won't you still let it pass tomorrow? If you can complete the whole course of the Seven Goddesses Dance, I'll treat you to a feast."

"I need to look at the situation first! I plan to leave tomorrow, but if the storm at the sea isn't over yet by then, I'll stay for another day, and then experience this Seven Goddesses Dance!" said Tang Xiu with a smile.

"You wanna leave? Where to? Are you going back home?" asked Fatty Li, surprised.

"No, I'm going on an expedition," Tang Xiu shook his head.

With a strange expression, Fatty Li looked at Tang Xiu. He shook his head and said with a smile, "Youngsters nowadays have good ideas. But if you go adventuring, don't tell that Qingcheng Mountain kiddo. Or else he will surely follow you like a plaster; you won't be able to shake him off."

"Got it!" Tang Xiu nodded.

He didn't have the intention to tell others about the private island he had purchased except to those close to him. After all, he was going to build a site that really belonged to him there as a base to train his army. Hence, it absolutely couldn't be exposed.

Along with Fatty Li's departure, Tang Xiu hinted Mo Awen and Mo Awu to go back and rest. He then took Viviani to the living room. "If you want to become stronger, you can train in some training camps and have your revenge afterward. I heard Mo Awen speak about them. There are many training camps in the world specialized in training experts. If you want to go there, you can quickly rise above others."

A training camp?

Viviani remembered that Tom Reggie had such experience once and silently nodded. Prior to this, she was always merciful and softhearted. Even to those who did evil, she wouldn't kill them and only gave them some fierce lessons, and then extorted a large sum of money from them to solve it.

Only now did she realize that her soft heartedness killed a lot of her family members.

"Thanks, Tang Xiu," Viviani spoke and then turned to leave.

Looking at her back, Tang Xiu secretly sighed in his heart. He couldn't tell whether what he did would be good or bad for her. But he thought that her special force would be wasted if she didn't

get stronger.

“Um, the Seven Goddesses Dance?”

Recalling the program he picked before, Tang Xiu shook his head secretly. Fatty Li was deliberately making it look mysterious, causing a strong curiosity to sprout inside his heart. In any case, he also couldn't sleep now, so he decided to experience this program, finding out what its magicalness was exactly.

“Please arrange the Seven Goddesses Dance for me.”

After using the landline phone in the building to call Jasmine, Tang Xiu straightforwardly spoke.

“Alright. Someone will take you there shortly.”

A few minutes later, a seductively dressed girl in a nightgown arrived at Tang Xi's residence and said in fluent English, “Are you, Mr. Tang? Vice President Jasmine ordered me to guide you to the pleasure center.”

“Yes, it's me!” Tang Xiu nodded.

Whilst following behind the girl, Tang Xiu asked curiously, “Beautiful Miss, can you tell me in advance what sort of program the Seven Goddesses Dance is? It's just that my friend always looked mysterious and secretive speaking about it.”

“Pfft...”

The lass couldn't help but burst into laughter before she asked with a smile, “You don't know what sort of program the Seven Goddesses Dance is, Sir?”

“I really don't know!” Tang Xiu shook his head.

The lass said with a smile, “Since you don't know, you might as well come with me! Wait until you have clearly experienced it. You will definitely enjoy it greatly as long as you stay alive and well.”

Alive and well? What does it mean?

A puzzled expression hung on Tang Xiu's face. Looking at the lass who no longer wanted to explain, he could only stuff it inside his heart as he proceeded forward alongside her.

Seven or eight minutes later, they came to a European-style building.

Taking a broad look around, Tang Xiu found that this building was rather peculiar. Firstly, not to mention its outward wall being painted red, each window had its curtain pulled open, which revealed its interior painted with the scarlet, orange, vermillion, green, dark green, indigo and purple colors.

“Welcome, honored Sir!”

Four beautiful girls in seductively long skirts stood in front of the building, greeting Tang Xiu.

Tang Xiu nodded and followed the girl into the building. He then realized that the interior design and decoration was full of a dubious atmosphere as there was a shiny steel tube erected in the middle of the hall surrounded by walls with flashing gold lightings illuminating it. The compelling design itself not only had a slightly bizarre model of a beautiful woman, there were even many which were supposed to be handsome or cool and strong men.

“Mr. Tang, we have seven-storied pleasure centers altogether here. Might I ask what floor you wish to go?” The girl brought Tang Xiu to the elevator door and inquired with a smile.

“What’s the difference?” asked Tang Xiu.

“The higher the floor, the more beautiful the girl there is and the more expensive the price. However, Vice President has explained that you are completely exempted from expenses, hence you can choose any floor you wish,” said the girl.

“To the seventh floor, then!” said Tang Xiu without thinking.

“Alright!”

As the elevator door opened, the girl took Tang Xiu along. When

they arrived at the seventh floor, Tang Xiu then saw a woman in exposed dressing. She had an extremely hot and provocative figure as she stood outside, a dazzling smile on her face.

The girl who guided him introduced, “Mr. Tang, she’s Reval, the one in charge of the seventh floor. Since I’ve escorted you here, I’ve accomplished my task. I wish you a pleasant stay here.”

Having said that, she slightly bowed toward Tang Xiu, returned to the elevator and directly left.

“Please lead the way!”

Faintly, Tang Xiu could guess something, but wasn’t sure of it yet. Hence, he said directly to Reval.

“Please...”

Reval guided Tang Xiu walking under the purple lights. They passed across two corridors and then arrived at a well-decorated, yet still ambiguous-styled room. She then smiled and said, “Mr. Tang, please rest for a bit. There are fruits and desserts on the table as well as a variety of drinks inside the refrigerator. If you want to take a shower first, you can go to the bathroom in the side room. Please pardon us, we’ve to prepare for about 20 minutes. The program will formally start afterward.”

“Is this program rather troublesome?” asked Tang Xiu.

“No, it’s not. As long as your ability is good, it definitely is the best enjoyment in the world. If you have no other instructions, please pardon my leave first,” said Reval with a smile.

Tang Xiu waved as his vision then observed this 200-300 square meters room.

It was luxurious and extravagant!

In front of a long leather sofa was a long table filled with all kinds of desserts and fruits; even many exquisite side dishes were on it. There was even a locker next to the sofa with a stack of fashion magazines. On the wall was hung a sixty inches LCD TV. The TV was muted, but it was displaying photos of beautiful women.

“I’ll take a shower!”